

Gc  
979.402  
L882m  
v.1  
1131982

M! L

GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01115 5683















Faithfully yours  
John S. McGroarty

LOS ANGELES  
FROM THE MOUNTAINS TO THE SEA

---

JOHN STEVEN MCGROARTY

---

WITH SELECTED BIOGRAPHY OF ACTORS AND WITNESSES  
OF THE PERIOD OF GROWTH AND ACHIEVEMENT

---

ILLUSTRATED

---

VOLUME I

---

THE AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY  
CHICAGO AND NEW YORK  
1921

COPYRIGHT, 1921,  
BY  
AMERICAN HISTORICAL SOCIETY



1131982

## PREFACE

---

It seems that, as a general custom, centuries old, a book must have what is known as a "Preface." In former times, when a book was nothing if not ponderous, the Preface was a thing to daunt the reader at the very start; it was so big and so heavy, and it had such a serious countenance.

For my part, I could never quite see the use of a Preface at all. If a man is to tell a story—and every book, especially a narrative of history, is a story—why not begin at once with it, without any "hems" or "haws," as the saying is?

Still, there are times and instances when a Preface may well serve a good purpose; and it may be that this story of the Wonder City of Los Angeles is a case in point. Anyway, the publishers, eager and anxious that nothing should be left undone, have a serious conviction that there should be a Preface to this book, no matter what argument there might be as to any other.

So, we must have a Preface to the Book of the Wonder City. But it will be a short Preface; it will be brief and with as little waste of words and time as possible, because no matter into whose hands whatever this book falls, he will be keen to get at it, and with as few by-paths as possible to travel.

And what I have to say, therefore, prefatory to the book, is that it is the true story of a great City that was founded "by order of the King," in the old days when the Western World was new. It is the story of a City that, for a century of time after its birth, showed few signs of promise, but which has now come to be the Greatest City of Western America and the metropolis of California—the "Land o' Heart's Desire."

The history of any city that can be named almost, is a story of its fortune that came from location or other accident to make it great. But Los Angeles is a City that was made great by the people, who, one day found it sleeping in the

sun, oblivious to its destiny. They were, for the most part, people who came from far regions of America, seeking a more agreeable climate than that to which they had been accustomed. This is the truth of the matter.

They were a vigorous and an ambitious people, notwithstanding their desire for friendlier skies and more sunshine. And they took hold of Los Angeles, and they put life into it. All that they did constitutes one of the most thrilling chronicles in human history. And the record of it is set forth in the pages of this book.

This, I would think, is enough to say by way of a Preface. The rest that is to be told awaits you here, at the turn of you hand. It is a good book, because it tells a good story that Time composed. And Time is the best author of books.

JOHN S. MCGROARTY.

Los Angeles, California, Dec. 15, 1920.

# CONTENTS

---

## CHAPTER I

AS IT WAS IN THE BEGINNING.....	1
---------------------------------	---

## CHAPTER II

THE MOTHER OF LOS ANGELES.....	12
--------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER III

THE FOUNDING OF THE PUEBLO.....	24
---------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER IV

THE FIRST UNCERTAIN STEPS.....	33
--------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER V

LIFE IN OLD LOS ANGELES.....	46
------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER VI

OLD TIMERS AND OLD TIMES.....	62
-------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER VII

KALEIDOSCOPE OF THE YEARS.....	93
--------------------------------	----

## CHAPTER VIII

FROM THE SPANIARD TO THE AMERICAN.....	146
--	-----

## CHAPTER IX

WHEN UNCLE SAM STEPPED IN.....	159
--------------------------------	-----



## CHAPTER X

PIONEERS OF TRADE AND COMMERCE.....	183
-------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XI

THE PORT O' SHIPS.....	203
------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XII

THE AQUEDUCT.....	226
-------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIII

THE GLORY OF THE SCHOOLS.....	238
-------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIV

THE MEDICINE MEN.....	265
-----------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XV

RELIGION AND THE CHURCHES.....	293
--------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVI

THE LAWS AND THE COURTS.....	323
------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVII

THE CITY'S BREATHING SPOTS.....	367
---------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XVIII

MUSIC AND ART.....	376
--------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XIX

A GREAT ORGANIZATION.....	388
---------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER XX

MODERN LOS ANGELES.....	402
-------------------------	-----

# INDEX

- Abila, Antonio Ignacio, I, 74  
Abila, Enrique, I, 165, 189  
Abila, Juan, I, 189  
Ada Hancock, great loss of life by explosion of (1863), I, 106  
Adair, Joseph A., II, 333  
Adams, Charles S., I, 309  
Adeock, Robert J., II, 388  
Agricultural and horticultural progress: history of, I, 70, 71; in the early 50's, 78  
Agricultural Park, I, 87  
Agriculture and horticulture: early fruit growers, I, 189; grape and orange cultivation in the early 50's, 190  
Aguirre, Martin C., III, 737  
Alcalde: I, 34; created and duties defined, by the Laws of the Indies, 329; chief judicial officer, 337, 330; functions defined by Spanish Cortes (1812), 331-33-34  
Alemany, Jose Sadoc, second Catholic bishop of California, sketch of, I, 304  
Alexander and Banning, I, 184  
Alexander and Mellus, I, 184  
Alexander, David W., I, 64, 154, 184, 365  
Alexander, Henry N., I, 365  
Alfred, Charles J., II, 269  
Allen, Charles H., I, 262  
Allen, Gabriel, I, 365  
Allen, John C., III, 698  
Alvarado, Francisco Maria, I, 301  
Alvarado, Juan Bautista, I, 152  
Amat, Tadeo (Thaddeus), Bishop of Monterey, I, 305, 318  
American-Hawaiian Steamship Company, I, 212  
Amestoy, Domingo, II, 342  
Amestoy, John B., II, 343  
Amestoy, Michael F., II, 343  
Amestoy, Peter D., II, 343  
Anderson, James A., II, 325  
Anderson, William H., II, 326  
Andrews, A. V., III, 839  
Andrews, Lewis W., III, 825  
Andrews, Willedd, II, 414  
Angel, Henry, I, 314  
Angell, Henry J., III, 914  
Antonio, Juan, Indian chief, I, 72  
Apollo Club, I, 379  
Arcadia Block, I, 101, 193  
Arguello, Jose, I, 147  
Arnold, Ralph, III, 752  
Atherton, Isaac W., I, 312, 320  
Austin, John C., III, 747  
Averill, Kathleen A., III, 601  
Avery, Moses N., III, 712  
Babcock, Mrs. George, II, 280  
Bachman & Company, I, 187  
Bacon, Francis E., II, 106  
"Bacon Tract" (Oneonta Park), I, 89  
Bagby, E. H., III, 500  
Bain, Ferdinand R., II, 92  
Baker, Danford M., II, 330  
Baker, Fred L., II, 28  
Baker, Milo A., II, 29  
Baker, Milo S., II, 26  
Baker Block, I, 83, 118  
Balch, A. C., II, 67  
Baldwin, Anita M., II, 140  
Baldwin, Elias J. (Lucky), I, 91, 116, 117; II, 139  
Baldwin (E. J.), ranch (Santa Anita), I, 89  
Balfour, Constance, III, 746  
Ball, William F., II, 332  
Ballard, Russell H., III, 505  
Baneroff, Hubert H., I, 58  
Bandini, Juan, I, 42; sketch of, 67, 151  
Bank of California, San Francisco, failure of, I, 91, 117  
Banks, Llewellyn A., III, 669  
Banks: In 1875, I, 80; first opened in 1868, 108  
Banning, Aune, II, 15  
Banning, Hancock, II, 14  
Banning, Phineas, I, 101, 102, 106, 190; II, 13  
Banning, William L., I, 365  
Barham, Guy B., III, 692  
Barker, Charles H., III, 657  
Barker, Lillian G., III, 725  
Barker, Obadiah T., III, 653  
Barker, O. J., III, 658  
Barker, William A., III, 657  
Barker Brothers, III, 655  
Barnard Brothers, I, 113  
Barneson, Lionel T., II, 162

- Barrett, Elliott H., II, 291  
 Barriscale, Bessie, III, 817  
 Barrows, H. D.: His reminiscences of the '50s, I, 74, 272  
 Barry, Patrick H., II, 155  
 Bartlett, Albert G., III, 451  
 Bartlett, Alfred L., II, 423  
 Bartlett, Oswald, III, 647  
 Barton, James R., I, 365  
 Baruch, Herman, II, 226  
 Bashor, Ernest G., III, 725  
 Bashor, Horace A., III, 725  
 Bauchet, Louis, I, 37  
 Baum, L. Frank, III, 553  
 Baum, Maud G., III, 554  
 Beall, B., I, 72  
 Bean, J. H., death of, I, 72  
 Bear Flag, hoisted at Sonoma (1846), I, 155  
 Beaudry, Prudent, I, 187  
 Beaudry's Block, I, 187  
 Beckett, Wesley W., III, 854  
 Beebe, George, III, 526  
 Behn, John I, 183  
 Behrendt, Sam, II, 421  
 Behymer, Lynden E. (Bee): Great musical figure of Los Angeles, I, 381; sketch of, 382; II, 359  
 Belgian Hare craze, I, 137  
 Bell, Alexander, I, 183, 191  
 Bell, Charles R., II, 412  
 Bell, Horace, I, 345  
 Bell, Mary R., III, 519  
 Bella Union, I, 82  
 Bench and Bar: Courts of Southern California district (early 50's), I, 77; the old courthouse, 85; Spanish projection of the Roman law over America, 323; Spanish laws fixing high grade of colonial officials, 327; chain of Spanish and Mexican laws replaced by common law of England (1850), 328; military officers and governors as judges, 330; courts at time of American occupation, 333; courts under Mexican Republic, 334-38; litigation over land grants, 338; great lawyers identified with California land-grant cases, 342; early days of (in California statehood), 343; lawyers of 1875, 344; interesting cases, 346-357; lawyers of the 40's and 50's, 361; lawyers arriving in the '50s and '60s, 362; judges and court officers since 1850, 364-66  
 Benjamin, Judah P., I, 342  
 Bennett, James S., III, 509  
 Benton, city of (?), I, 202  
 Benton, Frank W., III, 735  
 Benton, F. Weber, III, 735  
 Beteller, Dionision, I, 365  
 Biaknell, John D., I, 245  
 Bicksler, W. Scott, II, 286  
 Bigler, John, I, 181  
 Billicke, Albert C., II, 104  
 Billings, F., I, 362  
 Binkley, Robah J., II, 296  
 Birdsall, Elias, I, 311; death of, 319  
 Bishop, Frank C., III, 638  
 Bissell, E. C., I, 312  
 Bixby, Jotham W., III, 624  
 Bixby, Lewellyn, II, 192  
 Black, Jeremiah S., I, 342, 366  
 Blackstone, Nathaniel B., III, 706  
 Blair, Cassius D., II, 245  
 Blake George R., I, 72  
 Blakeslee, Raymond I, II, 295  
 Bland, Adam, I, 318  
 Blankenhorn, David, II, 367  
 Bledsoe, Benjamin F., III, 590  
 Blodget, Lewis W., II, 85  
 Blodget, Rush M., II, 85  
 Blodget, Spencer L. II, 84  
 Blodget & Blodget, II, 85  
 Bluett, Alice, II, 31  
 Bluett, William C., II, 30  
 Board of Education, changes in selection of members, 1853-1903, I, 245  
 Board of Health, created (1873), I, 290  
 Board of Land Commissioners work in Los Angeles (1855), I, 99  
 Board of Public Works takes charge of aqueduct project, I, 233  
 Board of Trade organized (1873), I, 113  
 Board of Water Commissioners, I, 230  
 Boardman, William E., I, 310, 311, 319  
 Bonyng, W. A., II, 96  
 Book, Charles K., III, 673  
 Book, Ida L., III, 673  
 Bordwell, Walter, III, 594  
 Bouchet, Louis, I, 70  
 Bovard, M. M., I, 320  
 Bowen, John M., III, 855  
 Bowen, William M., III, 496  
 Bowman, Joaquin, I, 37, 65  
 Boyle, Robert L., III, 482  
 Brainerd, E. R., I, 373  
 Branciforte (pueblo) founded, I, 11  
 Brent, J. Lancaster, I, 242, 362, 364  
 Bresee, Mrs. Phineas W., III, 573  
 Bridge, Norman, II, 425  
 Brier, J. W., I, 307, 319  
 Brigham, Harry B., III, 725  
 Brigham, W. Curtis, III, 725  
 Brinekerhoff, John, I, 281  
 Broadway, I, 134  
 Broadwell, Elizabeth, III, 712  
 Broadwell, Harold B., III, 711  
 Brooks, Helen A., III, 440  
 Brown, Eltinge T., III, 556  
 Brown, Harrington, II, 357  
 Brown, Herbert C., III, 527  
 Brown, Luther G., III, 476



- Brown, Seth R., III, 469  
 Brown, Thomas B., III, 555  
 Brown, Walter E., III, 868  
 Brunson, Anson, I, 349  
 Brunswick, Lucien N., III, 704  
 Brunton, Robert, III, 780  
 Brush Electric Lighting Company, I, 120  
 Bryson, John, I, 122  
 Buelna, Maria del Pilar, I, 337  
 Buffum, Asa M., II, 56  
 Buffum, Rebecca, II, 56  
 Buffum, William M., II, 54  
 Bull, Ingall W., II, 285  
 Bulla, Robert N., III, 512  
 Bullock, Georgia P., III, 489  
 Bullock, John G., III, 911  
 Bundy, Charles L., II, 115  
 Bureau of Aqueduct Power, I, 235  
 Burke, Carleton F., II, 206  
 Burke, Samuel E., II, 136  
 Burke, Wellington C., II, 132  
 Burke, William R., II, 205  
 Burnell, Charles S., II, 287  
 Burnett, Peter H., I, 180  
 Burnham, Rufus W., III, 521  
 Burns, James F., I, 365  
 Burr, Ebenezer, III, 489  
 Burrill, George T., I, 360, 364  
 Burton, G. W., I, 320  
 Burton, H. S., sketch of, I, 164  
 Bushnell, John B., II, 126  
 Bustamente, Francisco, I, 241  
 Butler, John L., III, 527  
 Butron, Mannel, I, 339  
 Butte, William P., II, 69  
  
 Cable, Bertha L., III, 803  
 Cabrillo, Carlos Antonio, I, 152  
 Cabrillo, Jose Antonio, I, 150, 151  
 Cabrillo, Juan Rodriguez: His log book, 1542, I, 4; death of, 8; real discoverers of California, 38, 204  
 Cain, S. F., III, 591  
 California: division of, attempted (1881), I, 120; conflict of authority between General Kearny and Commodore Stockton, 177; conflict of authority between Fremont and Kearny, 178; conflict of authority between Fremont and Governor Mason, 180; harbors made famous by Richard Henry Dana's "Two Years before the Mast," 205; first doctor in, 266; grand and light opera in, 379  
 California Family Medical Instructor, I, 282  
 California Fruit Growers Exchange, III, 463  
  
 California horses of the early days, I, 48  
 California Mission of Latter Day Saints, II, 345  
 California Pacific Steamship Company, I, 212  
 Cambon, Benitos, I, 14  
 Camero, Manuel, I, 30  
 Camp Grounds (for automobilists), I, 373  
 Campbell, Patriek C., III, 729  
 Campbell, S. R., sketch of, I, 363  
 Campbell, Thompson, I, 366  
 Campbell, Thornton P., I, 363  
 Campbell, Walter M., II, 424  
 Canfield, Charles A., III, 880.  
 Cannell, S. Bartley, III, 935  
 Canning Industry, I, 396  
 Cantwell, John J., II, 208  
 Carduno, Emanuel Posada y, Archbishop of the Metropolitan Mexican Church, I, 298  
 Cardwell, H. C., I, 71, 78, 317  
 Carey, John G., II, 299  
 Carhart, Henry S., III, 858  
 Carmel Mission, I, 383  
 Carpenter, Lemuel, I, 65  
 Carrier pigeon service, I, 112  
 Carrillo, Jose Antonio, I, 38, 361  
 Carrillo, Jose Maria: runs lively Congressional campaign, I, 41; successful campaign and revolution, 42  
 Carrillo, Pedro C., I, 353, 365  
 Carson, Moses, I, 65  
 Carter, Marshall L., II, 178  
 Carter, Mathew, I, 311  
 Case, Fred H., III, 578  
 Casper, Christian J., III, 608  
 Cass, Bruce H., II, 237  
 Castles, Alfred G. R., II, 275  
 Cates, Alton M., III, 492  
 Cates, Horace G., III, 492  
 Cathedral of Santa Vibiana, I, 117  
 Cawston, Edwin, I, 123  
 Cawston Ostrich Farm, I, 123  
 Central Baptist Church, I, 312  
 Central Ice house established, I, 108  
 Central Pacific Railroad completed (1869), I, 109  
 Central Presbyterian Church, I, 310, 311  
 Central Southern Pacific (Arcade) Station, I, 129  
 Cerro Gordo lead and silver mines, I, 109  
 Ceruti, E. Burton, II, 265  
 Chamber of Commerce: Genesis of (1888), I, 398; great public works initiated and fostered by, 400; its four homes, I, 401  
 Chamberlain, E. Kirby, I, 181

- Chance, Frank, III, 766  
 Chandler, Charles L., III, 580  
 Chandler, Harry, III, 844  
 Chandler, Louis C., III, 725  
 Chapman, A. B., I, 89, 345, 365  
 Chapman, John S., I, 356, 358  
 Chapman, Joseph, I, 37; first Los Angeles American, 152  
 Chard, William, I, 65  
 Chase, Lucius K., II, 262  
 Chase, Mildred, II, 328  
 Chavez, Estanislao V., II, 405  
 Chaves, Julian, I, 64, 165, 288  
 Cheney, William A., III, 646  
 Chesebro, Ray L., III, 485  
 Chichester, W. J., I, 320  
 Chico, Mariano, worst governor of California, I, 151  
 Childs, Emeline H., II, 19  
 Childs, Ozro W., I, 71, 78; secures valuable city property, 101; II, 19  
 Christie, Alfred E., III, 460  
 Christie, Charles H., III, 460  
 Christie Brothers, III, 460  
 Christie Film Company, II, 460  
 Churches: First Protestant chapel (1852), I, 96; Episcopalians established in Los Angeles (1865), 107; Cathedral of Santa Vibiana opened (April 9, 1876), 117; the Chapel and old Plaza Church (1784-1815), 293; cornerstone laid of St. Vibiana Cathedral, Los Angeles (1869), 305; first Protestant service held in Los Angeles (1850), 307; First Protestant Society of Los Angeles, 308; Presbyterian, 310; Protestant Episcopal and Congregational, 311; Baptist, 314; Christian (Disciples of Christ) and Unitarian, 315; Congregation of B'nai B'rith, 316; early Protestant ministers, 318.  
 Cienega ranch, famous duck grounds, I, 90  
 "Cinema art" (motion picture industry), I, 386  
 Citrus industry, I, 122  
 City Hall commenced, I, 132  
 City School Library, I, 259  
 City of Paris (dry goods store), I, 82  
 Civic center planned, I, 142  
 Civil War: First year's effect on Los Angeles, I, 104  
 Clampitt, Edward A., III, 716  
 Clampitt, Margaret M. W., III, 717  
 Clark, A. J., III, 914  
 Clark, Eli P., I, 138; II, 189  
 Clark, W. A., I, 134  
 Clark, W. A. Jr., I, 381  
 Clarke, Robert M., II, 67  
 Clayton vineyard, I, 190  
 Clifford, John J., II, 149  
 Cline, John C., II, 38  
 Coate, Henry R., II, 234  
 Cochran, George I., II, 59  
 Code, William H., II, 36  
 Code of Spanish Laws, I, 325  
 Coffey, Titian J., I, 342  
 Coffin, John E., II, 240  
 Cohen, Gertrude, III, 853  
 Cohn, Kaspare, III, 777  
 Coit, Edward W., III, 536  
 Coit, Henry A., III, 537  
 Cole, Cornelius, III, 718  
 Cole, Elmer E., III, 699  
 Cole, Mrs. Girah D., I, 379  
 Cole, John D., II, 428  
 Collier, Frank C., II, 96  
 Collings, Lewis D., II, 364  
 Colony from Mexico City (1834), I, 360  
 Colton, Walter, I, 54  
 Commerce and trade: Early American traders to Los Angeles (1826-1831), I, 63; Los Angeles center of early New Mexican trade, 64; shipment of oranges and lemons by the all-water route, 219; cotton trade with Japan, 221; imports from the orient and Mexico, 222  
 Commercial Bank, I, 116  
 Comstock mines, effect on Los Angeles, I, 116  
 Conaty, Francis J., II, 157  
 Conaty, Thomas J., II, 156  
 Condon, Mabel, III, 758  
 Congregational churches, I, 311  
 Conklin, Leon R., III, 727  
 Conlee, Monroe H., III, 545  
 Conrad, Albert B., II, 201  
 Conroy, Charles C., II, 223  
 Constantian, Samuel M., III, 865  
 Conway, J. R., I, 360  
 Cook, Philip S., I, 163  
 Cooney, Wright M., III, 775  
 Cooper, Milton G., II, 219  
 Copen, John D., III, 764  
 Copp, Andrew J., Jr., III, 593  
 Coronado, Francisco Vasquez, I, 7  
 Coronel, Antonio Franco, I, 95, 360, 365  
 Coronel, Ignacio, I, 241, 360; sketch of, I, 361  
 Coronel, Manuel, I, 360  
 Coronel, Rosa, I, 73  
 Coronel, Soledad, I, 241  
 Coronel, Ygnacio, I, 165  
 Costa, Guillermo, I, 151  
 Cota, Antonio, I, 183  
 Cota, Francisco, I, 160  
 Cota, Leonardo, I, 189  
 Coulter, B. F., I, 315

- County clerks, I, 364-66  
 County courthouse commenced, I, 132  
 County hospital, I, 289  
 County judges, I, 364-66  
 Court of First Instance (Mexican system), I, 335  
 Court of Second Instance (Mexican system), I, 335  
 Court of Third Instance (Mexican system), I, 335  
 Coutts, Cave J., I, 67; III, 894  
 Coutts, William B., III, 896  
 Cowan, H. R., III, 847  
 Cox, S. Bolivar, I, 72  
 Coyne, D. Joseph, III, 470  
 Coyne, John P., II, 295  
 Crabb, Henry A., I, 100  
 Craig, Mrs. Nancy T., III, 837  
 Craig, William T., III, 445  
 Crane, George C., III, 826  
 Cravens, John S., II, 128  
 Creciat Family, III, 563  
 Creciat, Louisa A., III, 563  
 Crisler, Lewis A., Sr., III, 545  
 Criswell, Ralph L., III, 735  
 Crittenden, John J., I, 342  
 Cross, Henson H., III, 687  
 Cross, Kearnie, III, 686  
 Crump, Guy R., III, 514  
 Cullen, Charles B., I, 360  
 Cullen, Charles R., sketch of, I, 275  
 Culloden, Henry A., II, 430  
 Cumnoek School, III, 440  
 Cunningham, Frank L., III, 725  
 Cunningham, F. M., I, 310  
 Curtis, William D., III, 660  
 Cushing, Caleb, I, 342  
 Cushing, Charles P., I, 405  
  
 Daggett, Frank S., III, 820  
 Daggett, Lela A., III, 821  
 Daley, J. A., III, 864  
 Dalton, Henry, I, 202  
 Daly, Patrick, II, 115  
 Damon, William H., III, 579  
 Dana, Richard H., I, 49  
 Dana, Viola, III, 860  
 Danziger, Mrs. J. M., III, 883  
 Daum, William H., III, 642  
 Davis, Charles C., I, 245  
 Davis, Ferman E., III, 561  
 Davis, John, I, 37  
 Davis, LeCompte, II, 49  
 Davis, Thomas, III, 440  
 Davis, T. N., I, 310  
 Dead Man's Island, I, 209  
 De Celis, Eulogio, I, 74  
 De Echeandia, Jose Maria, I, 40  
 De Garza, Lazaro, Bishop of Sonora (1840), I, 296  
 Dehail, Ildevert I., II, 351  
 De la Guerra, Pablo, I, 77, 364; sketch of, 365, 366  
 De Laguna, Frederica, II, 198  
 Del Valle, Ignacio, I, 60, 66, 189, 360, 365  
 Del Valle, Reginaldo F., III, 745  
 Deming, Wilford E., I, 260  
 Den, Richard S., I, 277; sketch of, 279, 281  
 De Neve, Felipe: Founder of Los Angeles, I, 24, 27; sketch of, 25; death of, 26, 75, 330, 404  
 Dennen, Jeanne W., III, 454  
 De Ponti, Ernestine, III, 857  
 De Portola, Don Gaspar, California's first governor, I, 13, 25, 265  
 De Roulet, Marie Louise, II, 290  
 Desmond, C. C., I, 350  
 Desmond, Daniel, I, 350  
 Desmond, Joe, I, 350  
 De Tononi Giacomo, II, 331  
 De Tononi, Isabel R., II, 331  
 Dickinson, William R., III, 712  
 Diekson, Edward A., III, 623  
 Diego, Francisco Garcia, named bishop of diocese of California by Gregory XVI (1840), I, 300; arrives at San Diego (December, 1841), and takes charge of diocese, 301; death of, 303  
 Dillon & Keneally, I, 87  
 Dimmick, Kimball H., 362, 364, 365  
 Diocese of California, as created by Pope Gregory XVI in 1840, separated from the diocese of Sonora, I, 295-300  
 District Judges, I, 364-66  
 Dockweiler, Isidore B., II, 29  
 Doheny, Edward L., I, 135, II, 10  
 Doheny, Edward L., Jr., II, 12  
 Doherty, Frank P., III, 494  
 Domestic Science introduced into public schools (1889), I, 248  
 Dominican Sisters, II, 416  
 Domingo, Juan, I, 70, 183, 184  
 Dominguez, Don M., III, 699  
 Dominguez, Juan Jose, I, 148  
 Dominguez, Nasario, I, 189  
 Donahoe, George, II, 205  
 Donavan, James G., II, 316  
 Dorn, Fred R., III, 874  
 Dorsey, H. P., I, 71  
 Dorsey, P. W., I, 314  
 Dorsey, Susan M., III, 621  
 Double, Edward, III, 768  
 Downey, John G., I, 86, 89, 102, 108, 111, 281, 356  
 Drake, Charles R., III, 786  
 Drake, James C., II, 128  
 Drown, Ezra, I, 362, 365

- Drum Camp: established at Wilmington (1861), I, 104; abandonment of, 108
- Dryden, W. G., I, 77, 364; sketch of, 366
- Dulin, Edgar S., II, 102
- Dulin, Garretton, II, 353
- Dunlap, Frank E., II, 86
- Dupuy, Joseph, I, 379, 381
- Dustin, George F., II, 306
- Dyas, B. H., III, 773
- Earl, Edwin T., III, 906
- Earl, Jacob W., II, 206
- Eastman, James G., I, 352
- Eaton, B. S., I, 72
- Eaton, Fred, suggests Owens river as source of water supply, I, 229, 231
- Eckstrom, Albert A., III, 535
- Eckstrom, Daisy W., III, 535
- Edgar, William F., II, 186
- Edison Company, I, 396
- Education: Los Angeles schools in 1904, I, 75; first public school of Los Angeles (1855), 96; Los Angeles Board organized (1869), 109; pioneer schools and teaching in pueblo, 238; Mexican governor advocates girls' school (1844), 240; first American school (1851), 241; first organized school system and public school (1854-55), 242; progress in 1855-70, 243; Los Angeles's first high school (1872), 244; first high school graduating class, 245; modern expansion of system, 246; industrial and technical high schools, 247; "ungraded" classes for backward and defective children, 248; classes for the deaf and blind, and the health and development department, established, 1905-07, 249; physical and manual training introduced, 1909-10, 250; work of the "neighborhood schools," 251; specialties of city high schools, 253; intermediate schools, 252; World War work of public schools, 255; school libraries, 258; vocational training, 259; part-time school attendance, 261; provision for, at missions, 360
- Edwards, Albert E., III, 683
- Edwards, Hazel L. W., III, 684
- Eichelberger, Elizabeth J., III, 807
- Eichelberger, Harry, III, 808
- Eisner, Fred E., III, 580
- Electric Interurban car system, I, 138
- Electric Power introduced (1892), I, 394
- Elliott, J. M., I, 116
- Ellis, J. W., I, 310, 320
- Ellis, T. J., I, 365
- Ellis Club, I, 379, 381
- El Monte, I, 89
- Elmendorf, Charles H., II, 239
- Elwell, James F., III, 583
- Elysian Park, I, 122, 370
- Emerson, Bonnie O., III, 762
- Emerson, Willis G., III, 761
- Emory, W. H., diary describes campaign against Flores, I, 168
- Encina ranch, I, 149
- Enderly, Mae S., III, 720
- Engelhardt, Zephyrin, I, 301
- Estudillo, Jose Antonio, I, 301
- Etehemendy, Jean, II, 111
- Etchemendy, Madeleine, II, 112
- Evarts, William M., I, 342
- Evy, Edward, I, 365
- Exposition Park, I, 143, 372
- Fairbanks, Douglas, III, 821
- Falls, M. M., I, 257
- Fargo, Duane W., II, 379
- Faris, William A., II, 69
- Farmers and Merchants Bank, I, 80, 95, 111
- Farnham, Lewis M., II, 317
- Fay, Eli, I, 315; good minister and judge of real estate, 320
- Fay, John J., Jr., III, 776
- Fazenda, Louise M., III, 811
- Feast of Corpus Christi (1858), I, 368
- Federal Building site perfected (1905-7), I, 140
- Fee, William R., II, 175
- Feitshans, Frederick R., III, 904
- Felix, Vincenti, I, 34, 35; acting comisionado, 148
- Ferguson, Jessie, I, 37
- Ferrel, William C., I, 365
- Pigueroa, Jose, best of all governors, I, 151
- Filson, Al W., II, 369
- First Baptist Church, I, 314
- First book printed in Los Angeles (William Money, author), I, 283
- First bricks made, I, 192
- First California Code of Laws (1779), I, 26
- First cement pavement, I, 118
- First Chinese riot in Los Angeles (1871), I, 112
- First city directory, I, 110
- First commercial wireless system, I, 140
- First conveyance of crown land to Californian, I, 339
- First election under State government (1850), I, 360
- First electrical lighting, I, 122
- First four wheel vehicles, I, 184

- First Grand Opera in California (1847), I, 378  
 First Harbor Board, I, 143  
 First Judicial District (Mexican system), I, 337  
 First justice of the peace, I, 361  
 First known American ship at San Pedro (1805), I, 149  
 First National Bank, Los Angeles, I, 116  
 First organized immigration party (1841), I, 154  
 First ostrich farm, I, 123  
 First Protestant sermon preached in Los Angeles, I, 319  
 First Protestant Society of the City of Los Angeles, its Constitution (1859), I, 309, 319  
 First Presbyterian Church, I, 310  
 First public structures, I, 147  
 First real piano recital in San Francisco, I, 378  
 First school in Los Angeles, I, 238  
 First street pavement laid, I, 132  
 First substantial bridge, I, 110  
 First successful water power grist mill, I, 152  
 First teachers' institute, I, 243  
 First telephones in Los Angeles, I, 120  
 First vicar general of the diocese, I, 317  
 First white child born in Los Angeles of American parents, I, 95  
 First Wilmington railway car, I, 184  
 First woolen mill, I, 113  
 Fish, Charles W., III, 908  
 Fish harbor created on Terminal Island, I, 212  
 Fisher, William, I, 37  
 Fitzgerald, E. H., death of, I, 72, 364  
 Fitzgerald, George, I, 72  
 Flagg, Edwin H., III, 833  
 Fleekles, M., III, 791  
 Fleming, Edward J., III, 685  
 Fleming, Thomas J., III, 834  
 Fletcher, J. C., I, 276  
 Fletcher, William H., III, 704  
 Floods of 1815 and 1825, I, 150  
 Flores, Jose Maria, I, 156, 158, 160; sketch of, I, 163, 171, 173; flees to Sonora (January, 1846), 174; turns over command to Andres Pico, 177  
 Flower, Samuel, I, 366  
 Flugge, Charles W., I, 183  
 Foord, James, I, 89  
 Forbes, Frank S., III, 519  
 Forbes, Harry W., III, 910  
 Foreman, L. O., III, 915  
 Foreman & Clark, III, 914  
 Forman, Charles, II, 75  
 Forman, Eloise, II, 77  
 Forman, Mary A., II, 76  
 Fort Moore, completed (July 4, 1847), I, 164; ground broken for (January 12, 1846), 175  
 Forve, Philip, II, 109  
 Foster, John, I, 74  
 Foster, Stephen C., I, 66, 96, 165, 167, 242  
 Foster, Thomas T., I, 281, 309  
 Foster, Timothy, I, 365  
 Foy, Sam C., I, 198  
 Francis, John F., III, 700  
 Frank, Herman W., III, 742  
 Frank, Lawrence L., III, 485  
 Franz, Otto B., II, 575  
 Fredericks, John D., II, 212  
 Freebey, Grace A., III, 477  
 Freeman, Daniel, I, 123  
 Fremont, Jessie Benton, III, 441  
 Fremont, John C., his visit to Los Angeles, I, 73; refuses to leave California (1846), 154; marches into Los Angeles, 160; receives capitulation of Californians from Andres Pico, 176, 177, 179; placed under arrest at Fort Leavenworth, 180; III, 441  
 Friday Morning Club, I, 135  
 Friedlander, Samuel H., III, 675  
 Friends Church, I, 316  
 Frost, Charles H., III, 461  
 Frost, Howard, III, 461  
 Fuller, Clarence M., III, 792  
 Fuller, George, III, 836  
 Fuller, Ysidora C., III, 837  
 Gaffey, John T., III, 898  
 Gaffney, Robert J., II, 300  
 Gage, John H., III, 484  
 Galbraith, Isaac, I, 37  
 Gale, Herbert D., II, 323  
 Gale, T. C., I, 290  
 Gallagher, John J., II, 159  
 Gallardo, Rafael, I, 165  
 Galpin, Lloy, II, 354  
 Galusha, Elon G., III, 459  
 Gambling, licensed houses in Los Angeles, I, 94  
 Ganahl, Frank, I, 345, 348  
 Gard, George E., I, 365  
 Garden of Paradise, I, 193  
 Garfias, Manuel, I, 360, 365  
 Garland, William M., III, 879  
 Garra, Antonio, Indian chief, I, 72; executed for insurrection and murder (1851), 73  
 Garsse, Leo G., III, 501  
 Gates, Addie, I, 245  
 Gaylord, J. W., I, 281  
 Gearing, Harry, II, 336  
 Geibel, Martin E., II, 394  
 General Petroleum Company, I, 212  
 Gerberding, C. O., I, 275

- Germain, Eugene, III, 682  
 Germain, Marc L., III, 682  
 Gesell, F. A., III, 897  
 Getman, W. C., I, 94, 365  
 Getty, George F., II, 220  
 Getz, Milton E., III, 775  
 Gibbon, Thomas E., II, 51  
 Gibbs, George C., I, 365  
 Gibbs, Robert A., II, 293  
 Giesler, H. L., III, 791  
 Gilbert, Aletha M., II, 402  
 Gilbert, William I., III, 524  
 Gilbert & Sullivan's "Pinafore,"  
     first produced in the West, I, 389  
 Gilfillan, Sennet W., II, 163  
 Gillett, J. W., I, 365  
 Gilligan, John J., III, 457  
 Gillis, Robert C., III, 846  
 Girls' Collegiate School, III, 453  
 Gish, Dorothy, III, 886  
 Gish, Lillian, III, 885  
 Gish, Mary, III, 885  
 Gitchell, J. R., I, 309, 310, 362, 366  
 Glass, Joseph S., III, 738  
 Glassell, Andrew, Sr., I, 344; III, 730  
 Glassell, Andrew V., III, 733  
 Globe Milling Company, I, 216  
 Gold excitement of 1855, I, 99  
 Gold Hunter, first steamer into San  
     Pedro Harbor, I, 93  
 Golden Gate, so called by John C.  
     Fremont, I, 203  
 Gooden, Robert B., II, 195  
 Goodfellow, Ferd, III, 725  
 Goodfellow, Walter V., III, 725  
 Goodyear Tire Company, I, 396  
 Gordon, Frederick V., II, 321  
 Goudge, Herbert J., II, 338  
 Gould, Norma, III, 789  
 Gould, Will D., I, 345  
 Governor fares forth from San Ga-  
     briel to found Royal City, I, 31  
 Graham, Montgomery P., I, 167  
 Granger, Louis, I, 69, 242, 361  
 Grass, Joseph F., II, 207  
 Graves, Jackson A., I, 80, 116; his  
     reminiscences, 343; III, 534  
 Gray, Alice, III, 691  
 Gray, J. B., I, 320  
 Gray, William H., I, 365  
 Great Salt Lake Express, from Los  
     Angeles to Salt Lake, I, 99  
 Great Southern Distribution of Real  
     Estate and Personal Property, I,  
     202  
 Green, B. F., III, 845  
 Greenbow, Robert, I, 366  
 Gregory, XVI, I, 295  
 Greer, Paul E., III, 677  
 Gregson, Frederick P., III, 733  
 Griffin, John S., I, 87, 277; sketch of,  
     280, 281  
 Griffith, Griffith J., I, 139, 372  
 Griffith Park, I, 139; second largest  
     municipal park in the United States,  
     372  
 Grimsley, Oma L., III, 491  
 Grove Play of the Bohemian Club of  
     San Francisco, I, 379  
 Groves, Benjamin F., III, 501  
 Grundy, C. Fred, III, 454  
 Gude, Albert L., II, 162  
 Guerrero, Jose Vincente, I, 165  
 Guinn, J. M., I, 199, 243, 278  
 Guinn, S. M., I, 245  
 Guinn's "History of California," I,  
     125  
 Haas, Walter F., II, 224  
 Haggarty, John J., II, 108  
 Hahn, Benjamin W., II, 145  
 Haight, Fletcher M., I, 366  
 Haley, John, I, 37  
 Hall, Hiland, I, 366  
 Halleek, H. W., I, 362  
 Halsted, Abel S., III, 718  
 Hamburger, A., I, 120  
 Hamilton, Alle S., III, 676  
 Hamilton, John J., II, 272  
 Hammon, Percy V., III, 540  
 Hammond, T. H., I, 164  
 Hampton, William E., III, 673  
 Hanby, J. Walter, III, 514  
 Hancock, Allan, I, 95  
 Hancock, George A., II, 82  
 Hancock, Henry, I, 95; II, 80  
 Hancock, Winfield S., I, 72, 104  
 Handley, Lorin A., II, 370  
 Hanna, Byron C., II, 213  
 Hanna, George, II, 373  
 Hannon, J. C., I, 365  
 Hansen, Andrew C., II, 378  
 Hansen, George I, 85  
 Hansen, Homer A., III, 606  
 Harbert, William S., III, 679  
 Harbor of Los Angeles, I, 208  
 Hardacre, Ralph B., III, 572  
 Harding, W. C., I, 310  
 Hardy, Carlos S., II, 377  
 Harker, Rosamond C., III, 548  
 Harmon, William P., II, 103  
 Harris, Emil, I, 365  
 Harris, Nick, III, 471  
 Harrison, Harry W., II, 435  
 Hartman, Isaac, I, 366  
 Hartranft, Marshall V., III, 767  
 Hartsook, Fred, III, 760  
 Harvard School for Boys, The, II,  
     193  
 Haskins, Samuel M., II, 32  
 Hauser, H. J., III, 601  
 Hauser, Julius, III, 600  
 Hawley, Wanda, III, 866  
 Hay, John C., I, 315

- Hay, W. H., III, 576  
 Hayes, Benjamin, I, 62, 77, 360, 361, 364  
 Hayes, Louisa, first woman teacher, I, 243  
 Hayes, R. T., I, 281  
 Hayward, Henderson, II, 101  
 Hayward, J. A., I, 108  
 Hazard, Henry T., I, 353, 362  
 Hazzard Pavilion, I, 381  
 Heffner, Harry L., III, 512  
 Heinsch, Herman, III, 540  
 Heinsch, Rudolph C., III, 541  
 Hellman, Herman W., III, 617  
 Hellman, Irving H., III, 525  
 Hellman, I. W., I, 86, 95, 186, 345  
 Hellman, Marco H., III, 618  
 Hellman, Haas & Company, I, 83  
 Hellman, Temple & Company, I, 108  
 Helm, Lynn, II, 278  
 Helms, William T., III, 751  
 Henry, Mrs. John H., III, 748  
 Hepburn, H. P., I, 362  
 Herman, Fred H., III, 481  
 Hertz, Alfred, I, 381  
 Hertz, Henri, I, 378  
 Hewitt, Elbridge E., III, 572  
 Hiatt, John C., III, 671  
 Hiatt, William M., III, 672  
 Hiecock, Ross T., III, 728  
 Higgins, Thomas, II, 151  
 Hajar, Jose Maria, I, 360  
 Hill, Louis C., II, 37  
 Hill, W. H., I, 320  
 Hinchman, A. F., I, 95  
 Hines, George, I, 365  
 "History of the Bench and Bar of Southern California," by Willoughby Rodman, I, 325  
 Hoak, E. K., II, 399  
 Hobbs, William, I, 314  
 Hodgdon, Marie C., III, 695  
 Hodges, A. P., I, 280, 281  
 Hole, Willitts J., II, 164  
 Hollenbeck, Elizabeth, I, 372  
 Hollenbeck, Mrs. J. E., I, 135  
 Hollenbeck Home for Aged People, I, 135  
 Hollenbeck Park, I, 135, 372  
 Holliday, Ben, I, 184  
 Hollisters of Santa Barbara, I, 78  
 Hollywood Cemetery, III, 552  
 Holmes, Gene C., III, 786  
 Holmes Disappearing Bed Company, III, 785  
 Holterhoff, Godfrey, Jr., III, 598  
 Holton, George L., II, 226  
 Home, George K., III, 547  
 Hooker, John D., III, 586  
 Hoover, Juan L., I, 190  
 Hoover, Vincent, I, 190  
 Hoover Art Company, The, II, 102  
 Hope, A. W., I, 280, 281  
 Hope, May M., II, 264  
 Hopper, Charles B., III, 641  
 Horn, Carl F., II, 436  
 Horning, Benjamin, I, 384  
 Horse races, famous, I, 67-69  
 Hosick, James, II, 292  
 Hospital of the Good Samaritan Student Body Government, III, 624  
 Hospitals first founded (1857), I, 100  
 Hotchkiss, A. B., I, 356  
 Hotel Nadeau, I, 120  
 Hough, A. M., I, 319  
 Howard, Edward A., III, 819  
 Howard, Fred W., III, 794  
 Howard, Fredrick P., III, 754  
 Howard, J. G. (Jim), I, 345, 346, 362  
 Howard, Ozora W., III, 755  
 Howard, Paul J., III, 877  
 Howard, Volney E., I, 345, 350, 365, 366  
 Howard, William F., II, 223  
 Howdershell, Bedford J., III, 610  
 Howland, Charles H., II, 124  
 Howland, F. H., I, 120  
 Huber, Joseph, I, 190  
 Hudson, Rodney, I, 365  
 Hughes, Thomas, III, 856  
 Hughes, W. E., I, 398  
 Hunsaker, William J., I, 356; II, 221  
 Hunter, Fred L., II, 414  
 Hunter, Edward, I, 366  
 Hunter, Jesse D., I, 163, 192  
 Hunter, Robert E., II, 130  
 Huntington, Collis P., I, 113  
 Huntington, Henry E., I, 89, 140; II, 43  
 Hutchins, C. J., I, 320  
 Hutton, Aurelius W., II, 230  
 Hyatt, Chauncey W., II, 283  
 Hyatt, Mary J., II, 284  
 Ihmsen, Maximilian F., II, 181  
 Illustrations: Nature near San Gabriel before man appeared, I, 3; irrigating an orange grove by present-day growers, 28; San Pedro (Los Angeles) a "Real Harbor," 39; Old Los Angeles contrasted with new: Pershing Square, 47; Avalon, Santa Catalina Island, 57; modern schools of Southern California, Pasadena, 76; Colorado Street bridge, 81; Old Court House, 84; buildings now covering old Pasadena, 88; "Real" hotel of today on Long Beach, 94; Los Angeles in 1854 looking eastward, 97; Los Angeles about 1857, 100; Los Angeles Harbor in 1858, 103; Los Angeles Harbor in 1860, 105; corner of Palisade Park, Santa Monica, III; opening

- of first electric line (1885), 115; Plaza Mission and Workman's Rancho, 119; Los Angeles in the 80's, 121; Cawston's ostrich farm in still life, 124; Main Street in the 80's looking north and northeast, 126; Southern California Bungalow Court, 128; Los Angeles views in the early 80's, 131; Los Angeles thirty years ago and today, 133; oil field in Los Angeles, 136; Mount Lowe astronomical observatory, 138; Main Street in 1898, 139; Los Angeles in 1900, 141; Broadway looking south from Sixth Street in 1920, 143; entrance to Museum of History, Science and Art, 144; old mill at San Gabriel Mission, 153; present appearance of Commodore Stockton's headquarters near the Plaza, 161; sunny, beautiful Pasadena of today, 172; looking west on Temple Street of today, 188; view on the present Main Street, the Los Angeles reservoir, 194; the Plaza, Pico House and old gas works, 198; Los Angeles harbor, gateway to the Far East, 207; Los Angeles harbor as a lumber receiving port, 211; fish headquarters, Los Angeles harbor, 213; great oil tankers plying in and out of the harbor, 215; steamship unloading wheat from Australia, 218; great shipbuilding company preparing for the future, 220; sliding out of Los Angeles harbor, 225; headwaters of Owens River, source of Los Angeles's water supply, 227; Los Angeles, the southwestern metropolis, 236; Los Angeles High School, 239; old High School site of the present courthouse, 244; the Polytechnic High School, 254; a church district of Los Angeles, 294; Young Men's Christian Association Building, 313; the law's dignity of today, 324; along the Los Angeles ocean front, 369; on the beach at Ocean Park, 371; Pershing Square in miniature, 374; Temple Auditorium, Los Angeles, 377; Trinity Auditorium, 386; scenes in Los Angeles of today, 389; a great public institution—the Los Angeles Terminal Market, 393; Launching of the "Angeles," 395; Goodyear Tire and Rubber Company at Vernon, 397; the Federal building and vicinity, 399; Main and Temple streets, opposite present postoffice, 399; Spring Street looking south from Second Street in 1899, 403; beautiful bungalows of the modern city, 406; scenes in downtown Los Angeles, 408; Spring Street looking north from Third Street, 1900, 409; City Hall at San Pedro and Los Angeles Harbor, 411; Pacific Mutual building, 413
- Immaculate Heart College, II, 358  
Immaculate Heart of Mary Church, III, 591  
Imperial Valley cotton, I, 221  
Independent Steamship Company, I, 212  
Indians: Native villages of California, I, 2; uprisings of, 1850-51, 71; protected under Spanish laws, 326  
Industries: Origin of navel orange industry (1873), I, 113; Drought of 1876-77 devastates sheep industry of Southern California, 118; citrus industry saved (1889), by the "lady-bug," 122; oil, of Los Angeles district, 135; Hemp raising (1806-10), 149; grape culture and wine making (1851-56), 190; wine producers of 1856-61, 191; fish and oil sections of Los Angeles harbor, 212; industries located at Los Angeles harbor—stone quarry, shipbuilding yards, fish canning, refrigerating and ice making, vegetable oil refining, 214; fine sites for factories in San Pedro and Wilmington districts, 224; deciding factors in development of, 237; oil and electricity as stimulants to, 394; oil in the Los Angeles district, 410  
Ingraham, Irving E., III, 592  
Innes, Stephen, II, 363  
Ireland, William F., II, 63  
Irvin, Edward S., II, 277
- Jackling, Frances, II, 209  
Jackson, Helen Hunt, I, 120  
Jacobs, Jay B., II, 375  
Jacobson, Nils, III, 567  
Jarchow, Joachim H. F., III, 493  
Jarchow, Johanna K., III, 494  
Jauch, Joseph W., III, 762  
Jenkins, George S., III, 531  
Jenkins, John J., III, 530  
Jess, Stoddard, I, 143  
Joachim, Sister M., III, 624  
Johansing, Harry G., II, 411  
Johnson, C. R., I, 364  
Johnson, Gail B., II, 60  
Johnson, Hanecek, I, 87  
Johnson, Joseph H., II, 171  
Johnson, Milbank, II, 349  
Johnson, Reverdy, I, 342  
Johnston, Albert S., I, 104



- Jonathan Club, III, 610  
 Jones (Commodore) Catesby, takes possession of Monterey, I, 154  
 Jones, C. K., I, 315  
 Jones, Edward B., III, 937  
 Jones, E. W., I, 398, 400  
 Jones, Frederic H., III, 587  
 Jones, John H., III, 930  
 Jones, John M., I, 366  
 Jones, John P., I, 80; III, 886  
 Jones, John T., I, 242  
 Jones, Johnstone, II, 195  
 Jones, Mattison B., III, 520  
 Jones, William C., I, 362  
 Jones, Wilson W., I, 281, 364  
 Joney, William C., I, 362  
 Joyner, Frank H., II, 396  
 Junior "R. O. T. C.," I, 257  
 Kabierske, Henry, I, 382  
 Kahn, John, III, 714  
 Karr, Frank, II, 429  
 Kayser, Emil, III, 782  
 Kearny, Stephen W., I, 155, 160; sketch of, 168; leaves Monterey for Washington, 180  
 Keetch, Arthur, III, 495  
 Keleher, Timothy J., III, 883  
 Keller, Matthew, I, 190, 344  
 Keller, Will E., II, 73  
 Kellogg, Fred R., III, 827  
 Kelly, Frank A., III, 869  
 Kennard, Edwin H., III, 623  
 Kennedy, Samuel M., III, 559  
 Kerekhoff, William G., I, 89; II, 34  
 Kern county gold excitement, I, 99  
 Kerr, John A. H., III, 793  
 Kewen, E. J. C., I, 89, 347  
 Kewen & Howard, I, 347  
 Kidd, W. H. A., I, 365  
 Kimball, Mrs. Jesse Y., II, 409  
 King, A. J., I, 309, 364  
 King, James, I, 275, 276  
 Kingsley, John A., II, 397  
 Kingston, Winifred, III, 812  
 Kinney, Albert, I, 118  
 Kip, William I., I, 107  
 Kirchhoffer, Mary Elizabeth Y., III, 726  
 Kirchhoffer, Richard B., III, 725  
 Koerberle, John E., III, 488  
 Koebig, Adolph H., II, 371  
 Kreider, Samuel L., III, 750  
 Kremer, Morice, I, 365  
 Kuhn, Christopher, I, 185  
 Kurtz, Joseph, I, 365  
 Kuster, Edward G., III, 631  
 "La Boheme," sung for the first time in America, I, 380  
 LaBrea Rancho, I, 95  
 Laekey, Bertram D., II, 99  
 Lacy, Richard H., III, 765  
 La Estrella de Los Angeles (The Los Angeles Star), I, 96  
 Lafayette Park, I, 373  
 Lake, Delos, I, 348  
 Lake Vineyard, I, 185  
 Lamson, George F., I, 197  
 Land grants: Old Spanish, I, 338; by Mexican governors, 340; by Mexican Government, I, 341; investigation of, in Southern Military District of California (1847), I, 343  
 Landers, J. H., sketch of, I, 363  
 Landes, Mrs. Henry B., III, 620  
 Lanfranco, Juan T., I, 187  
 Lanfranco Block, I, 83  
 Langdon, Frederick C., III, 709  
 Lankershim, Isaae, I, 109  
 Lara, Josede, I, 30  
 Larkin, Thomas O., I, 179  
 Larrabee, Mrs. M. A., I, 379  
 Larronde, Juana E., II, 112  
 Larronde, Pierre, II, 112  
 Lasher, George W., I, 268  
 Lauer, Mrs. Emanuel H., III, 676  
 Laughlin, Homer, II, 175  
 Laughlin, Richard, I, 37, 64  
 Lawlor, William I., 243  
 Lawrence, Joseph V., I, 37  
 Layne and Bowler Corporation, III, 480  
 Lazard, Solomon, I, 71, 187  
 Lazard store, I, 193  
 Lazarovich Hrebrelanovich, I, 382  
 Leach, Martin A., III, 928  
 Leach, Wallace, I, 355  
 Leandry, J. B., I, 37  
 Leek, Henry, I, 245  
 Lee, Bradner W., III, 542  
 Legislature of a Thousand Drinks, I, 329  
 Lehman, George, I, 193  
 Lelia Byrd, first American ship to arrive at San Pedro, I, 149  
 Lemoreau, Louis, I, 70  
 Leonis, Miguel, I, 348  
 Lestrade, Anaeto, I, 317  
 Letts, Arthur, I, 139; II, 117  
 Levi, Simon, II, 374  
 Levy, Al, III, 445  
 Levy, Isaae O., II, 261  
 Lewis, August E., III, 443  
 Lewis, S. B., I, 398  
 Lewis, Thomas A., I, 400  
 Libraries, School, I, 258  
 Library Association organized (1859), I, 102  
 Lichtenberger, Louis, I, 85  
 Lillie, Arthur C., II, 436  
 Lincoln Park, I, 373  
 Lincoln's assassination, news of, in Los Angeles, I, 106  
 Lindley, Milton, III, 603

- Lindley, Walter, I, 290; III, 604  
 Linnard, D. M., III, 890  
 Linton, G. W., I, 315  
 Lippincott, J. B., I, 231  
 Live Stock: Introduction of Ohio improved sheep (1854), I, 78; cattle trade in 1850-60, 187; statistics for 1865, 1875, 1876, 189  
 Llewellyn, John, III, 401  
 Lloyd, Ralph B., II, 131  
 Loeb, Adrien, II, 161  
 Loewenthal, Max, III, 475  
 Longyear, Willis D., III, 802  
 Loop, C. F., I, 320  
 Lorenzana, Apolinaria, I, 36  
 Loring Club, I, 379  
 Los Angeles (El Pueblo La Senora de la Reina Los Angeles): Founded, I, 11; owes water supply to San Gabriel, 18; pioneer settlers of, 29; its twelve historic families, 30; mothered by San Gabriel, 31; as fixed by Gobernador Felipe de Neve, 32; its population in 1790, 33; its first mayor and grand high commissioner, 34; rise of landed barons, 35; as a health resort, 36; its first church (Plaza) founded, 37; a bad young town, 38; population 2,000 (1835), 41; its original "booster," 42; becomes city and California's capital, 43; California's capital only in name, 44; its old days and masters of hospitality, 46; famous horse center, 48; old Californians of, temperate in all things, 51; its women in olden times, 55; old life centered around Plaza, 59; rare old history of, 62; traders of (1826-1831), 63; California center of New Mexican trade, 64; early traders become settlers of, 65; posses from Mexican city rule, 66; its first three American families, 69; its "town farms" (1847-48), 70; description of, in 1854, 74; population and schools in 1904, 75; a court center of the Southern California district (early 50's), 77; conditions in 1875, 80; leading residences and orange groves in 1875, 86; favorite drives in 1875, 87; population in 1875, 1880, 1900, 1920, 90; first passenger road opened to San Pedro harbor (1849), 93; gambling houses licensed (1850), 94; city affairs and arrivals in early 50's, 95; headquarters for filibusters and bandits (1857), 100; improvements of 1857-58 and new port inaugurated, 101; news to, by pony express (1860-61), 102; first year of Civil War in, 104; leases city water works to Los Angeles City Water Co., 108; her centenary celebrated, 120; secures Santa Fe railroad connection (1885), 123; cheap gas boom collapses, 127; new city charter adopted, 132; her unequaled electric interurban system, 138; its fiesta, 138; takes over water works, 140; consolidation of, with San Pedro and Wilmington (1909), 142; original pueblo of (1781), 146; first governed by comisionado, 147; land grants and progress, 1785-1800, 148; progress from 1810 to 1820, 149; changes in its local administration, 150; storm center in Mexican politics (1822-47), 151; occupation of by American troops described by native writer, 159; surrenders to American forces (January 10, 1846), 173; center of Mexico-California (January, 1846), 175; incorporated as city (April 4, 1850), 180; "Ord's survey" and city map of, 181; merchants of 1844-49, 183; merchants of 1847-53, 185; merchants of 1854-66, 186; stores of 1850, 195; how its pioneer merchants advertised, 199; port of San Pedro becomes its harbor, 208; receives State title of Wilmington harbor lands and extends corporate boundaries, 209; Board of Harbor Commissioners created (1907), 209; harbor districts absorbed (1909), great extension of works, 210; great seaport of the Southwest, 217; gateway to the Orient and western South America, 223; grand source of its water supply, 226-37; advantages as industrial city, 237; its first school under American rule (1851), 241; public school system organized, 242; changes in educational system, 1853-1903, 245; its night schools, 246; present status of public schools, 261; its early sanitary measures (1847), 288; sanitary measures, 1850-68, 289; public measures relating to contagious diseases, 290; becomes part of Roman Catholic diocese of California, 295; incorporation as city, 329; its parks, 370-75; opera in, 380; world center of "movies," 386; "City (The) Advertising Built," 391; population, 1781-1920, 404; rise as a cosmopolitan city, 402; middle west chief contributor to growth, 405; general progress of decade, 1900-10, 407; transportation center of Pacific Coast, 410; bird's-eye view of, 411

- Los Angeles Athletic Club organized (1879), I, 123
- Los Angeles Aqueduct, I, 391
- Los Angeles Board of Education sells valuable city property, I, 122
- Los Angeles Board of Trade, I, 111, 137
- Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce (see also Los Angeles Board of Trade), I, 137, 388, 401
- Los Angeles City Water Company, I, 108
- Los Angeles Clinical Group of Physicians and Surgeons, III, 721
- Los Angeles County Bank, I, 80, 114
- Los Angeles Examiner, II, 181
- Los Angeles Furniture Company, I, 83
- Los Angeles Gas Company, I, 129
- Los Angeles Harbor (See also San Pedro) as a cotton port and industrial center, I, 214; as home port of Pacific Squadron (U. S. Navy), and leading station of Pacific steamship lines, 216; building of, at small expense, 218; shipment of citrus fruits from, by all-water route, 219; official designation, 143
- Los Angeles Infirmary, I, 101
- Los Angeles Mounted Rifles, I, 104
- Los Angeles-Pacific Navigation Company, I, 212
- Los Angeles Shipbuilding Company, I, 396
- Los Angeles Star: first newspaper (1851), I, 96, 199, 312, 368
- Los Angeles State Normal School, I, 262, 263
- Los Angeles Symphony Orchestra, I, 381
- Los Angeles Theatre, I, 380
- Los Angeles Water Company, I, 118
- Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad, I, 108; opened (October 26, 1869), 110, 208
- Los Angeles, San Pedro and Salt Lake Railroad completed (1905), I, 142
- Lott, Melvina A., III, 515
- Lowe, T. S. C., I, 127, 137
- Lucky, W. T., I, 244
- Lugo, Antonio Maria: California's most famous horseman, I, 48; an ideal host, 49, 74; death of, 167
- Lugo, Felipe, I, 189
- Lugo, Vicente, I, 60, 189
- Lugo Rancho, site of present Los Angeles, I, 48
- Lummis, Charles F., I, 323, 378
- Lutz, Walter H., III, 703
- Lyon, Charles W., II, 248
- Lyric Club, I, 379, 381
- Lytell, Bert, III, 899
- Macauley, Charles R., III, 932
- Macdonald, J. Wiseman, III, 513
- Mace, W. H., I, 345, 349
- MacGregor, Norval, I, 384
- Machado, Augustin, I, 189
- Maclellan, D. W., I, 365
- Mack, George, III, 453
- Macneil, Louise, III, 819
- Macneil, Sayre, II, 57
- Macpherson, Jeanie C., III, 658
- Mac Rae, Henry, III, 874
- Magdalen, Sister Mary, III, 358
- Mahoney, Timothy, III, 462
- Makinson, Emma P., II, 380
- Mallard, J. S., I, 69, 361
- Manual training introduced into public schools (1910), I, 250
- Maple Avenue Evening High School, I, 247
- Marine Railway, I, 216
- Marsh, John, I, 64, 277, 279
- Marsh, Robert, III, 805
- Marshutz, Siegfried G., III, 522
- Martin, Albert C., II, 33
- Martin, Norman R., II, 116
- Martin, William A., III, 634
- Martindale, Emory D., III, 627
- Martinez, Incarnacion, death of, I, 73
- Masearel, Jose, I, 95, 183
- Mason, Dean, III, 926
- Mason, George, III, 925
- Mason, Richard B., I, 165, 179; requests justice of peace not to marry Catholics to Protestants (1847), 304
- Mason Opera House, I, 386
- Masons: first meeting at the Botica, I, 73; first lodge chartered (1854), 98
- Mathews, William B., III, 504
- Maynard, Rea E., II, 159
- McAllister, Hall, I, 342
- McArthur, Anna, I, 243
- McCan, Martha N., III, 596
- McCarthy, Daniel O., III, 664
- McCarthy, E. Avery, III, 610
- McCarthy, John M., III, 465
- McCarthy, Mary B., III, 668
- McCarthy, Neil S., III, 848
- McCollough, Alexander M. F., III, 684
- McCollough, Emma A. M., III, 685
- McCollough, Vernon C., III, 685
- McComas, Alice M., III, 689
- McComas, Charles C., III, 688
- McCoy, John C., II, 431
- McCoy, Mary H. R., II, 432
- McCoy, Thomas J., III, 669
- McDonald, Estelle C., III, 703
- McDonald, Robert W., III, 701
- McDonnell, Mary, III, 630
- McEntire, Walter F., II, 437
- McFadden, William M., I, 243

- McFarland, J. P., I, 281  
 McGarry, Daniel F., II, 384  
 McGarry, Daniel M., II, 383  
 McGarry, J. A., III, 636  
 McGarry, J. F., III, 856  
 McGarry, Michael J., II, 90  
 McGarry, Patrick J., II, 88  
 McGarvin, Don C., III, 692  
 McGrath, Patrick J., II, 138  
 McGroarty, Ida L., I, 383  
 McGroarty, John S., III, 938  
 McKee, J. H., I, 290  
 McKee, William, I, 309, 310  
 McKnne, J. H., I, 366  
 McLaren, D., I, 309  
 McLaren, Malcom, III, 588  
 McManus, Joseph, II, 106  
 McMullen, William C., III, 458  
 McMurrin, Joseph W., II, 347  
 McNair, David, III, 619  
 McNealy, W. R., I, 357  
 McQuigg, Martin V., III, 455  
 McVay, William E., II, 138  
 Meade, Agnes S., II, 279  
 Meade, G. Walter, II, 279  
 Medical fees (1850), I, 273  
 Medina, Guadalupe, I, 240, 241  
 Mellus, Francis, sketch of, I, 186, 242  
 Mellus, Henry, I, 193  
 Mennillo, Frank A., II, 46  
 Menondez, Jose Antonio, I, 183  
 Mercantile Place, I, 122  
 Merrill, Edward S., III, 725  
 Merry, Arthur L., III, 581  
 Mesa, Antonio, I, 30  
 Mesmer, Joseph, III, 798  
 Messenger, H. H., I, 320  
 Metcalf, John N., III, 743  
 Methodist College established (1880), I, 118  
 Meyer, Mendel, I, 84, 187  
 Meyers, Lillian M., II, 436  
 Mexican National Assembly (California representative), I, 150  
 Mexican War: Declared by American Congress, I, 155; Los Angeles occupied by American forces, 156; pronunciamiento issued by Mexican commander, 157; battle at "Pico Crossing," 160; after close, ayuntamiento (town council) dissolved by military governor, 165; local American officials gain favor, American army departs, 166; news of treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo reaches Los Angeles (August 15, 1848), 167; battle of January 8, 1846, 169; battle of January 9, 1846, 171; treaty of capitulation signed (January 13, 1847), 176  
 Micheltorena, Emmanuel, I, 152  
 Midway Gas Company, II, 318  
 Miles, Charles E., I, 365  
 Miller, A. Blanchard, III, 779  
 Miller, Eleanor, III, 611  
 Miller, John B., II, 254  
 Milliken, Lillian, I, 245  
 Milliron, Clark J., II, 235  
 Millspaugh Hall, I, 263  
 Minzer, Leo, II, 53  
 Miranda, Antonio, I, 30  
 Mission orchard of San Gabriel, I, 189  
 Mission Play, I, 382; synopsis of its three acts, 383  
 Missions: Franciscan, I, 10-23; California secularized by Spanish Cortes (1813), 21; confiscated by Mexican Government (1833), 22  
 Mitchel, Adelaide P., II, 290  
 Mitchell, Alexander, II, 213  
 Mitchell, Beatrice, II, 314  
 Mitchell, H. Milner, I, 365  
 Modini-Wood, C., I, 379  
 Molony, Clement, II, 146  
 Money, William, I, 282, 283; argues five years with Catholic clergy (1834-40), 286; fate of his disputants, 287; death of, 288  
 Money's (Wm.) "Discovery of the Ocean," I, 284  
 Money and money lending (1854), I, 98; effect of Civil war on greenbacks, 106  
 Monnette, Mervin J., II, 203  
 Monnette, Orra E., II, 204  
 Monterey: Protests against Los Angeles as California capital, I, 43; refuses to capitulate as capital, 44; a court center of the Southern California district (early 50's), 77, 179  
 Montgomery, Ernest A., II, 211  
 Montgomery, Francis S., III, 891  
 Montgomery, George A., II, 312  
 Montgomery, Gertrude, III, 892  
 Montgomery, James A., II, 308  
 Montgomery, Los Angeles "aristocratic" gambling house, I, 94  
 Moody, Elmer I., III, 471  
 Moohr, Clara M., II, 423  
 Moore, Ben, I, 164  
 Moore, C. I. D., III, 616  
 Moore, Ernest C., I, 263  
 Moore, Harry E., III, 607  
 Moore, Ira, I, 262  
 Moore, Walter S., III, 566  
 Moore, William H., Jr., III, 736  
 Morales, Francisco, I, 38  
 Moran, Robert B., III, 913  
 Moreland, Watt L., II, 100  
 Morales, Jose Matias, I, 167  
 Moreno, Juan Bautista, I, 160  
 Morosco, Oliver, a dominating figure in the theatrical world, I, 385

- Morris, Oscar M., III, 507  
 Morrison, Murray, I, 364; sketch of, 366  
 Morrow, William S., I, 309  
 Morton, Harold C., II, 399  
 Moses, Betsey B. C., II, 353  
 Moses, Cassius M., II, 351  
 Mosier, Martin H., III, 808  
 Mott, John G., III, 439  
 Mott, Stephen H., I, 364  
 Mott, Thomas<sup>d</sup> D., I, 364  
 Mount Lowe astronomical observatory, I, 138  
 "Movies," Los Angeles as world center of, I, 386  
 Mudd, Seeley W., III, 478  
 Mueller, Oscar C., II, 422  
 Muhleman, Frank L., II, 310  
 Mulholland, William, I, 118, 231; sketch of, 232, 233, 235; II, 229  
 Mullaly, Porter & Ayers, I, 193  
 Mullen, Andrew, II, 134  
 Mullen, Edward F., II, 135  
 Mullen, Mary D., II, 135  
 Municipal building erected, I, 122  
 Mulqueeney, Patrick C., III, 840  
 Munro, John, II, 236  
 Murphy, Florence C., III, 646  
 Murphy, Thomas C., III, 645  
 Murphy, William K., II, 309  
 Murray, John E., II, 314  
 Museum of History, Science and Art, I, 145  
 Mushet, William C., II, 173  
 Music and Art: From Greece to the Pacific Coast, I, 376, 377; from Indian music to grand opera, 378; early history of choral music in Los Angeles, 379; opera in Los Angeles, I, 380; Los Angeles world center of "movies," 386  
 Musser, Henry L., III, 632  
 Myers, Charles L., II, 302  
 Myers, John S., II, 400  
 Myers, Louis W., III, 793  
 Myles Place, I, 89  
 Nadeau, George A., III, 519  
 Nadeau, Remi, I, 120, III, 518  
 Navarro, Jose Antonio, I, 30  
 Navel Orange industry established (1873), I, 113  
 Neighborhood schools, I, 250  
 Neuman, Edward, I, 187  
 New Church (Swedenborgian), I, 316  
 New Mexican trade, I, 64  
 Newlin, Thomas E., III, 479  
 Newmark, Harris, I, 60, 198; III, 449  
 Newmark, Maurice H., I, 143; III, 450  
 Newport, Fred P., III, 900  
 Nichols, John G., I, 69, 95, 274  
 Nigger Alley, I, 94  
 Night schools, I, 246  
 Nisbet, James, I, 276  
 Nordholdt, William, I, 72  
 Nordlinger, Louis S., II, 250  
 Nordlinger, Simon, II, 249  
 Norton, Myron, I, 72; sketch of, 363, 364  
 Noted events of 1851, I, 73  
 Oakley, Franc R., III, 828  
 Oakley, James, III, 828  
 Occidental (Presbyterian) College, I, 129  
 O'Connor, J. Robert, III, 486  
 O'Conor, Charles, I, 342  
 Odell, Samuel W., II, 356  
 O'Donoghue, Patrick, II, 200  
 Ogden, William B., III, 482  
 Ogier, Isaac S. K., I, 77, 309, 310, 365; sketch of, 366  
 O'Gorman, Michael, II, 95  
 Oil boom of 1892-1904, I, 135  
 Oil industry, I, 394  
 Oleovich, Emil, II, 282  
 Old jail, I, 85  
 Old courthouse, I, 85  
 Oldfield, Barney, III, 832  
 Old Plaza Church, II, 167  
 Old Soldiers Home, Sawtelle, I, 132  
 Olvera, Agustin, sketches of, I, 159, 360, 361  
 O'Melveny, H. K. S., I, 85, 86, 346, 364  
 O'Melveny, Henry, I, 245  
 O'Melveny, Henry W., II, 25  
 O'Neil, Patrick H., III, 558  
 O'Neil, Mrs. Richard, III, 567  
 Oneonta Park, I, 89  
 Orange county, carved from Los Angeles, I, 135  
 Orcutt, Leafie S., II, 385  
 Ord, Pacificus, I, 366  
 Orfila, Antonio, II, 180  
 Orme, H. S., I, 268, 289  
 Orpheus Club, I, 379, 381  
 Ortega, Concepcion D., II, 186  
 Ortega, Emilio C., II, 184  
 Osborne, Henry Z., III, 506  
 Osborne, W. B., I, 78, 281  
 Osbourn, Guillermo B., sketch of, I, 273  
 Osbourne, George, I, 384  
 Osteopathy in California, III, 909  
 Otis, Harrison G., I, 120, 139, 398; III, 840  
 "Our Italy," by Charles D. Warner, I, 135  
 Overell, Arthur O., III, 780  
 Overns, Hugo, I, 242  
 Overstreet, Dr., I, 281

- Overton, Paul, II, 91  
 Owen, E. H., I, 365  
 Owens River, I, 229  
 Owens River Aqueduct, story of the  
 I, 226-37  
 Owens, Timon E., III, 570
- Pacific Coast Oil Company, I, 90  
 Pacific Electric building, I, 140  
 Pacific Steamship Company, I, 212  
 Pacific Steamship lines operating from  
 Los Angeles, I, 216  
 Packard, Albert, I, 183  
 Packard, D. T., I, 320  
 Padres, Jose Maria, I, 360  
 Page, Benjamin E., II, 94  
 Page Military Academy, II, 293  
 Pahl, Harriet W., II, 225  
 Palethorpe, William J., II, 59  
 Palmer, Charles H., Jr., II, 349  
 Palmer, Frederick, II, 122  
 Palomares, Jose, I, 150  
 Palou, Francisco: Serra's successor as  
 father president of missions, I, 15;  
 literary works on Franciscan mis-  
 sions and missionaries, 16  
 Parent-Teachers Association, I, 255  
 Parker, Alexander, I, 312, 320  
 Parker, Claude I., II, 327  
 Parker (Horatio) prize opera, I, 381  
 Parker, I N., I, 314  
 Parker, O. K., I, 231  
 Parkinson, John, II, 221  
 Parks, I, 370-75  
 Parochial and private schools, I, 263  
 Parsons, Elias H., III, 769  
 Parsons, Mary A., III, 772  
 Pasadena: Settlement commenced in  
 1875, I, 89, 138  
 Pasadena Military Academy, III, 748  
 Pasadena Rose Tournament first held,  
 I, 135  
 Pascal, Julian, III, 694  
 Patton, George S., I, 345; II, 391  
 Patton, George S., Jr. III, II, 392  
 Paulding, Joseph, I, 65  
 Paulsen, Robert E., I, 379  
 Payue, Herbert A., III, 502  
 Peachy, A. C., I, 362  
 Pearson, Benjamin F., III, 533  
 Peck, Arthur R., II, 218  
 Peck, Earl C., III, 734  
 Peck, George H., II, 120  
 Peckham, George C., II, 406  
 Pelanconi, Antonio, II, 332  
 Pelanconi, Lorenzo A., II, 332  
 Pelanconi, Petra, II, 332  
 Pellissier, Germain, II, 289  
 Pellissier, Marie Julie, II, 290  
 Penelon, Henri, I, 192, 317  
 Penton, Joseph T., III, 677  
 Pershing Square, I, 373  
 Pesthouse built, I, 289  
 Pettebone, Henry W., II, 171  
 Pettingell, Frank H., II, 149  
 Pettit, Fred E., Jr., III, 903  
 Petty, F. Fern, III, 725  
 Philharmonic Orchestra, I, 381, 382  
 Phillips, Lee A., II, 20  
 Phillips, Louis, I, 356  
 Philp, Harry G. R., II, 192  
 Physicians and Surgeons: California's  
 first, I, 266; Spanish laws regulat-  
 ing the practice of medicine and sur-  
 gery, 327  
 Pickarts, Albert J., III, 851  
 Pickrell, A. J., II, 215  
 Pico, Andres, I, 48, 156, 162; com-  
 mander of California forces capitu-  
 lates to Fremont, 176, 189  
 Pico, Pio, I, 42, 60, 74; deposes Man-  
 uel Victoria as governor, 151; last  
 governor under Mexico, 152, 165;  
 returns from Mexico, 167, 189, 301;  
 last of the Mexican governors, 341  
 Pico House, I, 80, 82  
 Piel, Jessie, I, 245  
 Pierce, Albert D., III, 469  
 Pillsbury, Bertha A., III, 509  
 Pillsbury, George E., III, 509  
 Pina, Maxima, I, 238  
 Pioneer auction house of 1850, I, 197  
 Pioneer barber, I, 201  
 Pioneer photographer of Los Angeles,  
 I, 317  
 Plaza, I, 59; sixty-five years ago, 60,  
 118; as originally laid out, 147;  
 memories of the, 367  
 Plaza Church founded (1814), I, 37;  
 in 1814-22, 150, 305; dedicated  
 (1822), 306; oldest parish church  
 on Pacific Coast, 307, 316  
 Politics: Jose Maria Carrillo runs for  
 Mexican Congress, I, 41; Carrillo's  
 successful Congressional campaign  
 and revolution, 42; Los Angeles  
 storm center (1822-47), 151  
 Polytechnic High School, I, 247  
 Ponet, Ellen J., III, 893  
 Ponet, Victor, III, 892  
 Port of San Pedro, I, 208  
 Porter, William J., I, 325  
 Post, Hoyt, Jr., III, 662  
 Pottenger, Francis M., III, 806  
 Potter, N. A., I, 309, 310  
 Potts, A. W., I, 364  
 Poulin, J. B., I, 379  
 Poulin, J. P., I, 381  
 Powell, George H., III, 462  
 Powell, N. T., II, 216  
 Powell, Robert J., II, 311  
 Power, Tyrone, I, 384  
 Powers, John F., II, 154  
 Powers, L. M., I, 288

- Prat, Pedro, I, 265; California's first doctor, 266
- Prather, Will C., II, 417
- Prehoda, Frank J., II, 378
- Presbyterian churches, I, 310
- Press: Los Angeles newspapers of the '50s, I, 79; first Los Angeles newspaper (1851), 96; Daily Times first issued (December 4, 1881), 120
- Price, Frank T., II, 310
- Pryor, Miguel N., I, 70, 165
- Pryor, Nathaniel, I, 64
- Property holders of 1851, I, 74
- Protestant Episcopal churches, I, 311
- Providencia Rancho (Burbank), I, 90
- Pruitt, Drew, II, 114
- Pueblos; how they differed from American municipalities, I, 340
- Puente, I, 89
- Pure Food laws of 1538 I, 328
- Purviance, Edna, III, 801
- Putnam, Charles E., II, 365
- Quinby, E. Collins, II, 110
- Quintero, Luis, I, 30
- Quinton, John H., II, 35
- Quinton, Code & Hill, II, 35
- Radford, Joseph D., II, 168
- Raho, Blas, I, 317
- Railroads: Status of Southern Pacific in 1875, I, 80; opening of Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad (October 26, 1869), 100; Civil War blocks building of, 104, opposition to (1866), 107; city and county votes to aid Los Angeles & San Pedro R. R., 108; Central Pacific Railroad completed (1869), 109; extension of Southern Pacific (1872), 112; direct connection of Los Angeles with Southern Pacific through San Fernando tunnel, 118; Santa Fe reaches Los Angeles (1885), 123; first through service of Southern Pacific Railroad inaugurated (August, 1887), I, 132; Santa Fe branch from Los Angeles to San Diego completed in 1891, I, 134; steam, electrified, I, 138; Los Angeles attempts adjustment of rates with, I, 140; connections between Los Angeles, San Pedro and Wilmington, I, 208
- Ralphs, Albert G., Jr., II, 271
- Ralphs, George A., II, 270
- Ralston, W. C., death of, I, 91
- Ralston, W. C., I, 117
- Ramirez, Jose Antonio, I, 37
- Rancherias (Native Indian Villages), I, 2
- Rand, June, II, 168
- Randall, Charles H., III, 597
- Ransford, John E., III, 466
- Ransom, Adrian C., III, 653
- Ransom, Don E., III, 653
- Ransom, William E., III, 652
- Read, Helen B., III, 757
- Reardon, James A., II, 174
- Recopilacion de las Indias (code of Spanish colonial laws), I, 325; defines duties of alcaldes in Spanish colonies, 329
- Red Cross Shop, II, 15
- Redick, John L., I, 400
- Redlands Company, I, 396
- Reed, John, I, 64
- Reeve, Sidney N., II, 113
- "Reform of the New Testament Church," by William Money (1854), I, 285
- Reglamento (California's first code of laws), I, 26
- Reid, George E., II, 369
- Reid, Wallace, III, 796
- Reid, William W., III, 796
- Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints (Mormon), I, 316
- Resa, Andrew, II, 166
- Requena, Manuel, I, 242
- Reyes, Francisco, I, 149
- Reynolds, S. F., I, 362
- Reynolds, Thomas S., II, 72
- Rhoades, Nelson O., II, 337
- Rhodes, Allin L., III, 629
- Rhodes, Joseph F., III, 574
- Rice, George, I, 37, 152
- Rice, Paran F., III, 643
- Richardt, Theophilus, II, 99
- Richardson, Solomon, I, 89
- Richardson, W. A., I, 37
- Richardson, William H., III, 523
- Riddle, Adeline, II, 209
- Riddle, Julia, II, 209
- Riley, Bennett, I, 66
- Rios, Joaquin de los Rios y, I, 360
- Rittersbacher, Charles, II, 93
- Rittersbacher, Laura K., II, 94
- Rivera, I, 89
- Riverside County, iron deposits in, I, 398
- Roads: Passenger road opened between San Pedro harbor and Los Angeles (1849), I, 93; great stage lines and express, with Los Angeles as station (early 50's), 99
- Robertson, Mrs. Matthew S., III, 885
- Robinson, Alfred, I, 193
- Robinson, Charles M., I, 142
- Robinson, Henry M., III, 901
- Robinson, Joseph E., II, 347
- Robinson, Mrs. M. Hennon, III, 804
- Robinson, Clare, III, 691
- Rodman, Willoughby, I, 325
- Rodriguez, Pablo, I, 30
- Roger, Wilfred, I, 384
- Rogers, Robert I., III, 571

- Rohe, Clifford A., II, 410  
 Rojo, Manuel C., I, 361; sketch of, 363  
 Roland, Fred, I, 37  
 Roland, John, I, 74, 189  
 Roland, W. R., I, 365  
 Rolfe, H. C., I, 72  
 Roman, John, III, 446  
 Roman Catholic Churches: diocese of California created by Gregory XVI, I, 295; Bishop Diego journeys to Santa Barbara, his episcopal residence, 302; contest with Governor Pico over secularization of missions, 303; Upper California erected into a diocese with Santa Barbara as episcopal city, 305; diocese of Monterey, 305  
 Romero, Dona Guadalupe, I, 69  
 Roodhouse, Robert, III, 548  
 Rosas, Alejandro, I, 30  
 Rosas, Basilio, I, 30  
 Rose, Andrew H., II, 341  
 Rose, L. J., I, 89, 111, 116  
 Rose. (L. J.) place, (Sunny Slope), I, 89  
 Rose, W. H., I, 243  
 Rosenberg, Carl E., III, 878  
 Ross, E. M., I, 85, 345  
 Ross, Ida H., II, 80  
 Ross, N. A., III, 447  
 Rossiter, John G., II, 322  
 Rossetti, Victor H., II, 179  
 Rothwell, Walter H., I, 381  
 Rowan, George D., II, 304  
 Rowan, Robert A., II, 152  
 Rowan, T. E., I, 365  
 Rowland, Charlotte M., II, 77  
 Rowland, John, I, 64; III, 924  
 Rowland, William R., III, 925  
 Rowley, Edwin S., II, 90  
 Rowntree, John T., II, 266  
 Rubottom, William, I, 71  
 Rush, Judson R., II, 50  
 Russell, John N., Jr., II, 420  
 Ryan, Andrew, I, 365  
 Ryan, M., I, 365  
 Sabichi, Frank, II, 312  
 Sabichi, G. Carlos, III, 848  
 Sabichi, William W., II, 314  
 Sackett, Russell, I, 361  
 Sacred Heart Academy, II, 416  
 Safford, George S., III, 614  
 Safford, Mae C., III, 615  
 Salandie, Madame, I, 183  
 Salazar, Jose, I, 165  
 Salt Lake Railroad, I, 134  
 San Antonio de Padua, I, 13  
 San Antonio Light and Power Company, I, 396  
 San Bernardino County; source of poultry and dairy supplies (1853), I, 96  
 San Bueno Ventura, I, 13  
 San Carlos Mission (Monterey), I, 13  
 San Diego: Founded, I, 13, 134, 155; established as episcopal city by Gregory XVI (1840), 297; "Insignificant town" (1841), 301, 302  
 San Diego Bay: Fray Junipero Serra arrives at, I, 10, 203  
 San Fernando Farm Association, I, 109  
 San Fernando Rancho, great wheat farm, now part of Los Angeles, I, 109  
 San Fernando tunnel, I, 80, 233  
 San Gabriel, Mother of Los Angeles, I, 12, 14; mission founded (September, 1771), near site of present, 15; Palou's account of its founding, 16; Queen of the Missions, 18; its industrial and normal schools, center of hospitality, 19; founders of Los Angeles issue from, 31; in 1875, 89, 228  
 San Gabriel Vineyard, I, 190  
 San Joaquin Light & Power Corporation, II, 320  
 San Jose (pueblo) founded, I, 11  
 San Juan de Arguello (pueblo), I, 361  
 San Pascual, I, 164, 177  
 San Pedro: Harbor first viewed by white men, I, 4; as whaler's fitting-out post, 106; or San Miguel, 204  
 San Pedro Harbor, I, 38; closed by Mexican government, (1828), 40, 62; in 1875, 80; first steamer into (1849), 93; government first improves (1871), 111; becomes (officially) Los Angeles Harbor, 143; first known American ship to arrive at, 149; trading vessels of, 183; first steamers to, 184; port of Los Angeles, 204; described in 1835, 205  
 San Rafael Rancho (Glendale), I, 90, 148  
 Sanchez, Mattias, I, 117  
 Sanchez, Thomas A., I, 365  
 Sanford, W. T. B., I, 242  
 Sanitary inspectors created, I, 291  
 Sansevaine, Jean L., I, 71, 190  
 Santa Anita Rancho, I, 116  
 Santa Barbara, receives new Catholic bishop of the Californias, I, 302  
 Santa Catalina Island, center of early Yankee trade, I, 58, 111, 129, 205  
 Santa Fe Railroad: Enters Los Angeles (1885), I, 123; branch from Los Angeles to San Diego completed (1891), 134  
 Santa Monica, I, 111, 138, 208  
 Santa Monica bay, described in 1542, I, 6  
 Sargent, Edwin W., II, 177  
 Sartori, Joseph F., II, 31  
 Sanders, J. H., I, 362



- Sawyer School of Secretaries, The, II, 209
- Saxon, Thomas A., I, 365
- Scarborough, James G., II, 415
- Scarborough, William B., II, 355
- Schenck, Paul W., III, 577
- Schertzinger, Victor L., III, 867
- Schmidt, Edward, II, 412
- School Libraries, I, 258
- Schumacher, John, I, 185
- Schumacher, John J., II, 366
- Schwartz, Hyman, II, 262
- Scott, Jonathan R., sketch of, I, 361
- Scott, Joseph, I, 245; III, 783
- Scott, Ralph J., II, 359
- Scott, William B., III, 872
- Scott, Winfield, I, 314
- Searles, Moses, I, 273
- Seaver, Everett H., II, 217
- Seco, Arroyo, I, 87
- Second Dragoons, Fort Tejon, I, 72
- Sellers, Edgar E., II, 263
- Sentous, Louis, Jr., II, 103
- Sepulveda, Andronico E., I, 365
- Sepulveda, Diego, I, 160
- Sepulveda, Fernando, I, 189
- Sepulveda, Ignacio, I, 364; sketch of, 365
- Sepulveda, Jose Andras, I, 60, 74
- Sepulveda, Jose Diego, III, 936
- Sepulveda, Maria F., III, 936
- Sepulveda, Ygnacio, I, 77, 85
- Sepulveda family, I, 58
- Serra, Fray Junipero, arrives at San Diego Bay (July 1, 1769), I, 10; death of, 15; names San Francisco, 203, 226, 228, 265, 383
- Serrano, Jose, I, 190
- Seventh Day Adventists, I, 316
- Severance, T. E., I, 315
- Sewer system established, I, 291
- Seyler, Charles, Jr., II, 111
- Seyler, Charles, Sr., II, 111
- Shatto, Clara R., I, 373
- Shawn, Ted, III, 861
- Shenk, John W., III, 788
- Sherer, Albert J., III, 606
- Sherer, Edward T., II, 401
- Sherman, M. H., I, 138
- Sherman, Moses H., III, 649
- Shiels, Albert, I, 255; II, 273
- Shinn, Charles H., I, 58
- Shirley, Ira W., II, 382
- Shirley, Nellie B., II, 383
- Shoestring Strip annexed to the City (1909), I, 142
- Shontz, Orfa J., III, 691
- Shorb Ranch, I, 89
- Shore, John W., I, 364
- Shore, William, I, 311
- Shore, William H., I, 309, 310
- Shoults, Tracy E., III, 927
- Shoup, Paul, III, 562
- Shubrick, W. Branford, I, 179
- Sims, C., I, 309
- Simpson, Frank, III, 795
- Sinclair, John, III, 568
- Sinclair, Martha R., III, 568
- Sirova, Jose Francisco, I, 148
- Sisters of Charity, I, 100
- Sisters of Mercy, III, 623
- Sixth Judicial Circuit of the Mexican Republic, I, 334
- Slauson, Jonathan S., I, 80, 245
- Slauson, Sarah R., III, 819
- Sloan-Oreutt, Leafe, I, 375
- Slusher, Margaret F., II, 146
- Smallman, John, I, 379
- Smallpox epidemics, I, 106, 289
- Smith, A. J., I, 163
- Smith, Clarence F., III, 584
- Smith, George H., I, 344
- Smith, Harry B., III, 937
- Smith, Jedediah S., I, 63, 65
- Smith, Laura G., I, 238
- Smith, Oscar C., II, 355
- Smith, Speneer H., III, 726
- Smith, Thomas H., I, 345
- Smith, W. J. A., I, 315
- Smith-Hughes Act, I, 247, 253, 259
- Smithers, A. C., I, 315
- Smurr, Charles R., II, 427
- Snooks, Joseph, I, 70
- Snyder, Edward R., II, 158
- Snyder, Meredith P., II, 394
- Social life: Hospitality of old Californians, I, 46; old Californians temperate, 51; filial reverence, 54; customs of women in olden times, 55; entertainments of the '50s, 79; the "Fandango," 98; horse racing, 166; marriages between Catholics and Protestants, 303
- Soler, Pablo, I, 267
- Solomon, Fred H., III, 595
- Somera, Angel, I, 14
- Sonoratown, I, 94
- South Park, I, 373
- South Pasadena, a sheep pasture in 1875, I, 89
- Southern Branch of the State University, I, 263
- Southern California, worst rain in (1859), I, 102; its sheep industry devastated, 118; its "Big Boom," 125; described by Charles Dudley Warner as "Our Italy," 135; benefits of its climate to invalids, 268-71
- Southern California Edison Company, II, 256
- Southern California Gas Company, II, 319

- Southern California Power Company, I, 396
- Southern California products exhibit, I, 391
- Southern District Agricultural Society, I, 111
- Southern Pacific Railroad, status of, in 1875, I, 80; extension of (1872), 112; San Fernando tunnel of, completed (1876), 118; through service inaugurated (1887), 132; adjusts rates favoring Los Angeles (1910-12), 140
- Southwest Society of the Archaeological Institute of America, I, 140
- Southwestern University, II, 366
- Spanish-American War I, 139
- Spellaey, Timothy, II, 88
- Spence, E. F., I, 91, 116
- Spence, E. M., I, 365
- Spencer, Charles H., III, 627
- Spill, William A., II, 403
- Spires, Joseph H., II, 340
- Spires, Mary H., II, 341
- Springer, Isaac, III, 562
- Sproul, Joseph P., III, 564
- Stage and freight lines, I, 184
- Stagg, Raymond M., II, 71
- Standard Oil Company, I, 212
- Stanford, Leland, I, 113
- Stanley, Mme. Coman, III, 678
- Stanton, Edwin M., I, 342
- Stanton, Philip A., II, 112
- Stearns, Abel, I, 70, 74; sketch of, 66, 101, 151, 152; his sumptuous home ("Palace of Don Abel Stearns"), 154, 183, 189, 193, 196, 200, 241, 361
- Steckel, George, III, 876
- Steindorff, Paul, I, 379
- Stephens, William D., III, 710
- Stern, Jacob, III, 528
- Stern Realty Company, III, 528
- Stevenson, Jonathan D., I, 163; leaves for San Francisco, 167; investigates land grants in military district (1847), 343
- Stevenson, Matthew R., I, 163
- Stevenson, Walter R., III, 544
- Stockton, Robert F. (Commodore), arrives at San Pedro, I, 155; takes possession of Los Angeles and declares California U. S. Territory, 156; sketch of, 167, 179
- Stockton, William M., I, 190
- Stockton fire of 1851, I, 73
- Stone, Duke, II, 242
- Stoneman, G., I, 89
- Story, Walter P., III, 630
- Strassberger, Carl C., III, 557
- Street car lines: First in Los Angeles (1874), I, 90, 114; first cable and electric (1884-85), 123; consolidation of various systems (1888-91), 132; electric interurban car system of Los Angeles, 138; development of Huntington interurban electric systems, 140
- Strode, C. B., I, 362
- Strong, Frank R., III, 608
- Strother, William M., II, 285
- Strover, William, II, 344
- Stump, J. H., I, 319
- St. Athanasius (St. Paul's) Church, I, 311, 319
- St. Charles Hotel, I, 82
- St. Denis, Ruth, III, 861
- St. Joseph's Catholic Parish, II, 97
- St. Luke's Parish, I, 311
- St. Paul's Church, I, 311
- St. Thomas The Apostle Church, II, 149
- St. Vincent's College, II, 183
- Sullivan, Anna C., II, 42
- Sullivan, Dennis, II, 42
- Sullivan, John E., III, 444
- Summerfield, John W., III, 499
- Summerland, Estelle, III, 811
- Summerland, Theodore, III, 810
- Sumner, Edwin V., I, 104
- Sunny Slope, I, 191
- Superintendents of schools; changes in modes of selection, 1853-81, I, 245
- Superior Court (Mexican system), I, 336
- Supreme Court of California draws distinction between pueblos and American municipalities, I, 339
- Supreme Court of the United States: On difficulty of locating Mexican land grants, I, 341
- Sutherland, Byron C., III, 644
- Sutherland, Thomas W., I, 364
- Sycamore Grove, I, 373
- Taft, Frederick H., II, 253
- Taft, Stephen H., II, 251
- Talbot, J. J., I, 319; pitiful victim of drink, 320
- Talmadge, Margaret, III, 744
- Tatlow, Joseph B., II, 429
- Tatum, C. C. C., II, 306
- Tatum, Frank D., III, 613
- Taylor, Frank W., III, 569
- Taylor, June R., II, 168
- Taylor, Minnie C., III, 569
- Taylor, Nelson, I, 163
- Tebbetts, Francis W., III, 696
- Tebbetts, Hiram W., III, 695
- Telegraphic communication between Los Angeles and San Francisco (1860), I, 104
- Temple Block, I, 80, 193
- Temple estate, I, 95

- Temple, Francis P. F., I, 365; III, 917
- Temple, Jonathan, III, 916
- Temple, John, I, 37, 71, 74, 152, 182, 183, 187, 189
- Temple, John H., III, 919
- Temple, T. P. F., I, 91
- Temple & Workman bank, failure of (1875), I, 90, 91, 117
- Teschemaker, H. F., I, 71
- Teter, Harry E., II, 127
- Thalhammer, Karl W., II, 334
- "The Higher Christian Life," by W. E. Boardman, I, 319
- Thee, E. J., III, 725
- Thom, Cameron E., I, 86, 365, 366
- Thom Block, I, 86
- Thomas, Theodore, I, 379
- Thompson, Ira F., II, 406
- Thomson, David M., II, 135
- Thorne, Edwin C., II, 241
- Thornton, Harry, I, 366
- Thornton, Tom C., II, 191
- Thorpe, Helena B., II, 67
- Thorpe, Spencer R., II, 66
- Tibbetts, L. C., I, 113
- Tidings, The, II, 222
- Times building dynamited, with great loss of life (October 1, 1910), I, 142
- Titecomb, H. B., II, 54
- Titus Ranch (Dew Drop), I, 89
- Tivoli, San Francisco, I, 386
- Toberman, Charles E., II, 409
- Toland, Thomas O., III, 910
- Toll, Charles H., II, 148
- Tomlinson, J. J., I, 184
- Tompkins, P. W., I, 362
- Tonner, P. C., I, 243
- Tononi, Isabel R., 331
- Tononi, Giacomo, II, 331
- Toplitzky, Joseph, III, 886
- Torres, Francisco, I, 360
- Townsend, James R., III, 503
- Trafford, John, I, 365
- Treble Clef Club, I, 379
- Turner, George H., III, 763
- Turner, Joel, I, 109
- Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, I, 167, 342
- "Two Years Before the Mast," by Richard Henry Dana (1835), I, 205
- Union Oil Company, I, 212
- United States Hotel, I, 83
- Universal City, III, 791
- University of Southern California (see also Methodist College), I, 118
- Upham & Rea, I, 82
- Urban Military School, III, 629
- Valdez, Antonio, I, 69
- Valdez, Lucian, I, 238
- Valdez family, I, 189
- Valentine, Louis H., II, 419
- Valentine, William L., II, 165
- Vance, Arlyn T., III, 813
- Vance, Champ S., III, 612
- Vance, Jessica S., II, 199
- Van de Kamp, Theodore J., II, 348
- Vaneegas, Jose, first mayor of Los Angeles, I, 30, 34, 147, 148
- Van Loan, Charles E., III, 697
- Van Nuys, I. N., I, 89, 109, 118
- Vasquez, Tiburcio, noted bandit, I, 113; hanged, 114
- Veitch, Arthur L., II, 214
- Vejar, Ricardo, I, 74, 189
- Verdugo, Jose Maria, I, 148
- Verdugo, Manuel, I, 301
- Victoria, Emanuel, I, 42, 151
- Vignes, Louis, first orange planter of Los Angeles, I, 70, 175, 189, 190
- Vilavicencio, Antonio (Felix), I, 30
- Viseano, Sebastian, I, 204
- Vocational training, I, 259, 260, 261
- Volunteer Fire Company organized (1873), I, 113
- Vordermark, John F., II, 188
- Vosburg, Kate, III, 819
- Wade, Charles J., II, 227
- Wade, Franklin S., II, 228
- Wagner, Charles D., II, 413
- Walker, George W., II, 121
- Walker, Mrs. Horatio, Jr., III, 626
- Walker, Lillian, III, 929
- Wallace, Albert J., II, 246
- Wallace, Ernest L., II, 337
- Walton, Charles S., I, 379
- War Industries Board, Chamber of Commerce, I, 396
- Warde, Frederick, I, 384
- Warde, Marion, III, 637
- Warner, Charles D., I, 135
- Warner, J. J., I, 62, 65
- Washburn, Bryant, III, 870
- Washburn, Franklin B., III, 870
- Washburn, W. J., I, 245
- Water supply: Irrigating and domestic (1854), I, 97; first distributing "system" in Los Angeles (1865), 107; first iron pipes laid and city "water works" leased (1868), 108; irrigation system reconstructed by American alcalde, 165; first waterway in Mission Valley, 226; predicament of Los Angeles in 1905, 228; Fred Eaton suggests Owens River as source of, 229
- Waterman, J. M., II, 243
- Waters, Arthur J., II, 25
- Waters, Frank A., III, 714
- Waters, Russell J., II, 22
- Watson, Harry W., III, 551

- Watson, James A., I, 362; sketch of, 363  
 Watson, Joseph E., III, 725  
 Watson, Mabel, III, 902  
 Watson, Samuel H., III, 549  
 Weaver, Sylvester L., III, 573  
 Weber, Lois, III, 883  
 Weeks, Henry, I, 242  
 Weik, Fred G., III, 635  
 Weil, Julius B., III, 565  
 Welch, William, I, 37  
 Weller, Dana R., II, 417  
 Wells, Arthur G., II, 259  
 Wells, A. J., I, 320  
 Wells, Fargo & Company, I, 97  
 West Sixth Street highway of trade (1868), I, 109  
 Westlake Military School, II, 344  
 Westlake Park, I, 107, 373  
 Westlake School for Girls, The, II, 198  
 Wetherby, F. Bruce, III, 621  
 Wharton, L. R., II, 418  
 Wheeler, Alfred, I, 366  
 Wheeler, Fred C., II, 387  
 Wheeler, J. O., I, 284  
 Wheeler & Johnson, I, 199, 200  
 Wheeler & Morgan, I, 185  
 Whitaker, Melville T., II, 105  
 White, A. F., I, 320  
 White, Charles H., III, 736  
 White, F. A., I, 310  
 White, Stephen M., sketch of, I, 116, 358  
 White, T. J., I, 281, 311  
 White, Thomas P., II, 268  
 Whitley, H. J., III, 814  
 Wickersham, Frederick A., II, 237  
 Widney, Erwin W., II, 65  
 Widney, J. P., I, 62, 268  
 Widney, R. M., I, 90, 364  
 Wiggin, Kate Douglas, I, 246  
 Wiggins, Frank, Secretary Chamber of Commerce, I, 391; II, 71  
 Wilbur, Elizabeth A., III, 467  
 Wildey, Otto G., III, 620  
 Wilhart, Louis, I, 190  
 Willard, Charles, I, 407  
 Willard, Raymond H., III, 458  
 Willebrandt, Mabel W., II, 78  
 Williams, Blanche, III, 804  
 Williams, Camillus J., II, 303  
 Williams, Charles N., III, 599  
 Williams, G. Edwin, II, 407  
 Williams, Isaac, I, 65, 74  
 Williams, Philip, II, 133  
 Williams, Warren L., II, 281  
 Williams-Diamond Line, I, 212  
 Wills, J. T., I, 320  
 Wilmington (New San Pedro), I, 101; as whalers' fitting-out post, 106, 111, 112, 208; Federal and railroad improvements at, 209  
 Wilson, Benjamin D., I, 64, 89, 154, 183, 185, 310, 319, 360, 364; II, 389  
 Wilson, Emmett H., I, 245  
 Wilson, George J., II, 222  
 Wilson, Grace, III, 778  
 Wilson, John K., III, 707  
 Wilson and Packard, I, 184  
 Wine of the country "delicious," I, 175  
 Winnett, P. G., III, 603  
 Winsel, Charles F. J., III, 651  
 Winston, James B., I, 281  
 Winston home, I, 89  
 Wireless telegraph communication established (1911), I, 143  
 Witherby, Oliver S., I, 364  
 Wolfelt, C. H., II, 247  
 Wolfskill, John, I, 74  
 Wolfskill, John R., III, 851  
 Wolfskill, William, I, 63, 70, 71, 74, 189, 193; III, 849  
 Wood, Carolyne, III, 838  
 Woode, Piche, III, 852  
 Woodford, Asa W., III, 638  
 Woodford, Gregory S., III, 640  
 Woodley, Frank E., II, 298  
 Woods, D. W., II, 339  
 Woods, James, I, 310, 318  
 Woodward, Agnes, III, 539  
 Wool boom of 1871-72, I, 112  
 Woolacott, A. H., II, 329  
 Woolwine, Clare, III, 790  
 Woolwine, Thomas L., III, 708  
 Workman, Boyle, II, 8  
 Workman, William, I, 64, 154, 189; III, 921  
 Workman, William H., I, 83, 135, 372, 400; II, 3  
 Workman, William H., Jr., II, 137  
 Works, Lewis R., II, 335  
 World War, public school work in, I, 255-258  
 Wright, Gilbert S., II, 40  
 Wyatt, W. T., I, 386  
 Yarnall, George S., II, 199  
 Yarnell, B. F., III, 696  
 Yarnell, Esther, II, 409  
 Yarnell, Jesse, II, 408  
 Yarnell, Laura A. G., III, 696  
 Yarrow (old "Cuarto Ojos" or Four Eyes), I, 197  
 Yorba, Bernardo, I, 74, 189  
 Yorba, Jose Antonio, I, 165  
 Yorba, Teodosio, I, 189  
 York, M. Jessie, III, 739  
 York, Waldo M., III, 740  
 Youle, William E., II, 47  
 Young, Clara Kimball, III, 830

## INDEX

xxix

Young, Edward R., III, 443  
Young, Ewing, I, 63, 65  
Young, John D., I, 365  
Youngworth, Leo V., II, 288  
Yutahs, uprisings of, I, 71

Zanja Madre (mother ditch), I, 97  
Zanjas (open ditches), I, 97  
Zoellner, Helena S., III, 829  
Zoellner Quartet, III, 828



# Los Angeles

## From the Mountains to the Sea

---

### CHAPTER I

#### AS IT WAS IN THE BEGINNING

It would seem that Los Angeles has been a habitation of man as long as any other place on the earth has been a dwelling place for human beings. After the envelope of water in which the earth was originally enclosed had evaporated and dry land appeared, and the animal kingdom came into existence, it seems as likely as not that man appeared in the place where Los Angeles is now quite as early as he appeared anywhere else.

This, of course, is mere theory, but as far as that is concerned, all the rest of it is nothing more than theory.

Remains of prehistoric beasts like the saber-toothed tiger have been found in the asphaltum beds of Los Angeles showing inclusively the existence of life here at a time that must have been contemporaneous with life in other parts of the world at the dawn of the world.

We have, however, no record of human existence here until the first white men came to California and that was a long time ago, too, as far as history is reckoned in America. It was only fifty years after the discovery of America by Columbus that California was discovered. This was in the year 1542, when Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, a Portuguese sailor, voyaging in Spanish ships and under the flag of Spain, sailed up from Natividad in Old Mexico and steered the prows of his daring little fleet of galleons into the harbor of San Diego.

And since now Los Angeles has come to be in many ways

the first city of California—being certainly the first city as far as population is concerned—and since California, although one of the states of the Union only, is at the same time a distinct and separate country of itself, made so by the fact that it has a distinct entity geographically, climatically and in a thousand other ways, it is essential in telling the story of Los Angeles to begin by telling briefly the greater story of California itself. For it helps to make a story not only easier to understand, but vastly more interesting, if we shall begin at the beginning as every good story must do.

Now, when Cabrillo and the first white men found California, nearly 500 years ago—and that's a long, long time—they found the country inhabited by a native race of Indians who had villages of their own up and down the coast and far back in the mountains, and where they lived in separate clans and families. The Spaniards called these villages "rancherias."

The whole race may be regarded as having been like one tribe because they were exactly alike everywhere in appearance and in their mode of living. But there was one very strange thing about them, and this was that when separated at distances of sometimes not more than twenty miles apart, they spoke an entirely different language, the one from the other. For instance, the natives at San Diego were not able to converse in words with the Indians at San Juan Capistrano, nor were the Indians at San Juan Capistrano able to converse with the Indians of San Gabriel. And so it went throughout all California from one end of it to the other. There were Indians on Santa Catalina and other islands off the coast, but when brought to the mainland they did not understand one word that other Indians spoke. It has been stated on authority that more than two-thirds of all the Indian languages spoken within the present borders of the United States were found in California.

The California Indian differed in many other ways from the other Indians of America. The admiration universally accorded the great Algonquin family on the Atlantic seaboard and to the great war-like tribes of the western plains, does not seem to have had serious application here. The California Indian was not much of a man to admire. He was lazy, stu-





NATURE NEAR SAN GABRIEL BEFORE MAN APPEARED

pid and exceedingly careless of his morals. He did not take trouble to build for himself any kind of shelter worthy of the name of a house, and, consequently, he was a man who had no conception of the meaning of home. He toiled not, neither did he spin. He was without modesty, he had no traditions; neither knowing nor caring from whence he had come nor whither he might drift.

But perhaps we can consistently make excuses for him. Why should he go to the wholly unnecessary trouble to work when everything that he needed had been furnished to his hand by Nature's bounty? His country teemed with wild game and with wild fruits and honey. If he were hungry he had but to reach out his hand for endless food of almost every description that was everywhere around him. And why should he take also the unnecessary trouble to clothe himself when there were always places where the sun shone warm and he could be comfortable without clothing? In other words, California was an Indian paradise as it is now a paradise on earth for the white man.

Cabrillo, the Discoverer, was the first white man to visit Los Angeles. After he had spent a happy six days in San Diego and was loath to leave it as everybody is, even to this day, he felt, evidently, that he must be on his way to do the work that was cut out for him, and so he sailed into the harbor of San Pedro, which is now a part of the City of Los Angeles. This was on the 28th day of September in the year of our Lord 1542, almost exactly 377 years before the day that these words were written for this book.

It is fascinating to know what impression the harbor of Los Angeles made on the first white man who ever saw it, if we are to depend on the historic records, and in order to know what that impression was, we can do nothing better than to turn back to the Log Book of old Juan Rodriguez and read what was there written at the time. This is what it says:

“The Thursday following they proceeded about six leagues, [This was after they had left San Diego] by a coast running northwest and discovered a port enclosed and very good, to which they gave the name of San Miguel. [This was the Bay of San Pedro.] It is in  $34 \frac{1}{3}$  degrees, and after an-

choring in it they went on shore. It had people, three of whom remained and all others fled. To these they gave some presents, and they said by signs that in the interior had passed people like the Spaniards. They manifested much fear.

“This same day at night they went on shore from the ships to fish with a net; and it appears that there were here some Indians, and they began to discharge arrows and wounded three men.

“The next day in the morning they entered further within the port, which is large, with a boat and brought out two boys who understood nothing but signs; and they gave them both shirts and immediately sent them away.

“And in the following day in the morning there came to the ship three large Indians; and by signs they said that there were travelling in the interior, men like us, with beards, and clothed and armed like those of the ships, and they made signs that they carried cross bows and swords, and made gestures with the right arm as if they were throwing lances, and went running in a posture as if riding on horseback, and made signs that they killed many of the native Indians and that for this they were afraid. This people are well-disposed and advanced; they go covered with the skins of animals. Being in this boat there passed a very great tempest; but on account of the port's being good they suffered nothing. It was a violent storm from the southwest. This is the first storm which they have experienced. They were in this port until the following Tuesday.

“The following Tuesday on the third day of the month of October, they departed from this port of San Miguel; and Wednesday and Thursday and Friday, they proceeded on their course about eighteen leagues, fifty-four miles along the coast, on which they saw many valleys, and level ground and many large smokes, and, in the interior, Sierras. They were at dusk near some islands which are about seven leagues from the main land; and because the wind was becalmed they could not reach them this night.

“Saturday, the seventh day of the month of October, they arrived at the island at day break which they named San Salvador [San Clemente], La Vittoria [Santa Catalina]; and

they anchored off one of them and they went with the boat on shore to see if there were people there; and as the boat came near, there issued a great quantity of Indians from among the bushes and grass, yelling and dancing and making signs that they should come ashore. And they saw that the women were running away; and from the boats they made signs that they should have no fear; and immediately they assumed confidence and laid on the ground their bows and arrows, and they launched a canoe in the water which held eight or ten Indians and they came to the ships. They gave them beads and little presents, with which they were delighted and they presently went away. The Spaiards afterwards went ashore and were very secure, they and the Indian women and all, where an old Indian made signs to them that on the main land, men were journeying clothed and with beards like the Spaniards. They were in this island only until noon.

“The following Sunday on the eighth of the said month, they came near the main land in a great bay which they named La Bahia de Los Fumos [Santa Monica Bay] on account of the numerous smokes which they saw upon it, where they held intercourse with some Indians whom they took in a canoe, who made signs that towards the north there were Spaniards like them. This bay is in 35 degrees; and it is a good port; and the country is good with many valleys and plains and trees.”

There is one thing more than another, perhaps, that will strike the reader of Cabrillo's Log in these centuries so long after it was written, and that is to wonder who these white men could have been that were here before Cabrillo. The most popular theory is that the Indians in the interior of the country, probably as far inland as Arizona and New Mexico, and who saw Coronado and his expedition in that part of the world two years before Cabrillo's discovery of California, passed the word along across the Colorado and over the mountains and the deserts to the Indians here on the coast, that they had seen white men.

There isn't the slightest probability, however, that the Indians here ever themselves saw white men until they saw the people of Cabrillo's daring enterprise. And following the

theory up, it is easy to suppose that word would have come over vast distances among the Indian tribes concerning the appearance of Coronado and his men in the interior. It is true that there were no newspapers in those days and no telegraph lines, not to speak of the wireless telegraph, there were no aeroplanes or telephones or any other modern vehicle for the swift and even instantaneous conveyance of news, but it is astonishing how rapidly news traveled in those times, just the same, among the Indian peoples.

The same is true among them to this day. Let a man appear for any special reason among the Indians of Soboba, and the next day, or in two or three days at most, his presence will become known in some magic way among all the Indian peoples of the reservations of Southern California. Even will it be known among the lonely huts of Laguna in the far silences of the Cuyamacas.

And certainly this wonderful old swash-buckling explorer Francisco Vasquez Coronado must have made a vivid impression on the primitive mind of the territory that he covered. When he set out from Old Mexico in 1540, he had with him 200 mounted lancers in armor and 1,000 mounted horsemen in all, which was a very respectable force to be assembled under similar circumstances in any age of the world. The commander himself and his officers and their mounts were gorgeous with gay trappings. They had golden swords and silken banners; their advance was heralded with a blare of trumpets.

It was to find the famous fabled seven golden cities of Cibola that Coronado and his men had set out from Mexico. It seems assured that they traveled as far north as the center of our present State of Kansas, and that they came over into New Mexico, where they found that the much-vaunted seven cities of gold were nothing more than the pueblos of the Zuñis, and after all they found their quest to be a failure. There is no doubt that the country was considerably stirred up by this wonderful pageant that passed through it, and was not long until every aborigine within a radius of 1,000 miles and more had been told the news of it.

All this record of history and recital of tradition is here

recalled only for what it may be worth, and mainly for the reason to fix in the reader's mind the established fact that the real discoverer of California was Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, and that to him and to him alone the credit belongs.

Another thing that impresses one in reading Cabrillo's Log, is that he mentions the fact that here were many trees in this part of the world in the early times. Southern California is so invariably referred to by writers as a "treeless land" that the impression has gone abroad that it was always a treeless land. But we see from the absolutely reliable report of Cabrillo that it was a land of many trees, indeed, when the white men first saw it. It is difficult to imagine that the country around San Pedro and Point Loma at San Diego were once covered with dense forests, but such is undoubtedly the fact, and the task before the people of Southern California now is to restore these forests, especially on the mountain slopes. For, if they shall fail to do this, all that they have builded through a century past—their cities and towns, their farms, their orchards—are at the mercy of flood and storm that may some day bury them as deep under the mud and sands of oblivion as Babylon was buried.

The one last thing concerning Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo that fascinates the mind now is that it seems to have been ordained by Providence that he should never leave the bright new land which he was the first of all the civilized men of the earth to see. When doubling back from Cape Mendocino to which he had sailed, in order that he might seek again the shelter of the Santa Barbara channel, the great admiral fell sick of a fever and died. His sailors buried him on the sunny little isle of San Miguel, where still he sleeps reckless of wind and wave and tide—the immortal Portuguese who was first to find the land of heart's desire.

Cabrillo's expedition continued north again after his death, probably sailing as far as the present southern line of Oregon. But it then returned to Old Mexico without having achieved anything more than to have proclaimed to the world the actual existence of the long-dreamed of and storied land of endless summers. But this was surely achievement enough. Sixty years passed before white men came again to California,

and again they came merely to explore the coast and to return, and it was not until 227 years after the discovery had passed that any attempt was made to settle and to colonize the country.

And it was 239 years after the discovery of California that Los Angeles, now one of the wonder cities of the world, was founded.

This brings us to another story—one of the greatest of all the stories ever told—the story of how the white man's religion and civilization were brought to a heathen land and there rooted never to wither or die. It is a story which enfolds in its wondrous glamour Los Angeles and all the country that lies on either side of it between the mountains and the sea.

The fateful year of 1769 must remain forever immortal in the annals of California. It was the year in which California began, when civilization was planted upon its shores, when the cross of Christianity, symbol of the Religion of Redemption, was reared in its sunny valleys and upon its shining mountain tops. And it is also then that we first hear of the renowned and venerable Fray Junipero Serra, the great Franciscan who laid the corner stones of our commonwealth and by whose hands was erected the fabric of our Empire of the Sun. There can never be anything written or anything said that has to do with California and its glamorous history without the inclusion of the name of this most remarkable and wonderful man.

Spain waited a long time indeed—more than two centuries and a quarter—to take full advantage of its wonderful possessions on the western shores of Northern America. But it is plain, for all that, that Spain never held lightly in its estimation California's worth. It is perhaps only because the throne of Castile and Leon was so tremendously engaged with the stupendous task of exploiting the new half of the earth that had fallen into its hands that it waited so long to colonize California, which, as we now know, was the brightest jewel in its crown. But, however it may be, the fact remains that it was not until full 227 years had passed that the Spanish king decided to add California to the civilized possessions of the world.

It is a long story if we were to tell all that led up to the expedition of 1769 which brought Fray Junipero Serra and his brown-robed Franciscan companions to the shores of the Bay of San Diego, where they arrived on the first day of July of that forever memorable year. Suffice it to say that the intent and purpose of this expedition was to accomplish at one stroke the Christianization of the native Indians and to colonize California as a Spanish province.

The plan that Spain had in mind was a three-fold plan, namely, that missions should be established in which the natives were to be instructed and trained in the Christian re-



TYPICAL OLD SPANISH MISSION

ligion and taught to do a white man's work; second, that presidios or garrisons were to be established throughout the length of California in order not only that the missions might be under military protection but also that the country itself might be in a condition to repel probable foreign invasion, and third, that pueblos were to be founded in favorable places so that an urban population might be established to co-operate with the vast agricultural interests planned.

It was a wise and far-sighted plan in every way, and it was carried out to a great extent, especially as regarded the missions. The agricultural scheme also made wide progress.



The only feature of the three-fold plan that materialized unimportantly was the scheme of the pueblos. All told, only three of these pueblos were ever founded, as follows: one at Branciforte, which was founded where the present City of Santa Cruz stands. Not a trace of Branciforte remains. Another pueblo was founded and named San Jose in honor of Saint Joseph, the patron saint of California. It still exists and flourishes as the present beautiful and important city of San Jose in the white-blossomed valley of Santa Clara. The third and last of the pueblos—the one that at first was the least hopeful and that remained the longest the most squalid, the least promising of all—was our present great City of Los Angeles.

Los Angeles was therefore a pre-ordained city. It is not a city that just happened. It was founded by order of the king with both military and religious pomp with the swinging of censors and the burning of incense and the stately music of the *Te Deum*.

And they named it in the music of Castilian speech “*El Pueblo La Senora de la Reina Los Angeles.*” It means the “*City of Our Lady, the Queen of the Angels.*”

## CHAPTER II

### THE MOTHER OF LOS ANGELES

It is to be reasonably supposed that in the same way and from the same desire that a man would like to know everything possible concerning his own mother, a city that had a mother would also wish to be informed concerning her. Well, the mother of Los Angeles was San Gabriel. And now, at the outset of the story of Los Angeles, let us see what there is to know about that romantic and ancient habitation from which Los Angeles sprang and came into being.

It is not improbable that before many years have passed Los Angeles will come to mean all the territory lying between the mountains and the sea on either side of the center of the city for many miles of distances. And this, of course, will bring old San Gabriel into the fold. So, in telling the story of San Gabriel, we are really telling a part—the first and in many ways the most important part—of the story of Los Angeles itself. And we are further justified by the fact that it is a tale that reads like fiction and is stranger than fiction, as the truth often is.

In order to ascertain how San Gabriel came to be, we must go back again to that great Franciscan enterprise of which Fray Junipero Serra was the soul, because this it was that set things going here at the start and that has left an influence upon the country that time has been futile to obliterate. Nor is it probable that time will ever be able to obliterate Fray Junipero's spirit. And this is well, for happy is that land which has a definite ideal.

When Father Serra left Mexico to establish the white man's Christianity and civilization in California, his instructions were to found and erect three mission establishments. The first was to be at San Diego, the second at Monterey, and the third at a place between to be called San Buena Ventura.

It is to be supposed, of course, that after these three missions were established, others would be built. Anyway, it turned out that way. Serra and the expedition with which he came, and which was under the command and direction of the great Don Gaspar de Portola, California's first governor and immortal as the discoverer of San Francisco Bay, the greatest of all the world's harbors, reached San Diego, as before mentioned, in July, 1769, and it was on the sixteenth day of that month in that year that the mission of San Diego was founded and the roof of the first white man's habitation on the western shores of America erected.

As soon as this had been done, Serra went to Monterey, and in the following year, 1770, he founded there the mission of San Carlos, which he made his headquarters and which remained as such during his lifetime. In the same year he founded at his own initiative the mission of San Antonio de Padua, seventy-five miles east of Monterey, where its exquisitely beautiful ruins are still to be seen by the traveler who has the wisdom to turn aside from the beaten tracks of traffic and travel.

The mission of San Bueno Ventura, which was to have been the third mission, had to wait a long time to come into existence. Fray Junipero was by this time aflame with enthusiasm, and his restless energies blazed forth upon the entire length of California. He seemed to have had a desire to build missions as if by magic, and was impatient to bring the native Indians into the Christian fold and to teach their hands to know the glory and the joy of work. So he dispatched orders to San Diego to the mission fathers and the soldiers of the garrisons there to set out without further delay to found the fourth mission in that mighty chain which ultimately stretched 700 miles along the golden vistas of the King's Highway between San Diego and Sonoma.

The founding of a Franciscan mission in California was a notable event in those old days that are passed away now forever, and each foundation was distinguished, as it happens, by extraordinary incidents which come down to us now golden with the glamour of romance. And it may be said that of all the twenty-one missions which the Franciscans founded in

California between 1769 and 1823, the events which attended the founding of San Gabriel are perhaps the most dramatic of any.

The fathers at San Diego who were assigned to found this first mission were Padres Benitos Cambon and Angel Somera. Fired with the same zeal that inspired their great leader, Junipero, these two brown-robed priests were eager for the new conquest which they were about to achieve, but it appears that they had a difficult time to get an expedition in shape. It was only after the most urgent pleadings that the military authorities consented to let them have ten soldiers as an escort. They were also able at last to get together the necessary supplies and pack animals and to bring with them a few of the Christianized Indians who had been brought up from Mexico.

It was upon August 6, 1771, that the expedition left San Diego, and after traveling forty-six leagues they came to the place that had been selected for the site of the new mission.

As we look backward now in imagination we can picture with what fascinated interest these wonderful pioneers must have made the journey from San Diego to the place which was to be known ever afterward as San Gabriel. They passed by the wonder of the sunset sea with its white shore of glory, through the live oak groves of the mountain passes, up and down the brown sunlit hills, across the shimmering waters of the Santa Margarita and other dimpled streams; camping at night under the canopy of the soft summer stars.

One night they camped on the banks of the Santa Ana, which Father Crespi, who had made the same journey with Portola two years before, had called the River of the Temblores, because of the earthquake shocks that they had experienced there. The Indians they met on the way were friendly and hospitable and were profuse in their invitations for the travelers to remain with them. But the expedition pushed forward until it at length arrived at the sought-for spot on a beautiful hill above a river, now in these modern times a wilderness of oil derricks.

It seemed that the conquest was to be a happy and a most peaceful one, but just as the padres and the other members

of the expedition were congratulating themselves upon this belief, they were suddenly horrified to behold the approach of a great horde of savages armed with bows and arrows bearing down upon them with wild cries, bent upon no other purpose than to annihilate the strangers. Never was tragedy more imminent than at that moment. It was apparent that only the intercession of the hand of Providence could save the missionaries and their companions. And it seems that Providence did intervene. At least, we may accept what happened as supernatural or else decline to accept any other event attributed in history or tradition to the intervention of the Divine Power.

And what happened was this: When the missionary fathers saw that great, wild, savage mob of bloodthirsty creatures bearing down upon them, they unfurled to the winds a banner on which was painted an image of Mary, the mother of Christ. The effect was magical, if not miraculous. The savages instantly halted and, gazing in awe upon the holy image, they threw down their bows and arrows, fell upon their knees, and in deepest contrition made signs to the padres that they desired to submit themselves to them.

And so, after all, the mission of San Gabriel was founded in peace and safety. The date was September 8, 1771. This original mission, it is well to state, was not erected on the site of the present mission of San Gabriel familiar now to us all and famous the world over. The original site was about two miles distant and was abandoned five years after its foundation for the present location on account of the disastrous floods of the river.

We have a vivid picture of the original foundation of the mission of San Gabriel from the pen of Fray Francisco Palou, the great first-source of all reliable information concerning the beginning of things in California.

Palou was the intimate friend and the beloved companion of Fray Junipero Serra, and when the grand old founder of our civilization gave up the ghost and was laid in his quiet grave beside Juan Crespi in beautiful Carmel, Palou for a time served as Serra's successor in the office of father president of the missions. He then retired to the mother house of the

Franciscan order in Mexico, the college of San Fernando, and there devoted the remaining years of his useful life to writing not only the history of the Franciscan missionary enterprise in California, but also writing a life and biography of Father Junipero. Both of these works, the first commonly known as the "Noticias" and the second as the "Vida," are not only invaluable as authentic records and chronicles, but are exquisite also as literary classics.

And this is the account of the founding of the first mission of Gabriel the Arcangel as written by Francisco Palou:

"The Fathers who were going to establish the mission of "



MISSION SAN GABRIEL

San Gabriel arrived at the Rio de Los Temblores, they examined its banks, it did not suit them, they went onward to the valley of San Miguel and near the river of this name, not very far from its source, seemed to them more suitable for the mission, thus they determined to found it on a hill extending from said valley, at the foot of which ran good ditches of water with which they could irrigate the fine lands distant from the river about one half a league. The said ditches were wooded with cotton woods, willows and other trees and much bramble and innumerable wild vines. About a league from

the said place there is a great wood of oaks with many ditches of running water.

“Appreciating all these points they commenced the foundation of the eighth day of September of the said year of 1771, day of the birth of our Lady, they were raising the holy cross, standard of our redemption, on a little bower which for the present served for a church that celebrated the first mass giving a beginning to this mission dedicated to the archangel, San Gabriel.”

The first few years of the existence of the new mission of San Gabriel were filled with trials and difficulties. The fathers met with discouragements sufficient to have dismayed men of any other caliber. And it was all because of the disreputable Catalonian soldiers who had been assigned to act as the military guardians of the place. These soldiers were unspeakably immoral, and the outrages they committed against the Indian women were so frequent and of such a foul nature as to have aroused the bitterest hatred in the hearts of the natives.

The most notorious incident was the case of a soldier taking the wife of an Indian chief. When the chief resented the indignity, the soldiers killed him, cut his head off, and stuck it on a pole in front of the mission gates. It was only by the exercise of almost miraculous power that the missionaries were able to keep the Indians in hand when this incident occurred. All through the history of the missions we find that the greatest obstacles which the fathers had to surmount was the immoral example of the Spanish soldiers.

And that the mission fathers succeeded despite all this is evidenced not alone by the fact that they finally brought the whole race of California Indians into the fold of the faith, but it is also well illustrated by many specific and eloquent instances. One of these instances concerns the great Fray Junipero himself.

It is related that one time he came up from San Juan Capistrano, when that mission was being builded, to secure provisions and cattle for it from San Gabriel, which had then come to be a flourishing establishment. Only one soldier and one of the San Gabriel Indians accompanied Father Junipero.

On the way the three were attacked by a band of painted, hostile savages armed with bows and poisoned arrows. When the faithful San Gabriel Indian saw the danger and realized that Father Junipero would undoubtedly be killed if something were not quickly done in his defense, he cried out to the savages that a great company of soldiers was following and was near at hand, and that if they did not turn and flee at once the soldiers would kill them. The stratagem worked like a charm. But what it proves more than anything else is that the Indians, when Christianized, loved the padres and were devoted to them, and that they were also able to discriminate between the goodness of the missionary fathers and the wickedness of the soldiers.

After the first few difficult years, however, San Gabriel flourished amazingly and finally came to be quite the greatest of all the missions. Indeed it was called the "Queen of the Missions." Thousands and thousands of Indian neophytes were housed and taught within its great walls. It became famous for its grapes and wines, and it had an orange grove and beautiful gardens and great pastures for the almost countless herds and flocks of the field; and there came even a time when a ship was builded there. They went back into the mountain canyon, cut down great trees, hewed them into planks and brought them to the mission where they framed the vessel, and they then carried it in pieces to the harbor of San Pedro and launched it there.

Los Angeles is a city builded on a desert, and wherever there is an instance of this kind in history, we find, of course, that the great problem to contend with as population increased was a water supply both for domestic and irrigation purposes, and as we go back through the dusty pages of history, we discover that it was from San Gabriel, the mother of Los Angeles, that Los Angeles learned all that it has ever known down to this day concerning water supply. Even now, after a century and a half of time has passed away, the remains of the great aqueduct at San Gabriel are still to be seen, the ditches that were builded with such sturdy masonry still refusing to crumble.

What wonderful men they were, these first Franciscan



pioneers of California! They were engineers and craftsmen of the first order. They knew all the trades that civilized men of their time knew, and the work they taught the Indians to perform was of such an enduring character that the rain and sun of 150 years of neglect and decay have been futile to break it down. The strongest dynamite was necessary to break the old irrigation ditches and head-gates that still remain at San Gabriel.

There are a lot of things of which we boast as new in our modern California which are really old. And in this regard we might mention our manual arts schools and our normal schools. Every mission was a manual arts school—great industrial schools in which the natives were taught to be skilled in more than half a hundred trades. When we look upon the great manual training schools of modern Los Angeles, it is interesting to know that there was a manual training school in San Gabriel a century and a half ago. And when we regard with satisfaction, as we should, the great normal schools of the state, it will help us the more to admire those who went before us in the distant past, to know that they did also these same things and did them as well as we are doing them now and under incomparably more difficult circumstances. There was a normal school in the old times at San Gabriel mission to which were sent young Indian men from all the surrounding country to be trained as school teachers for their people.

Long before Los Angeles was dreamed of, San Gabriel was an important place. Besides, it was a happy place, filled with peace and plenty, joyous with the day's work and holy with the voice of prayer. On the great feast days, when the population gave itself over to recreation and enjoyment, the old plaza of San Gabriel, a great sunlit quadrangle now pitifully narrowed and shut in, was the scene of many notable celebrations.

In addition to the busy yet happy life that it led within itself in its own bright little world, San Gabriel was a hospice in the land. It was there that the travelers up and down the King's Highway stopped for shelter and for food. And there came to its great oaken doors also—the great doors that

swung ever inward with welcome for whosoever might come—the caravans that toiled their way on the inland trails up from Sonora to the capital at Monterey. And in the days of the Argonauts, when the plains and the deserts were filled with gold-seekers on their way to sudden and unparalleled fortune, San Gabriel was the wayside inn that sheltered many a weary head. There never was a price to pay, and it did not matter who the man might be or what his creed or nation, he was welcome to shelter and food and rest at San Gabriel though he had not a penny in his pocket.

San Gabriel was also the half-way house in that empire which the Spanish king had flung from the heart of Mexico up across the hills and valleys to the Bay of San Francisco. In short, before ever a stake was driven in the chaparral where Los Angeles stands today, San Gabriel built its mile posts on the high-roads of civilization. Its bells, that still ring the music of the Angelus across the great green valley and up to the echoing hills, were ringing in their gray watch towers long before the Liberty Bell in Philadelphia rang its fateful message across the world.

For almost three-quarters of a century San Gabriel thrived and prospered. Then came the day of its doom. And the way of it was this:

When nearly fifty years of time had passed after the foundation of the first Franciscan mission at San Diego by Fray Junipero Serra, and when these great establishments had grown strong and rich through the labor of the Indians and the marvelous management of the padres, the politicians in civil life and the camp-followers of kings came to look with greedy eyes upon all this wealth which had been acquired solely for the betterment, the prosperity and happiness of the Indians.

As to the missionary fathers, the Franciscans, the mere material wealth of the missions had no appeal to them whatever. The Franciscan friar is wedded to poverty. He can own no more than the rough brown robe on his back and the sandals on his feet. So, when the missions were confiscated by the civil power, it was not the friars who were robbed, because how can you rob a man of something that he does not

have? It was the Indians who were despoiled; and it is a bitter, black story.

In the year 1813 the Spanish Cortes promulgated a decree which set forth that the Indian missions in California be "secularized." This was a polite way of saying that they should be seized and confiscated.

Now, this move of secularization would have been dishonest under any circumstances, but it was doubly so in view of the fact that it was not the Spanish Government or the Republic of Mexico that furnished one penny of the money through which the Franciscans were enabled to begin and carry on the work of the missions with such marvelous success. The money was contributed by private persons in Spain and Old Mexico, and the fund which was thus accumulated came to be known as the "Pious Fund" for the reason, it is to be supposed, that it was money contributed by pious individuals eager for the spread of the gospel and the glory of the church.

This fact, however, was airily and very brazenly ignored by the Spanish Cortes, and the decree declared that the Franciscan friars should be put out of the mission and their places taken by secular clergy, which is to say by priests who did not belong to either the Franciscan order or any of the other orders of the church. It was declared that the missions should be converted into parishes, and that it was time for the Indian to stand alone and to throw off the friars' gentle yoke.

The idea was a fearfully mistaken one, and any disinterested person would not have hesitated to say that its results would prove tragically disastrous. The Indian had not reached that stature where he could stand alone. It was true that he had learned to do a white man's work, that he could sing and say his prayers and play upon musical instruments, paint pictures and carve on wood and speak the Spanish tongue, and that he could read and write. But he was still a child, no more fit to stand alone than a child would be, and the events which ensued after secularization really took place amply proves the truth of these statements.

Happily, however, the decree of the Spanish Cortes in 1813

was never actually carried out, and San Gabriel and all the other missions up and down the sunny stretches of El Camino Real went on, happy and prosperous, oblivious to the impending doom.

Came then a time when Mexico threw off the yoke of Spain and took its place among the free republics of the world. California, that was always before a Spanish territory, then became a territory of Mexico. And the lazy, shiftless politicians of both Mexico and California, whose numbers were countless, seeing the great mission establishments with bursting granaries and countless herds and flocks, with orchards and vineyards, richer with every passing year, be-thought themselves of this old decree of the Spanish Cortes, and immediately they took pains to have it actually carried into effect.

In the year 1830 the territorial deputation in California, which was a sort of a local legislature, adopted a plan of legislation through which, under cover of civil authority, the old scheme of 1813 could be realized with many additional advantages to the confiscators. Three years afterward, in 1833, the Mexican Congress passed an act putting the wheels of confiscation in actual motion. It was ordered that the Government should seize the missions. But, as though to make a show of justice, glittering assurances were given the church that it should be well cared for out of the spoils. It is needless to say that these promises were never kept. The typical Mexican politician was a shifty man who did not allow a promise made to haunt him or to keep him awake at night.

And so the dirty deed was done. The brown-robed priests that had come to the desolation of a wilderness, giving up their beautiful lives for the sake of God's most wretched creatures, and who, through infinite patience and sacrifice and toil had taught the Indian to labor and to pray and to make the desert blossom as the rose, were driven forth like dogs from the stately arches and the great rafters which they had reared. And the Indian, suddenly deprived of the padres' fatherly care, went back to the hills, dazed and helpless, to starve and to die.

The missions, one after the other, were auctioned off by

their despoilers, each one for a song to whoever had the voice to sing, and among them was San Gabriel, queen of them all—the mother of Los Angeles. And so, with no one to do the work that was to be done, no hand at the plow, no herder for the flocks, no one to garner the grain or the fruit of the fig tree and the vine, a silence lonelier by far than death fell upon the gray mission tower and over all its far-flung walls and fields. The old joyous life that once was there, the music, the song and laughter, the ring of the anvil and whir of the loom, departed never to return.

But it was before the day of doom—and long before it—that San Gabriel became the mother of Los Angeles. On a sunny morning in the year 1781 the Gobernador came down from Monterey with a troop of cavalry to San Gabriel, and the next day he rode out with his horsemen and the neophytes and the padres and the pobladores. They marched three leagues eastward toward the sea and the setting sun. And they came to a place which is now the old plaza of Los Angeles, but where there was then not even the footprints of a man. And they reared a cross, fired volleys of musketry, sang the *Te Deum* and read to the multitude the proclamation of Carlos III, King of Aragon and Castile, Emperor of the Indies and Master of half the world, wherein it was decreed that there on that spot a city should be laid and that they should fashion its name in honor of the Mother of God.

## CHAPTER III

### THE FOUNDING OF THE PUEBLO

Wherever a city in America or elsewhere can identify its founder, it never fails to do so with feeling of pride. We suppose the sentiment is the same that influences an individual to trace back his family history to an original ancestor. Los Angeles, of course, is no exception to this rule, and it enjoys the good fortune of knowing well who its founder was and what manner of man he was.

Taking him by and large he was a fairly good man, too, and in some ways he was also a great man. He had his faults, it is true, but all men, great or small, also have had their faults, and it is not to be expected that there will ever be a man without some weakness or other of character so long as human nature remains as it is and we are clothed in the weakness of flesh and blood.

The name of the founder of Los Angeles was Felipe de Neve, and he was the third governor of California. There have been a great many governors of California from the first one down to the present time, and it is with no small degree of satisfaction that we find Don Felipe de Neve holding his own among them in history as an executive of consequence and of parts. Wherefore, our city of wonder may look back to its flesh and blood ancestor with some smugness of content, and certainly with little or nothing of which to be ashamed.

The great seal of the City of Los Angeles—one of the most artistic and beautiful of all municipal seals—relates in its colorful heraldry that the city has passed, so far, under the dominion of four flags. It was first a city of a province of Spain; then a city of a territory of the Republic of Mexico; again, after a very brief but thrilling and immortal period, a city of the Republic of California, popularly known as the

“Bear Flag Republic”; and it is now, as it shall doubtless remain until the end of all time, a city of the United States of America.

There were, in all, ten Spanish governors of California, beginning with Don Gaspar de Portola, who came in command of the expedition of 1769 that brought Fray Junipero and his brown-robed Franciscan companions to found the white man’s civilization and Christianity on these sunset shores, and to colonize California for Spain. Among these Spanish governors there was none unworthy of attention and a lasting place in history, and there were at least three among them who stand out as extraordinary persons. And we think it is safe to say that Don Felipe de Neve, the founder of Los Angeles, was one of these three.

Felipe de Neve was, first of all and essentially, a soldier. But, as the case has sometimes been with other soldiers, he had also the making of a statesman in him had his career turned early to civil instead of military administrations. When he received his appointment as governor of California from the Spanish viceroy in Mexico, de Neve was a cavalry officer at Queretaro. He arrived at Monterey, the capital, in February, 1777, and found conditions in the province far from being satisfactory from any point of view whatever. The great trouble with everything had its source in the bad feeling which existed between the missionaries and the military authorities. Each was extremely jealous of prerogatives. Looking back at it now, however, in the calm and unprejudiced view of history, it seems clear enough that the friars were the ones who could most justly feel aggrieved. They were engaged in this superhuman task of lifting the native Indian out of heathen darkness into the light of Christianity and to teach him at the same time to abandon his ancient traditions of idleness and shiftlessness, and to bend his back to toil.

The missionaries in their stupendous trial needed and should have been accorded every possible help, assistance and sympathy from everybody around them. But, instead of receiving this sympathy and assistance from the military authorities and the soldiers of the garrisons, they received, instead, rebuffs at every turn that was made, and every con-

ceivable and unwarranted obstacle that could be imagined was spitefully and even viciously thrown in their path. The friars complained unceasingly to the viceroy in Mexico, and even got word to the king himself in Spain of their difficulties, but it does not seem to have availed them much.

Now, when Felipe de Neve came to Monterey and found these to be the conditions, he did what seems to us to have been a move in the right direction, and one that only a man of right impulses and good heart would make, which was, namely, to at once make the most friendly advances to Fray Junipero, the father president of the missions. And we are glad to find that Fray Junipero met these advances in the spirit in which they were made, and that ever afterward while de Neve continued as governor of the province, he lived at peace with the friars except for two or three incidents that perhaps neither side could be blamed for.

We find, further, that during his term of office as governor of the province, Don Felipe composed and caused to be promulgated in the year 1779 a code of laws for California which stand today as the work of a real statesman. This code was called the "Reglamento," and it made provision, among other things, for the manner in which California should be colonized; laying down laws for not only the establishment but also for the government of towns; outlining the procedure that should promote stock-raising and agriculture and the progress of the industries; and it also contained a very precise and exhaustive regulation for the various procedures and conduct of the troops occupying the province.

De Neve was governor of California during a period between October, 1774, and September, 1782. Upon his retirement from office the king bestowed a high decoration upon him and promoted him to be inspector general of all the military establishments of new Spain north of Sonora in Mexico, and including New Mexico, Texas and California. He made his headquarters at Chihuahua with the rank of general. He died in Chihuahua toward the end of the year 1784.

As far as Los Angeles is concerned, however, we take it that it will continue to regard its own foundation as the greatest achievement of the life of Don Felipe de Neve. And this



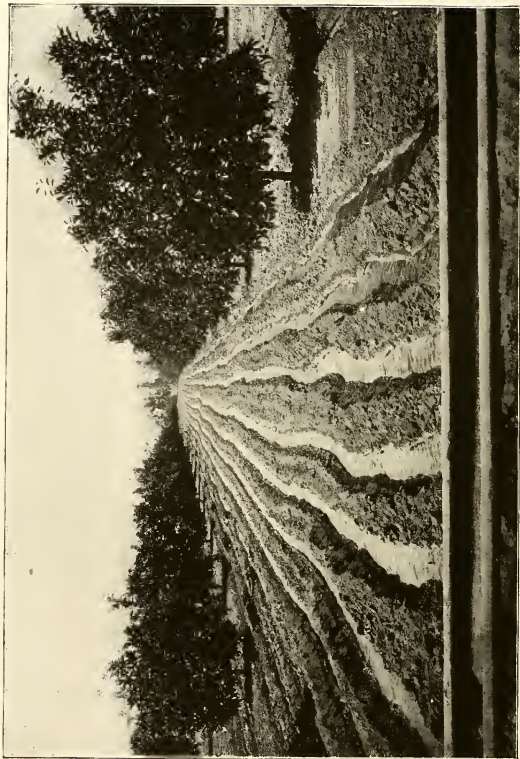
brings us to that memorable and fateful event. We find that the governor was at the Mission San Gabriel, the mother of Los Angeles, in August, 1781, having journeyed from Monterey, the capital, with an escort of troopers and the necessary entourage. And it was while enjoying the hospitality of the padres at the mission that he formulated there in some now long lost room of that once vast establishment the way in which the new city was to be founded and the laws and rules by which it should be guided and governed. It is so intensely interesting to know the manner in which Don Felipe went about the great work he had in hand that we are sure we should make a somewhat exhaustive record of it here.

First of all, we find from the governor's instructions for the founding of Los Angeles (the paper bearing date of August 26, 1781, at San Gabriel), that after selecting a spot for a dam and a ditch by which the land was to be irrigated, the next step was to choose a site for the town, which was to be on high ground commanding a view of the farm lands, but, at the same time, some distance from the river; the houses to be exposed to the north and south winds.

It seems that Don Felipe was very much concerned about the winds at the place where the new city was to be. He evidently thought that the people might be distressed by them. But we know now, of course, that his fears were groundless. Los Angeles is remarkably free from wind storms, and it is only on a day now and then throughout the whole year that they are noticeable at all.

There was to be a plaza, which was afterwards duly laid out, its four corners to face the cardinal points of the compass, the streets running from each of the four sides of the square. Thus, said Don Felipe, "no street would be swept by the winds," always supposing that the winds would confine their action to the cardinal points, but I think the Los Angeles winds have not always been obedient in this respect.

Now we see that the plan that the governor had for the new city was a very good plan in that day. Indeed, it would be a very good plan today or in any day for a new town anywhere. The square, or plaza as the Spaniards called it, is a fine focus from which to survey a town. So, Felipe de Neve



IRRIGATING AN ORANGE GROVE BY PRESENT-DAY GROWERS

made a good beginning in surveying his new city by beginning with an open square.

Abutting on the square he laid out house lots, each one about 60 by 120 feet in size, and the number of these town lots was to be more than double the number of people who were to compose the first population. The eastern side of the plaza was set aside for public buildings. The first settlers were to draw lots, and did do so, for choice of the farming lands, which was fair enough, as everybody must admit.

We come now to a very important record in the history of Los Angeles, namely, the list of its first inhabitants. As we have already learned, Los Angeles was what might be called a "come-a-long" town, that is to say, it was first laid out in streets and residential spots and then the people were called to come and occupy it.

Everybody living today in our wonder city must have some time or other asked himself who were the first families of Los Angeles? Who were the first "Four Hundred," as one might say. Fortunately, we have their names, their standing in life, the racial blood that was in their veins, and, by a very slight exercise of the imagination, we can picture what kind of people they must have been socially, and what strata they occupied in human society.

It is probably to be feared that a lineal descendant of any of the first residents of Los Angeles living today, if such there be, will not be found boastful of his antecedents. Maybe, in all the essentials and fundamentals of life, these first settlers were the best of men and the best of women; they may have been honest though poor, and eager to make their way in the world by the performance of honorable deeds, but they were not of aristocratic birth, and a descendant of theirs would find small reason for vanity in the fact that his ancestry was so constituted.

There is one thing about them, however, which cannot fail to impress the mind of whoever digs into the musty cellars of the past and thumbs the dim pages of history, and this is that the Los Angeles of today is a city composed of people in whose veins course the blood of all the races of the earth;

and the same thing is to be said of the first inhabitants. Therefore, the original settlers of the city may be said to have been prophetic of the day that was to be when the little pueblo should have sprung out of its squalor and obscurity to take its place among the great cities of the earth.

The historic first families of Los Angeles were twelve in number, mustering among them in all, counting men, women and children, forty-six human beings. The blood of the four great races was in their veins—red men, black men, yellow men and white men. Can the most exacting cosmopolite ask more?

Moreover, who so dull of curiosity that he would not like to know the very names of the heads of these twelve first families? Are they not now immortal, although in their day and time they walked humbly on the earth unhonored and unsung and quite unknown? Is it not something far beyond the ordinary to have been the first man to live in a place where now every man in the world longs to live? Indeed, yes. Wherefore, let us set down the names. They were as follows:

Josede Lara, Spaniard, 50 years of age, wife Indian, 3 children; Jose Antonio Navarro, mestizo, 42 years, wife mulattress, 3 children; Basilio Rosas, Indian, 68 years, wife mulattress, 6 children; Antonio Mesa, negro, 38 years, wife a mulattress, 2 children; Antonio (Felix) Vilavicencio, Spaniard, 30 years, wife Indian; Jose Vanegas, Indian, 28 years, wife Indian, 1 child; Alejandro Rosas, Indian, 19 years, wife coyote (Indian); Pablo Rodriguez, Indian, 25 years, wife Indian, 1 child; Mamuel Camero, mulatto, 30 years, wife mulattress; Luis Quintero, negro, 55 years, wife mulattress, 5 children; Jose Moreno, mulatto, 22 years, wife mulattress; Antonio Miranda, chino, 50 years, 1 child.

In this list there would seem to be satisfaction for everybody. We have now a large negro population in Los Angeles, and it is a class that has done its share to build the city. It must be a matter of pride, therefore, to members of the negro race, that they were represented among the first families of Los Angeles. The same may be said of the Chinese of our present population, although historians dispute among themselves as to whether Antonio Miranda, who was listed as a

“chino,” was a Chinaman. The great Bancroft, who would be infallible if it were not that he also made errors, declares that Miranda was not a Chinaman. And maybe he wasn't, but we like to think that he was, because it is desirable that the great Mongolian race should have had its hand in starting Los Angeles, as well as a hand in pushing it along after it was started.

Reading between the lines of original documents, we somehow get the impression that these first twelve families were, in a way, conscripted. But, even at that, it would seem that they had no real grounds for complaint against fate. The government made very generous provisions for them, indeed. They were equipped, without expense to themselves, to prosecute the work of life. Each family received a subsidy of \$10 per month for a period of three years, and in addition a ration of one meal per day for ten years. They had a town residence and each family a farm, the water ditched to the farms and doorways that faced the morning sun. What more could a reasonable man ask in those days, or in these days, either?

And yet they were not all satisfied. Then, as now, there were men upon whom favor might be heaped without stint, and yet they will grumble. The very next year after the pueblo was founded three of the families were drummed out of town because they were useless to their neighbors and to themselves. Don Felipe de Neve was so indignant he had their property taken away from them and ordered them dismissed from the community.

It appears that Don Felipe, the governor, spent about ten days as the guest of the padres at San Gabriel, after he had come down from Monterey, before he was ready to fare forth with his troopers to carry out the orders of the king and found the new city of destiny. But all was in readiness at last and on the fourth day of September in the year of our Lord 1781, the reveille of trumpets sounded at sunrise in the old mission that morning, reverberating among the far-flung adobe walls and arousing the sleeping community into action. The day of fate had dawned.

It must have been a sight to remember that morning in the old plaza of San Gabriel as the governor mounted his steed and the winds set the gay plumage of his hat dancing. And

when his feet were in the stirrups, and the troopers in their leather jackets, with sword and lance and shield, fell in behind him, and the padres in their brown robes and sandals, and the Christian Indians and the new settlers, and all were lined in a great procession, it must have been a stirring scene. It is a pity that there was no painter there to limn the picture; that the day did not have its Homer to write the epic.

There is no human soul breathing the breath of life today that saw Don Felipe de Neve and his cavalcade march out through the great arches of the mission of San Gabriel the Arcangel to found a new city.

Forth they fared along the dusty stretches of El Camino Real that led from San Gabriel and was lost in the green chaparral of the Ventura hills—trudging steadily forward until they had covered perhaps four leagues of distance before a halt was made and the gobernador dismounted and unsheathed his sword and stuck its point into the soft warm ground, saying: “Here in the name of God and our Sovereign King we will found the Pueblo of our Lady the Queen of the Angels.”

It was the site of the ancient Indian village of Yank-na. The waters of the fountain in the plaza of Los Angeles leap and sparkle today quite upon that very spot. It will be the better marked, perhaps, some day, when the people shall erect there a heroic statue of old Don Felipe to proclaim his deeds.

No doubt the governor made a speech upon the occasion. We cannot imagine that any governor, ancient or modern, would permit so fair an opportunity for oratory to pass without taking advantage of it. And it is to be regretted that we have not a stenographer’s report of what the governor said. It might prove a good model for the speeches of California governors in general; and certainly it would be of great interest after nearly a century and a half of time has passed.

A cross was reared under the blue September skies; the bright blue silken banner of our Lady of the Angels rustled softly in the gentle breeze; the Te Deum was sung; the soldiers fired three volleys of musketry; and one more city took its place among the cities of the world to work out its own destiny and to meet what fate might be in store for it.

## CHAPTER IV

### THE FIRST UNCERTAIN STEPS

We have seen that the City of Los Angeles began its earthly career on a bright September morning of the year 1781. We are now to follow it in its first uncertain steps when, like other infants, it was learning to walk. We have seen, also, that the original population, provided by conscription, was not composed of persons who might be called peculiarly desirable. However, they had at least one virtue, which was that they were "stayers." All but three or four of them settled down in their new habitations and appear to have been ordinarily industrious. They built adobe houses in which to live, and inclosed the pueblo in an adobe wall. Either this was done to repel human invasions or to keep out jack rabbits and coyotes. It is difficult now to decide, but it is probable that they built the wall mainly for the reason that it was the fashion to do so in those times.

In the year 1790, nine years after the foundation of the city, a census was made, the details of which cannot fail to be of interest to the present day resident of Los Angeles, when Don Felipe de Neve's little "come-along" town is pushing its population toward the million mark and confident of making it many times more as the rushing years go on.

The census of the year 1790 showed that the total population of Los Angeles consisted of exactly 141 souls. As to sex, there were 65 males and 66 females. Forty-four were married and 91 unmarried, and there were six of them widowed. Forty-seven were under 7 years of age, 33 under 16 years, 12 under 29 years, 27 under 40 years, 13 under 90 years, and 9 over 90 years. There was one who was put down as having come vaguely from somewhere in Europe. Seventy-two were Spaniards, 7 Indians, 22 mulattoes and 39

whose racial blood was a mixture of Spanish, Indian and negro.

It must be admitted that this was an exceedingly slow growth for a new town to make in nine years, but the fact is that for many times nine years Los Angeles was very slow to grow. In 1890, 100 years after the first census was taken, the population had reached only 50,000. It was about that time, however, that Los Angeles really began to jump. The place didn't have a very good name at the beginning, or for a long time afterward. For years and years it was nothing more than a dirty, squalid little village whose people had a bad reputation throughout the whole province.

And it seems that the reputation they had was by no means a calumny on them. The men were nearly all ex-soldiers, and the soldiers of Spain and Mexico sent to California in those times were usually the products of prison pens, and they were sent here really in penal servitude. It will do no harm to admit the unpleasant truth of this fact now, when Los Angeles has come to be not only one of the largest cities of America, but also one of the most law-abiding and best-behaved.

In the early days the population included so many disreputable characters that it was even difficult to find a good man to serve in the office of mayor. José Vanegas, the first mayor, or "alcalde" as he was called, appears to have made such a poor fist of his job that Governor Fages felt impelled to put a boss over him and over the magistrate of the pueblo as well. This village dictator is a man whom we should remember gratefully and with pride. His name was Vincente Felix, and the first we hear of him is in his capacity as the corporal of the guard at the presidio of San Diego.

Governor Fages called Corporal Felix up to Los Angeles to be a sort of city commissioner with a free hand, apparently, to run things as he thought they should be run, and especially to see that the mayor maintained good order, justice, and morality; that the magistrate should hold the scales of justice with an even hand; that the settlers performed all the duties required of them, while being deprived of none of their privileges, and also that the native Indians be treated fairly and



with respect to the dignity of life. And the thing to remember about Corporal Vicente Felix is that he saw to it that all these instructions were faithfully fulfilled. Los Angeles was a better town during the time that he ruled over it, and all the records go to show that he was honest and fearless and just. And it is a pleasure to make this record of him here—to recall the name of a good man out of the mists of time; a good man who did the work that was cut out for him.

The historians tell us, and a search of the record bears them out in what they say, that very little is known concerning Los Angeles between the years 1790 and 1800. Perhaps it was an era of dull times when there was little doing anywhere between San Diego's harbor of the sun and Sonoma's valley of the seven moons. But there is sufficient information at hand to show that while the pueblo was not going ahead by leaps and bounds, it still was by no means slipping back. The population had increased from 141 to 315. Not much of an increase, it is true, but the fine thing about it is that it came about through the birth rate and not by any invasion from without. No town that has a pride in growing children is without hope, and everything points to the fact that Los Angeles took a special pride in having children then, the same as now. Also, the number of horses and cattle had increased from 3,000 to 12,500, and there was a plentiful crop of grain.

The pueblo offered to supply the market with over 3,000 bushels of wheat in the year 1800 at the price of \$1.66 per bushel. It was about this time also that the fortunes of some Los Angeles families were created by means of land grants, which Governor Fages made. The great holdings of the Verdugos were created at that time as well as the Los Nietos holdings, and also the famous Dominguez ranch. There were also several other grants which became famous and remain so to this day.

1131982

We learn, too, that there was some little excitement in the pueblo about that time, caused by the cutting off of the water supply by the padres of San Gabriel Mission. Just how this could be it is difficult to figure out, but the old records make mention of it. Certainly Los Angeles was not dependent on San Gabriel for its water supply, but it may be that

the padres had something to say about water wherever water was.

There is another thing that crops up among the scant records of the year 1800 and the decade following it which may be regarded as a coincidence. It was that Los Angeles was then, as now, highly favored as a health resort. Invalids from various places in the province came here then for the benefit of their health. There were so many of them, indeed, that Governor Arrillaga was impelled to say that "If it were not for the invalids, Los Angeles would not amount to anything."

But every night has its star, and every town, no matter how squalid it may be, has its saint. The saint of Los Angeles in those times was a girl named Apolinaria Lorenzana. She spent her life in tending the sick, teaching the children and luring from the squalid pathways of sin the wayward and erring. Her's is another name that should not be forgotten, and it is again a pleasure to us to set down here even so slight a record of her good deeds.

It seems a strange thing that Los Angeles should have remained without a church for a period of thirty-three years after its foundation. The population was wholly composed of Roman Catholics and of a race of people who, wherever we find them organizing settlements and communities, built a church for themselves almost before they did anything else. That Los Angeles should have proved an exception to this rule would appear at first glance to be extraordinary. The explanation, however, is doubtless that the people of the pueblo were well aware that, even if they had a church, they would not be able to procure ministers to attend it. They were short of priests at San Gabriel, where the little handful of padres had more than they were able to do in the mission without taking the responsibility of Los Angeles on their shoulders. So, the way it was, if anyone in Los Angeles felt the need of attending divine service, the only thing he could do would be to saddle his horse or hitch up his ox cart and make the pilgrimage to San Gabriel. And this the people did with more or less persistence for thirty-three long years before they had a church of their own.

At last, on the fifteenth day of August, the feast of the Assumption, in the year 1814, the cornerstone of the Plaza Church, still standing as the first house of divine worship in Los Angeles, was laid. But for four years more that was all that was done—the laying of the cornerstone. The people appealed again to the authorities to give them a church. Many of the king's veterans were spending their declining years in the pueblo, and they protested that it was unjust to them that they should be deprived of the consolation of religion. Then the citizens of the town showed their good will by subscribing 500 head of cattle, the proceeds of the sale of which they offered to devote to a fund to help build the church. The padres at San Gabriel gave seven barrels of brandy worth \$575 to the fund, which fact may cause some surprise in these times. But we are to learn that things were different in the days of which we speak. There was no prejudice against brandy in this part of the world 100 years ago. Anyway, in 1821, seven years after the cornerstone of the Plaza Church was laid, its walls had been builded as high as its window arches, and in one way and another the church was finally completed. The architect was Jose Antonio Ramirez, and the church was builded by Indians from San Gabriel and San Luis Rey, who received twenty-five cents each per day for their labor. The pueblo also had a village school then and the people paid the schoolmaster \$140 a year salary.

Still following the first uncertain steps of the Pueblo of Los Angeles, we are a little surprised to find that fifty years after it was founded it still had a population of only one thousand souls, and that fully three hundred and fifty of these were Indians. There were also some Portuguese who were always regarded as foreigners. And besides—more interesting to us than other items—there were in this neighborhood in that time, of the Anglo Saxon race the following named persons: Joseph Chapman, W. A. Richardson, Joseph V. Lawrence, Isaac Galbraith, William Welch, J. Bowman, J. B. Leandry, John Temple, George Rice, William Fisher, Jessie Ferguson, John Haley, John Davis, Richard Laughlin, Fred Roland, and Louis Bauchet, every name of which has a familiar ring in the life of the Los Angeles of today.

And yet the town had not acquired a very good name, for we find Father Payeres saying then that "if the citizens of Los Angeles would give their attention to other productions of industry than wine and brandy, it would be better for both the province and the pueblo." Also we learn from the dusty old records of the time that the citizens of the town publicly declared they would not recognize any military authority; that Jose Antonio Carrillo was holding the office of mayor illegally; that a certain citizen was prosecuted for "habitual rape;" that the secretary of the town council, Francisco Morales, was removed from office for incompetency. Permit us also to quote from the police regulations of Los Angeles for the year 1827, the following:

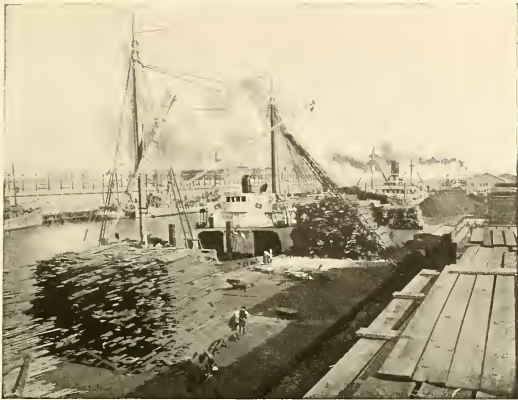
"All offenders against the Roman Apostolic religion will be punished with the utmost severity. Failing to enter church, entering disrespectfully, lounging at the church door, standing at the corners or remaining on horseback when processions were out, will be punished, first with fines, and then with imprisonment. Purchasing articles of servants, idleness and vagrancy, swindling, gambling, prostitution, scandalous assemblages, obscenity, and blasphemy, also riding at speed in the streets at unusual hours or without lawful cause, will be dealt with according to law."

Mayor Carrillo added to the excitement of the time by accusing the president of the town council with smuggling.

The total city revenues, as shown by the record of municipal receipts for the year 1827, were \$859, and the expenditures \$763, thus leaving a small but important balance in favor of the city.

One might not think it, but it is a fact that there was considerable maritime activity in these parts 100 years ago. The harbor of San Pedro is regarded today as a new harbor which the enterprise of recent peoples caused to be made into a port. But the truth is that San Pedro was always more or less of a harbor, and there were many worse. We have related in this book the fact that one Juan Rodriguez Carrillo, the discoverer of California, sailed his ships into San Pedro in 1542, and on the map he made put it down as a real harbor.

Now it was about the year 1828 that Mexico, of which



SAN PEDRO (LOS ANGELES) A "REAL HARBOR"

California was then a province, was obsessed with the fear that foreign powers were bent upon an invasion of our territory with a view to seizing it for themselves. Consequently, the Mexican government issued orders closing the "embarcaderos," as the coast ports were called, against foreign vessels, of which there appeared to have been quite a number plying in this neighborhood at that time. The order included San Pedro, and it was declared that the coast trade could be carried on only by Mexican shippers. It is interesting to note that among the foreign shippers that were effected by this order there were Russian, English, American and Hawaiian vessels. Don Jose Maria de Echeandia, then the Mexican Governor of California, was the man on whom it devolved to keep foreigners out of the province, and it must be said for him that he made a very determined effort indeed to fulfill his task. Looking back at it all in the light of the knowledge of today, this course of exclusion of foreign trade by the Mexican government was extremely stupid and ill advised. But that is neither here nor there as far as Governor Echeandia was concerned. His business was to see that the laws of his government were executed, and this he did do to the utmost extent of his ability. We must give him credit for that. A man who does his duty as he sees it must always be regarded as a good man.

From all we can learn, however, the law aimed at the exclusion of the foreign trade, like many another law enacted before it and since, not only by Mexico but by all other governments, was possible of evasion. The traders that came with silks and satins and jewels to trade them for the hides and tallow of the ranchos and the missions found it quite easy to make connections. The governor could not be at every point of the California coast, 1,000 miles long, at the same time. And with the exception of the governor there was no one here who had the slightest desire or intention of obeying the law. It was a foolish law, anyway, and perhaps the people displayed good sense in ignoring it.

Nevertheless, the foreign vessels that came to this coast then to trade, did so illegally and in reality put themselves in the class of smugglers, and this is what they were, of course.

But they seemed to enjoy it and managed to extract a great deal of profit from it. We suppose that poor old Don Jose Maria, the governor, was very much distraught by it all and constantly at his wit's ends to know what to do, but that is something that can not be helped now.

By the time that the year 1835 had rolled around and Los Angeles had been a pueblo, or town, for a space of fifty-four years, it was able to boast of a population of about 2,000. There are a number of persons who were living in Los Angeles then who are living in it still, at the time this book is being written, and when Los Angeles has a population of considerably more than a half million and ranks as the tenth city of the United States.

But in the year 1835 a California town with a population of 2,000 had as much right to boast as one of our towns now has to boast of a population of hundreds of thousands, and it seems that when Los Angeles awoke one morning from its dreams—or maybe it was one evening that it awoke, for it had a habit of sleeping a good deal in the day time, too—and possibly fearing the effect of the presence of forty resident Americans who did not sleep so much and had a way of stirring around, the pueblo became suddenly ambitious and determined to make a spurt. In a population of 2,000 there were about 600 Indians, leaving only about 1,400 white people and near white people. But we must not overlook the forty Americans. They were the ginger in the cake. Then as now, forty live Americans are sufficient to bring any dead town to life.

I somehow find myself believing that it was at the instigation of the Americans, although their movements may have been insidious, that Don Jose Maria Carrillo was induced to run for Congress—for member of the Mexican Congress, bear in mind, because California was destined to wait still another fifteen years or more before it could send men to the Congress at Washington.

This Don Jose Maria Carrillo was a very prominent man in Los Angeles at that time, and a very influential man. He also had a restless spirit. He was what is usually called a "plotter." Doubtless he had good reason for his plots, since

they were always directed against the territorial government, and there was nothing that any territorial government in California in those days needed so much as to be kicked out and another territorial government put in its place.

When Governor Echeandia was summarily deposed from office by whoever it was that was running things down in old Mexico, and the old fire-eating swashbuckles, Emanuel Victoria, sent up to take the governor's chair from Echeandia and sit in it himself, which he certainly did, Jose Maria Carrillo formed a combination with two other prominent persons hereabouts, namely, Don Pio Pico and Don Juan Bandini, and fomented a revolution to prevent Victoria from exercising the functions of the office of governor of California.

There was a lot of trouble about it and a fight which is called the "Battle of San Fernando," or something like that, and in which two men were killed and probably fifty others, who composed the membership of the armies on both sides, were badly scared. Victoria himself was wounded severely, and if it had not been for the presence of an English doctor at San Gabriel Mission, where the governor was taken after the fight was over, old Emanuel Victoria might have died from his wounds. Victoria didn't want any more of California after that. So he abdicated and got back to Mexico as fast as he could.

Thus the revolution may be said to have been successful, and Carrillo, Pico and Bandini, who were already prominent, now became famous. Carrillo, as above stated, ran for Congress and was elected. He had an elegant adobe house near the old Plaza on ground where the celebrated hotel called the Pico House was afterward erected, and we have no doubt that just before he departed for Mexico to take his seat in Congress, his American neighbors pointed out to him that he could do a great deal down there to boost Los Angeles. And it turns out that Carrillo did that very thing. I regard Jose Maria Carrillo as the original Los Angeles booster, the progenitor and the father of all the various, innumerable, immortal boosters who have followed him through the changing years down to this day.

What Carrillo did to help Los Angeles when he got to



Mexico as a member of Congress, and what he did to put all the other towns of California in the shade, so to speak, was what might be called "plenty;" for the first thing that California knew there came an order from the Government of Mexico declaring Los Angeles to be no longer a pueblo, but a first-class city. And, furthermore, it was ordered and directed that Los Angeles become henceforth the capital of California, instead of Monterey. It is not recorded that the other little sleepy pueblos of the province paid the slightest attention to the matter. San Diego, Santa Barbara, San Francisco and the mission settlements appear to have never awakened from their slumbers to pay the slightest attention to the matter. But Monterey broke out into a fury. And no wonder. From the very beginning it had been the capital. The king himself had so designated it, and from the time that Don Gaspar de Portola and Fray Juipero Serra first set foot in it, in 1769, it had been from that moment until Jose Antonio Maria Carrillo exploded this bomb, the focus and the center of all authority, civil, military and religious, as well as the shrine of fashion, art and culture in California.

Monterey made a tremendous protest against the change, and it put its protest into eloquent words which were forwarded to the government in Mexico, the language being as follows:

"Monterey has been the capital for more than seventy years; Californians and foreigners have learned to regard it as the capital; interests have been developed which should not be ignored; and a change would engender dangerous rivalries. The capital of a maritime country should be a port, and not an inland place. Monterey has a secure, well-known, and frequented port, well provided with wood, water, and provisions; where a navy yard and dock may be constructed. Monterey has a larger population than Los Angeles; the people are more moral and cultured; and the prospects for advancement are superior. Monterey has decent buildings for government uses, to build which at Los Angeles will cost \$30,000; and besides, some documents may be lost in moving the archives. Monterey has center position, mild climate, fertile soil, developed agriculture; here, women, plants, and

useful animals are very productive! Monterey is nearer the northern frontier, and therefore better fitted for defense. It would be unjust to compel the majority to go so far on government business. It would be impossible to assemble a quorum of the Legislature at Los Angeles. The sensible people, even of the south, acknowledge the advantages of Monterey. Monterey has done no wrong to be deprived of its honor, although unrepresented in Congress; while the last three deputies have had personal and selfish interests in favor of the South."

We commend a careful reading of this Monterey protest to our leaders. It is one of those vivid flashes of the past which provides us with the ability to see things as they were. To the mind of the writer it furnishes a picture invaluable for the things that it makes clear and which would otherwise be very dim or impossible entirely to the vision.

Now there was a funny thing about this first attempt to take the capital away from Monterey and bring it to Los Angeles, where it never came except for one little space of time under Pio Pico, which was altogether illegal. They finally managed to take the capital away from Monterey, and it was a very wrong thing to do, but it didn't do Los Angeles any good.

The funny thing about it was that when the Honorable Don Jose Maria Carrillo returned to his home town, the City of the Angels, after having filled his seat in the Mexican Congress, he was surprised to find that Los Angeles wasn't any more the capital of California than it had ever been. The fact was that Monterey simply declined to cease to be the capital, and served notice on Don Jose Maria Carrillo and Don Pio Pico and Don Juan Bandini and the forty Americans, the 1,400 white people and near white people, the 600 Indians and all concerned, including jack rabbits and coyotes, that if Los Angeles thought it was the capital of California it had "another think coming."

So that's all there was to it for a long time afterwards. Los Angeles regularly demanded that Monterey cease its function as the capital and Monterey as regularly, but politely and firmly, refused to do so. It seems that in due time the

matter was forgotten. Maybe everybody felt themselves to be more or less weary by the exertion, and decided it was time to take a long rest.

It was in these ways of slow growth and mild seasons, with here and there a flare in the night, and now and then a shot or two and a clank of rusty sabres, living out its sorrows and its joys, christening its new-born and burying its dead, playing as best it could at the game of Empire, and never without some kind of feast and the dance and the song and the music that went with it—it was so that Los Angeles took its first uncertain steps on the great high-road of destiny where now it towers like a young giant in shining armor.

## CHAPTER V

### LIFE IN OLD LOS ANGELES

The golden age of California was not truly "the days of old, the days of gold, the days of '49." It was long before that time, and it was like the golden age of Greece. In those old days when the land was inhabited by the people of the Spanish race, and the rulers of the land were the patriarchal owners of the great ranchos, California was the happiest country in all the world.

In those days a man could travel from San Diego to Sonoma without a penny in his pocket and never lack for food or shelter. Not only were the great open doors of the missions—which were the hospices of the land—swung ever inward with welcome, but there was the same welcome also at every other door. To the stranger who sought shelter or food the answer at the door was always the same: "Enter, friend, it is your own house."

In the diary of an American who wandered into California in the old times when Americans here were few and far between, we find the following entry, which is both eloquent and illuminating.

"Receiving so much kindness from the native Californians, I arrived at the conclusion that there was no place in the world where I could enjoy more true happiness and true friendship than among them. There were no courts, no juries, no lawyers nor any need of them. The people were honest and hospitable, and their word was as good as their bond; indeed, bonds and notes of hand were entirely unknown among the natives."

Hospitality was a religion with the people of the old Los Angeles, as it was with all the people of California before it was invaded by strangers and railroads.

As a type of the men of Los Angeles of the old times, let



Old Los Angeles Contrasted With New : PERSHING SQUARE

us take the Don Antonio Maria Lugo, whose great rancho once extended from the Mountain of the Arrowhead at San Bernardino to the Bay of Santa Monica. It is upon this great Lugo rancho that the present City of Los Angeles stands. And it is likewise upon lands that were granted to Don Antonio by the Spanish king that all the bright and vibrant cities between the mountains and the sea are standing today.

Don Antonio had been a soldier of the king. And he must have been well beloved, for the king richly rewarded him. Of course the King of Spain had plenty of land to give away; the Pope had given him one-half the earth to give away; but the fact remains that the king did not give either lands or anything else to those who did not in some way earn them. Don Antonio Maria Lugo earned his land by loyal service.

He was the most famous horseman of his day in California, and in his day California was famous for its horsemen and its horses. Everybody that was anybody had a horse. Indeed, everybody had many horses. It might be said, to put the situation clearly, that anybody that wanted a horse had nothing to do but go out and lasso one wherever he might find it. The California horse of those days was a cross between the wild native horse and the Arabian. It was indeed a most wonderful creature, and the favorite horse of a man in those times was more wonderful still.

If Los Angeles be famous now for its automobiles—and it surely is, because there are more automobiles per capita here than in any other city in the world—it was once upon a time, in the old days, equally famous for its horses.

Gen. Andres Pico, the famous brother of the illustrious Don Pio Pico, last of the Mexican governors of California, commanding a band of California horsemen, armed only with lances, defeated Gen. Steven Watts Kearney and a body of American troops at the battle of San Pasqual wholly through expert horsemanship, although the American troops were armed with firearms and supported by cannon.

So, when it is said that Don Antonio Maria Lugo was the most famous horseman of his day in California, it is saying a great deal. But it appears to be the truth. It is related of

him that he once rode from Los Angeles to Monterey to visit his sister who lived there. His sister was a very old woman and was seated upon the piazza of her house dreaming of old conquests no doubt, when a horseman was spied way in the distance cantering through the dust of the king's highway. The old lady on the piazza exclaimed, "Yonder rides my brother Don Antonio." Her sharp-eyed grandchildren who were seated with her protested that it was impossible for anyone, and particularly for an old lady whose sight was failing, to detect the identity of a horseman at that distance. But the old lady replied: "I am sure it is my brother, Don Antonio, because there is no other man in California who rides like that." And she was right. It was Don Antonio.

Well, let us get back to the subject of hospitality as it was in the Los Angeles of the old days. And let us take Don Antonio Maria Lugo as an example, as we promised to do at the beginning of this chapter. Let us suppose that Don Antonio sent word by one of his Indian servants to a friend to come and dine with him at his great ranch house a little ways beyond the boundaries of the city. The friend, of course, would gladly accept. He would not decline the invitation on any excuse, real or concocted. He had plenty of time to go, and he took the time. "Time was made for slaves," was a saying they had in those days.

On the appointed day that Don Antonio's friend was to dine, he would saddle and accouter his favorite horse, groomed to glossy silkiness by its Indian care-taker. And the saddle and the bridle, exquisitely wrought upon with silver and gold, would be worth a king's ransom. And the man himself would be splendidly arrayed. He would have a sombrero with a gold band around it and the rim of it lined with silk; a bolero jacket of green or blue or purple, gorgeously embroidered with gold or silver, his trousers of velveteen or broadcloth and slashed below the knees; beautifully ornamented shoes of deer skin; and a scarlet sash around his waist to mark his rank as a gentleman.

Faring forth to the appointed place, the honored guest would be sure to meet another horseman before he was a mile upon the road. "It seems to me," said Richard Henry Dana,

who wrote the first famous modern book on California, "that everybody I see in this country is riding a horse."

Now, these two horsemen would halt for a word of greeting at least, and when it would evolve that the first man was on his way to dine with Don Antonio, the second man, to whom this information had been conveyed, would without hesitation wheel his horse about and this is what he would say:

"So? Then I shall join you and dine also with Don Antonio."

And as they journeyed along they would meet another horseman, and another, and another, and many more, all of whom would suddenly determine to "also dine with Don Antonio."

After a pleasant journey across the ford of streams and up and down dale, the cavalcade would come at length to the great house of Don Antonio's rancho. Indian servants would flock to take the horses in charge, and then the guests—the one invited and all the others uninvited—would step with much pleasant clamour upon the wide piazza. Don Antonio himself, garbed much in the fashion of his callers, would then appear in his sunny doorway, pretending to be much surprised by the presence of the gathering. And then he would throw his great brown arms around the one guest who had been specifically invited, and he would say to him: "O, friend of mine, I know now you love me well indeed, because you have not only come yourself to dine with me, but you have brought all these other dear friends with you also."

The dinner would be waiting, the board groaning with its savory weight, and it would be a feast for heroes. Everything that the palate of the epicure could desire would be upon that table. And, since eating has been a subject of interest to all peoples in all times, as it is now and doubtless will continue to be, it will interest us to know in what manner they dined who lived and had their being in the old Los Angeles.

First, there would be broth cooked in the Spanish way with rice, vermicelli, tallarines, macaroni, punteta, which was a small dumpling of wheatened flour. And with this broth,



bread or tortillas made of corn would be served. The next course would be the puchero, which is to say the meat and vegetables. There would be a sauce of green peppers and tomatoes, onions, and parsley or garlic. There would be a sweet dessert called "dulce" and sweetmeats.

The Californians of those days were great meat eaters, and at Don Antonio's dinner—the dinner that we are taking as an example of a dinner in any gentleman's house of those times—would be many kinds of meat. They had every kind there ever was and plenty of it and to spare, not to speak of every species of wild game, all cooked as only the Spanish women of the old days knew how to cook.

It goes without saying, of course, that there would be wine at the table, and this would come from Mission San Gabriel, where the best wine was made. And after dinner there would be noggin of brandy for all, handed around every now and then as the evening wore along, and this brandy would come from the Mission San Fernando, not far away, and where the best brandy in the old days was made.

They would dine well—dine as only kings have dined. But with all that they were not gourmands, these old Californians of the old Los Angeles, nor were they drunkards. They ate, drank and were merry; they loved wine, women and song; but they were men, it is a pleasure now to say, who held themselves within decent bounds both physically and morally. One of the seven deadly sins is gluttony, and this is a sin that they did not commit. Another of the seven deadly sins is lust, and this is also a sin which they did not commit. No class of men in the world's long history honored and revered women more than did these fine old caballeros of the early days.

There would be no hurry in the disposition of that dinner. It would be eaten slowly, it would be spiced with pleasantries and good-natured railleries. And the hour would be late before the frijoles and the dulce had been finished. And we are to remember that there were always frijoles. If you dined with a gentleman of the day you would sit at his table. If you dined with poor folk, peons of the land, Christianized Indians or even "cholos," there would be no table and you would dine seated in a poor kitchen or out upon the ground.

But there would be frijoles then, just the same. There were always frijoles.

If you were to have searched the pockets of Don Antonio's guests at dinner that night, it is doubtful that you would find money in their pockets sufficient to throw at a beggar upon the roadside. In the old Los Angeles, as life was then lived, the people had little money and often none. But it was a thing they did not need. They had everything that money could buy, and when a man is situated like that he has no need for money. It might be fortunate if such were the case again, and that the condition would remain and never change, for it is true always that "the love of money is the root of all evil."

At length the hour would grow late; and the chief guest—the only guest, indeed, who had been specifically invited, but who was for all that no more welcome than any of the others—would rise and say that the time had come for himself and his companions to depart and make their ways homeward.

Then it was that Don Antonio would open the door of the great room and look out into the night, closing it again solemnly and facing his guests to say:

"Friends, the night is very dark, and worse than that, I have been hearing lately disquieting rumors of the presence of pirates landed at the harbour of San Pedro who are infesting the high-roads of the country in banditry. I could not think of permitting you, my friends, to invite the danger that lurks without upon such a night as this. You must remain where you are and do my poor house the great honor of accepting its humble shelter."

There would be no murmur against this. The guests did not fear for themselves, for they were brave men and able to give good accounts of themselves under any and all circumstances. But they were gentlemen in a gentleman's house, and it was out of the question to decline the hospitality he offered, no matter how far-reaching it might be.

So, they would remain all night in Don Antonio's house. And the next morning and all that day he would have many things of interest to show them on his vast rancho. There would be new herds of blooded cattle to inspect, new flocks of sheep, new granaries and, last but not least, a dozen or

more of new grandchildren that had come to bless the world with their grace and beauty since the last visit of Don Antonio's friends.

The day would wear away happily, as only days can be in a happy land in its golden age, and the glory of the sunset would paint the skies; and the long twilight, which in California is not twilight, but the after-glow of day, would follow, and then it would be time to dine again. And they would dine again, as sumptuously and perhaps more so than on the night before, and the night would be darker than ever, and the pirates worse than ever, and so they would stay that night and the next day and the next night and day, until the upshot of that whole business would be this: That one man who had been invited to spend a couple of hours at dinner as the guest of a friend, brought a dozen others with him and they all stayed two weeks.

"Time was made for slaves," they said. And it was made for slaves. And it is only the man who can flout time and make it serve him as it may please him, and who does not permit it to bid him come and go, to eat or drink, to sleep or wake, only as he shall himself decide—it is only this man who is not the slave of time.

Thus we are informed as to the history of dinner parties in the old Los Angeles. But we shall also desire to know how the people lived at home in their ordinary course of life. It is unnecessary to concern ourselves as to the manner in which the poor lived. The poor always lived in the same way, not only in the old Los Angeles, but in old Babylon and old Rome, and the whole world over. If a man be poor he must live as best he can. And may God help him to do so.

It is, therefore, the manner of life which the well-to-do and wealthy people of the old Los Angeles lived that it is our business to record. To begin with, there was one high thing that characterized the life of the people in the old Los Angeles. That high thing was courtesy. And it is a thing of which we are having always less and less, the more's the pity. In the old Los Angeles there was always time to be polite; there was always time to be well-mannered.

More than seventy years ago a Philadelphia Protestant

clergyman, Rev. Walter Colton, who was a chaplain in the United States Navy, visited California. He spent three years here among the people and went away with the kindest memories of them all. He kept a diary which he later published in a book, and in that book he says this:

“The courtesies characteristic of the Spanish linger in California, and seem, as you encounter them amid the least observant habits of the emigrant, like golden-tinted leaves of autumn still trembling on their stems in the rushing verdure of spring. They exhibit themselves in every phase of society and every walk of life. You encounter them in the church, at the fandango, at the bridal altar, and the hearse. They adorn youth and take from age its chilling severity. They are trifles in themselves, but they refine social intercourse and soften its alienations. They may seem to verge upon extremes, but even then they carry some sentiment with them, some sign of deference to humanity.”

Here is unimpeachable testimony concerning the people of the old Los Angeles on a most important phase of character. Mr. Colton was a stranger among the people, and his viewpoint was exactly the same as ours must be now who look back upon life in the old Los Angeles in these after-times, with that life long since passed away forever.

But for fear that we might get the impression that life as it was lived in the old Los Angeles displayed its courtesy outwardly only and to the stranger only, there is much written evidence to prove that within the privacy of the home the same high social virtue was maintained.

An English traveler named Simpson has written of the great respect and even reverence that children maintain toward their parents. “A son,” says he, “though himself the head of a family, never presumes to sit, or smoke or remain uncovered in presence of his father; nor does the daughter, whether married or unmarried, enter into too great familiarity with the mother.”

I have myself heard from the lips of very old people of these things, and they corroborate all that I had read. These old people told me that when bedtime came the children invariably knelt before the father and the mother and asked

their blessing before going to sleep. It was a beautiful custom, and its practice resulted in the growth of noble men and virtuous women. Don Pio Pico, the last of the Mexican Governors of California, and who was still a familiar figure in the street of Los Angeles forty years ago, is quoted as stating that until he was twenty-six years of age he was in complete subjection to his mother, his father being dead.

"When younger," said Don Pio, "I could repeat the whole catechism from beginning to end, and my mother would often send for me to do so for the edification of strangers."

The reference made by Don Pio to his mother brings us to the subject of women in the old Los Angeles, and women who read this book will want to know how their sisters, now long dead and gone, managed to make the best of life in the old Los Angeles. Fortunately, I have before me the testimony of one of them—a woman who was a girl in California ninety years ago.

When she was a girl, she says, "Ladies were rarely seen in the street, except very early in the morning on their way to church. We used to go there attended by our servants, who carried small mats for us to kneel upon, as there were no seats. A tasteful little rug was considered an indispensable part of our belongings and every young lady embroidered her own. The church floors were cold, hard, and damp, and even the poorer classes managed to use mats of some kind, usually of tulle woven by the Indians.

"The dress worn in the mornings at church was not very becoming; the *rebozo* and the petticoat being black, always of cheap stuff and made up in much the same way. All classes wore the same; the padres told us that we must never forget that all ranks of men and women were equal in the presence of the Creator, and so at the morning service, it was the custom to wear no finery whatever. One mass was celebrated before sunrise for those whose duties compelled them to be at work early; later masses took place every hour of the morning. Every woman went daily to church, but the men were content to go once a week.

"For home wear and for company we had many expensive dresses, some of silk, or of velvet, others of laces, often of

our own making, which were much liked. In some families were imported laces that were very old and valuable. The rivalry between beauties of high rank was as great as it could be in any country. And much of it turned upon attire, so that those who had small means often underwent many privations in order to equal the splendor of the rich.

“Owing to the unsettled state of affairs for a generation in Mexico and in all the province, and the great difficulty of obtaining teachers, most of the girls of the time had scanty educations. Some of my playmates could speak English well, and quite a number knew something of French. One of the gallants of the time said that, ‘Dancing, music, religion, and amiability were the orthodox occupations of the ladies of California.’ Visitors from other countries have said many charming things about the manners, good health and comeliness of these ladies, but it is hardly right for any of us to praise ourselves. The ladies of the province are born and educated here; here they lived and died in complete ignorance of the outside world. We were in many ways like grown up children.

“Our servants were faithful, agreeable, and easy to manage. They often slept on mats on the earthen floor, or, in the summer time, in the court-yards. When they waited on us at meals we often let them hold conversation with us, and laugh without restraint. As we used to say, a good servant knew when to be silent and when to put in his *cuchara* (or spoon).”

When a woman married and became the mother of children she stepped into the most sacred niche in all the walls of her well-loved house. She managed her household with care and dignity. The servants came and went at her beck and call. The wool of the sheep was woven under her eyes. The reverence of her children and her children’s children never failed her until at last her eyes were closed and they laid her away to sleep with the countless dead.

The stranger in the old Los Angeles never failed to marvel at the finery worn by both women and men, and which the lady whom we have just quoted made reference to. And the people of today may find it a source of wonderment as to how these

AVAILON, SANTA CATALINA ISLAND



silks and satins and brocades were acquired by the people in a country where such things were not manufactured.

The explanation is that the Californians traded hides and tallow, grain, brandy and wine, and other native products, to the ships that touched on this coast on their way from the Orient to New England and other parts of the world. One time when the laws of Mexico prohibited foreign ships from entering the ports of California, Yankee traders used to anchor at Santa Catalina Island and from that point surreptitiously carry on an exchange with the mainland.

Speaking at one time of the people of the old days here, a member of the well-known Sepulveda family of Los Angeles said: "Settled in a remote part from the center of government, isolated from and almost unaided by the rest of the Mexican states, and with very rare chance of communication with the rest of the world, they in time formed a society whose habits, customs, and manners differed in many essential particulars from the other people of Mexico. The character of the new settlers assumed, I think, a milder form, more independence, and less of the restless spirit which their brothers in Old Mexico possessed. To this the virtuous, intelligent missionaries doubtless contributed greatly."

Even Hubert Howe Bancroft, the great historian of California, and who would rank among great historians anywhere were it not for the fact that he habitually befouled his own work by crude and inexcusable innuendo, and who made it a habit to qualify almost every good thing he said of Californians with a personal sneer of his own, has this to say of the people of the old Los Angeles:

"Living surrounded by scenes of natural beauty, amidst olive orchards and vineyards, ever looking forth from sunny slopes on the bright waters of bay and sea, living so much in the open air with high exhilaration and healthful exercise, many a young woman glowed in her lustrous beauty and many a young man unfolded perfect as Apollo. Even the old were cheerful, strong, and young in spirit."

Charles Howard Shinn, writing of the old days, states that there was then not a hotel in California. He did not, of course, consider the missions as hotels, although they were



for many a year really such as far as any stranger was concerned, except that there was no bill to pay, no charge made, and this fact forces them out of the hotel class hopelessly. The stranger in the land offered an indignity to a house—any house—if he passed it without stopping. And when he found it necessary to leave, there was a fresh horse awaiting him instead of his own. In the room where he slept there was a sum of money uncounted, and unless he were totally ignorant of the custom of the country, he understood that if he were in need of funds he was to help himself freely to what he found. And if it appeared that some of the money were taken by the stranger-guest to meet his needs, the people of the house never under any circumstances counted what remained after the stranger had departed. They not only never permitted any one of themselves in the community to suffer, but extended the same charity and boundless generosity to the stranger as well.

We have said that there was not much money among the people of the old Los Angeles, which is true. But what there was it was gladly shared.

But it seems that if the people at large were not of plethoric purse, the missions, at least at one time in their history, were well-stocked with silver and gold as a result of the tireless industry of their establishments, and it is related that a man came down from Santa Barbara to Los Angeles once to borrow money, but without success. He was an American and had married into the Ortega family. By the time he had returned to his home, a priest of one of the missions heard of the man's trouble, and so, without the slightest hesitation or without asking the scratch of a pen in acknowledgment, he sent the man a tule basket of the capacity of four gallons filled with gold.

"You ought to come to your priest when you need help," said the padre in the message that he sent with the basket of gold.

Life in the old Los Angeles centered around the Plaza, where Don Felipe de Neve drove the first stakes of the pueblo and laid out its four corners. The growth of Los Angeles has been so sensationally rapid during the recent years that it is

easy to form the impression that it must have been in very ancient times indeed that the old Plaza was the center of everything, social, religious and commercial. But there are many men, not yet so very old, who can remember when this was the case.

I am indebted to an old friend, the late Harris Newmark, for reliable recollections of the old Plaza as it was sixty-five years or more ago. Mr. Newmark was a young man here at that time, a merchant and a factor in the life of the town. Before he died he published a book of his memoirs which constitutes a valuable contribution to Los Angeles history. Mr. Newmark states that the homes of many of those who were uppermost in the social scale, clustered about the old Plaza, and that Jose Andras Sepulveda has a beautiful old adobe house in that vicinity. Don Ignacio del Valle lived there prior to his residence at Camulos. The Coronels, Aguilar, Carrillos, the Sanchez family, Vicente Lugo, the Abileas and Don Agustin Olivera also.

"Don Vicente Lugo," says Mr. Newmark, "was the Beau Brummel of Los Angeles in the early days. His wardrobe was made exclusively of the fanciest patterns of Mexican type; his home one of the few two-story houses in the pueblo. He was the owner of twenty-five hundred head of cattle. His mother-in-law, Maria Ballestero, lived near him."

Not only was the Plaza the center of everything because of these great people who lived there in the old days, but it was the municipal headquarters and everybody of note in any part of California who came to Los Angeles for any reason has been seen where the old Plaza stands.

Also it is not to be forgotten that the Picos lived there, and that it was the home of both Don Pio and Don Andres, each of them renowned in California's annals.

It seems that nothing can be written concerning Los Angeles without reference to the name of Pico. Don Pio was the last big man of California under the flag of Mexico. Mr. Newmark, in his memoirs, recalls Don Pio and says that "As long as he lived, or at least until the tide of his fortune turned and he was forced to sell his most treasured personal effects, he invariably adorned himself with massive jewelry of much

valve; and as a further conceit, he frequently wore on his bosom Mexican decorations that had been bestowed upon him for past official service."

We shall have more to say of Pio Pico in another chapter, but since it has been mentioned that his fortunes turned, I remember hearing a man of unimpeachable character stating that it got to be so bad with Don Pio at last that a constable took his sombrero from his head and seized it for debt one day on the streets of Los Angeles.

## CHAPTER VI

### OLD TIMERS AND OLD TIMES

About fifty years ago the folks in Los Angeles came to the conclusion that a book ought to be printed about their city and the people who had been and still were at that time a part of it. So it appears that a "Literary Committee" was organized for the purpose of getting out a publication of this character, and we find that the work of compilation and historical research was entrusted to Messrs. J. J. Warner, Benjamin Hayes and J. P. Widney, with the result that, in due course of time, a most interesting and valuable booklet was printed and bound and published by a now long-forgotten firm of the name of Louis Lewin and Company, the booklet bearing the imprint of the "Mirror Printing, Ruling and Binding House."

Copies of this booklet are now extremely rare. From it we are able to gather much valuable information concerning the old timers of Los Angeles and the old times. And in this chapter of this book we are using with a free hand the data we find in the old publication referred to.

Among other things we find the following:

After the independence of Mexico, and the opening of its ports to foreign trade, the port of San Pedro was one of the chief points on the coast of California for the shipping of the products of the country, and for the landing of goods, wares and merchandise from abroad. The three missions in what was then Los Angeles County, and the owners of stock-farms, and the inhabitants of Los Angeles, disposed of their products and manufactures in payment.

Between the people of Sonora, or of New Mexico, and those of California, there was comparatively no intercourse until about 1830. The intercourse between those places and California, which commenced about that time, was mainly

brought about through the enterprise of American trappers or beaver hunters.

Jedediah S. Smith, of the Rocky Mountain Fur Company, and a leader of trapping parties, came into California with a party of trappers from the Yellowstone River in 1825, and again in 1826. Through him and his men, others engaged in trapping beaver in the Rocky Mountains learned something of California.

In 1828-29 Ewing Young, of Tennessee, who had for some seasons been engaged in trapping beaver in and north of New Mexico, made a hunt in the Tulare Valley and on the waters of the San Joaquin. He had in his party some natives of New Mexico. He passed through Los Angeles on his way back from his hunting fields to New Mexico. His men on their return to New Mexico, in the summer of 1830, spread their reports of California over the northern part of that territory.

In 1830 William Wolfskill, a native of Kentucky but from Missouri, fitted out, in conjunction with Mr. Young, a trapping party at Taos, New Mexico, to hunt the waters of the San Joaquin and Sacramento valleys. Failing, in the winter of 1830-31, to get over the mountains between Virgin River and those rivers discharging into the Bay of San Francisco, and his men becoming demoralized and impatient from their sufferings of cold, he changed his line of travel and came with his party into Los Angeles in February, 1831.

With Mr. Wolfskill's party there were a number of New Mexicans, some of whom had taken serapes and fresadas (woolen blankets) with them for the purpose of trading them to the Indians in exchange for beaver skins. On their arrival in California they advantageously disposed of their blankets to the rancheros in exchange for mules. These New Mexicans mostly returned to Santa Fe in the summer of 1831, with the mules they had obtained in California. The appearance of these mules in New Mexico, owing to their large size compared with those at that time used in the Missouri and Santa Fe trade, and their very fine form, as well as the price at which they had been bought in barter for blankets, caused quite a sensation in New Mexico, out of which sprang up a

trade, carried on by means of caravans or pack animals, between the two sections of the same country which flourished for some ten or twelve years. These caravans reached California yearly during the before mentioned time. They brought the woolen fabrics of New Mexico, and carried back mules, and silk and other Chinese goods.

Los Angeles was the central point in California of this New Mexican trade. Coming by the northern or Green and Virgin River routes, the caravans came through the Cajon Pass and reached Los Angeles. From thence they scattered themselves over the country from San Diego to San Jose, and across the bay to Sonoma and San Rafael. Having bartered and disposed of the goods brought and procured such as they wished to carry back, and what mules they could drive, they concentrated at Los Angeles for their yearly return.

Between 1831 and 1844 a considerable number of native New Mexicans and some foreign residents of that territory came through with the trading caravans in search of homes in this country. Some of them became permanent citizens, or residents of this county. Julian Chaves of this city, and who has served many terms as county supervisor or common councilman of the city, was among the first immigrants. The Martinezes, of San Jose, and the Trujillos, and others, were also among these immigrants. Of foreigners, who were residents of New Mexico, and came during this period and located in this county, were John Rowland, William Workman, John Reed, all of whom are dead, and the Hon. B. D. Wilson, and David W. Alexander, heretofore the sheriff of this county. Dr. John Marsh also came to California in company with these traders, and after residing in Los Angeles some years, he located near Mount Diablo, where he continued to live until he was murdered.

Other parties of Americans found their way from New Mexico to California at different times in the third and fourth decades of the nineteenth century, numbers of whom became permanent residents of Los Angeles.

Richard Laughlin and Nathaniel Pryor, both of whom died in Los Angeles, and Jesse Ferguson, who lived here many

years, came from New Mexico, by the way of the Gila River, in 1828. In 1831, a Mr. Jackson, who had been one of the firm of the Rocky Mountain Fur Company, and a partner of Jedediah S. Smith, came to Los Angeles from Santa Fe for the purpose of buying mules for the Louisiana market. He returned to New Mexico with the mules he purchased. With him came J. J. Warner, who remained in this place. A Mr. Bowman, known here as Joaquin Bowman, was one of J. S. Smith's men. He died at San Gabriel, after having been the miller at the Mission Mill for many years.

In the winter of 1832-33 a small party of Americans from New Mexico came over the Gila River route into Los Angeles. In this small party came Joseph Paulding, who, in 1833 and 1834, made the first two billiard tables of mahogany wood made in California. The first was made for George Rice, and the second for John Rhea, both Americans. Mr. Rice came to California about 1827, from the Sandwich Islands. Mr. Rhea was from North Carolina, and came with Mr. Wolfskill.

Lemuel Carpenter, of Missouri, was also of this party, and established a soap manufactory on the right bank of the San Gabriel River, not far from the present road to Los Nietos. Subsequently he became the proprietor of the Santa Gertrudes Ranch, where he died. Wm. Chard was also of this party. After residing in this city some years and planting a vineyard, he removed to the Sacramento Valley. A Mr. Sill, who also settled in the Sacramento Valley, was of this party.

Ewing Young came into Los Angeles from New Mexico in March, 1832, with a trapping party of about thirty men. On this occasion he came down the Gila River. With him in this party came a number of men who took up their residence in California; of which number Isaac Williams was a prominent citizen of Los Angeles City for about ten years, when he established himself at the Chino Ranch as a farmer and stock-breeder. He continued to reside there until his death in September, 1856. Moses Carson, a brother of the renowned Kit Carson, came with Young at this time. After residing here a number of years, he removed to Russian River in this state.

The Town of Los Angeles, from its settlement onward, for

more than fifty years, had a population greater than any other of the towns of California. The first census of which there are any records was taken in 1836, and the sum total of inhabitants of the city and country over which the authorities of the city exercised jurisdiction, which country included the whole of the old County of Los Angeles, except San Juan Capistrano, which at that time was attached to the District of San Diego, was 2,228. Of this number 553 were domesticated Indians.

This census gives the number of forty-six of the residents of Los Angeles as foreigners, and of these twenty-one are classed as Americans.

In the list of the officers of the last "Ayuntamiento," or city government, of Los Angeles under Mexican rule, we find the following distinguished names: First alcalde and president, Abel Stearns; second alcalde, Ignacio del Valle; regidores, David W. Alexander, Benjamin D. Wilson, Jose L. Sepulveda, Manuel Garfias; sindico, Francisco Figueroa; secretary, Jesus Guirado.

Upon going out of office as alcalde in 1849, Stephen C. Foster was appointed prefect by Governor Bennett Riley. This was a stormy period for officers of the city; the records show that their duty was well performed. To the care of Prefect Foster and Alcalde Stearns then—and to the first named gentleman since—are we much indebted for the preservation of the city and county archives, and for the admirable order of arrangement in which they are found.

From the year 1836, or a year or two before, Abel Stearns had always figured through their local administrations, in one manner or another, beneficially to the people. He was born at Salem, Massachusetts; spent considerable time in Mexico; came to Los Angeles in 1828; his business a merchant. His fortune seems to have begun about 1842. He obtained several large grants of land in this county and elsewhere. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1849, and of the State Legislature; always a prominent and useful citizen until his death at San Francisco, August 23, 1871, at the age of seventy-two years. He married Doña Arcadia, daughter of Don Juan Bandini.



Doña Ysidora, also a daughter of Don Juan Bandini, was married to Col. Cave J. Coutts, April 4, 1851. Colonel Coutts is before mentioned as lieutenant in Major Graham's command. He resigned his commission in November following; established the Rancho of Guajome, in San Diego County. He died wealthy, at the City of San Diego, June 10, 1874, leaving his widow, four daughters and four sons.

Don Juan Bandini came to California in 1819, and for many years filled a considerable space in the public view. He was administrator of the Mission San Gabriel in 1839; one of the Ayuntamiento of Los Angeles in 1844; a member of the Departmental Assembly at its suspension, on the approach of the United States forces, August 10, 1846, but at that date was at home in San Diego. He had partly written a history of California at the time of his death, which took place at this city November 2, 1859, at the age of fifty-nine years. He was a profound thinker, a clear, forcible writer. Don Juan was twice married; his first wife, Doña Dolores Estudillo, daughter of Don Jose Estudillo, formerly the distinguished military commander of Monterey; his second, Doña Refugio Arguello. Both ladies possessed singular beauty. Of the first marriage were Mrs. Robert S. Baker, Mrs. Coutts, Mrs. Pedro C. Carillo, and two sons, Jose Maria Bandini and Juanito Bandini. Of the second were Mrs. Charles R. Johnson, Mrs. Dr. James B. Winston, and three sons, Juan de la Cruz Bandini, Alfredo Bandini, and Arturo Bandini.

From an old record also we rescue another pleasant narrative that runs something as follows:

With the people of Los Angeles 1850 was a year of enjoyment, rather than of earnest pursuit of riches. Money was abundant. All sought to make the most of the pleasures of life, as it seemed. They were passionately fond of the turf. They might justly boast of their horses, which had sometimes drawn applause at the capital of Mexico.

August 16, 1851, Don Pio Pico and Compadre Teodosio Yorba gave their printed challenge "to the North" with bold defiance—"The glove is thrown down, let him who will take it up"—for a nine-mile race, or four and a half and repeat, the stake 1,000 head of cattle worth \$20 per head, and \$2,000

in money; with a codicil, as it were, for two other races, one of two leagues out and back, the other of 500 varas—\$2,000 and 200 head of full grown cattle bet on each race. March 21st following, the nine mile heat was run two miles south of the city, between the Sydney mare, Black Swan, backed by Don Jose Sepulveda, and the California horse, Sarco, staked by Don Pio Pico and Don Teodosio, the challengers. The mare won by 75 yards in 19 minutes and 20 seconds. Sarco, the previous spring, had run 9 Mexican miles in 18 minutes 46 seconds. Not less than \$50,000 must have changed hands.

More deserves to be said of what the Californians tell of this exciting race. April 2d the American mare, Nubbins, beat the American horse, Bear Meat, on the Wolfskill track by 10 feet—distance 400 yards—for 400 cows. The year before Don Jose Sepulveda's California horse beat Don Pio's American horse half a length, for \$2,000 in money and 500 head of cattle. Probably the carera is still talked of at Santa Barbara, when Francisco Noriega's horse, Buev de Tango, beat Alfred Robinson's horse, Old Breeches, with a change of \$20,000 among hands.

In 1852 Don Andres Pico and Don Jose Sepulveda had two races, one for \$1,000, the other for \$1,600 and 300 head of cattle. October 20th was the exciting day of Don Jose's favorite, Canelo, backed by Don Fernando Sepulveda, and of Alisan, a Santa Barbara horse, backed by Don Andres Pico—for 300 head of cattle and \$1,600 a side; 400 yards; Canelo came out winner half a length.

The New Years' ball at Don Abel Stearns, "where all the beauty and elegance of the city," says the editor in mellifluous Spanish, "contributed that night to give splendor to the dance," was followed on the tenth by two races. The end of Lent, and all the grander festivals were partly enjoyed in this way.

In 1853 was to be run the race of Ito, brought 700 miles, against Fred Coy, stake \$10,000. The natives were cautious and it was forfeited; but in March Moore & Brady's horse, John Smith, beat Powell's mare, Sarah Jane, for \$2,100, by about a length. In February, 1857, Don Jose Sepulveda's horse, Pinto, easily beat Don Pio's Dick Johnson at San

Gabriel, for \$3,000; and March 5th, Don Jose beat the Gonzales brothers at San Fernando for \$2,000.

Through the later years heavier stakes than any we have mentioned were lost and won by Don Juan Aliba and others, except, perhaps, that of Black Swan and Sarco. Of a very early day some of the races occupy many pages of the archives. One tasked the best ability, as alcalde, of the venerable Don Mannel Dominguez; one drew out a profound decision of Don Jose Antonio Carrillo, of the Supreme Court. The governor did not disdain to lay down rules for racing. In his manuscript diary we have the authority of Mr. Francis Mellus, visiting Los Angeles from one of the Boston ships at San Pedro, for the race of Moses Carson, brother of Kit Carson, on January 20, 1840. Mose had a heavy bet on two races for that day. The first he won, despite the salt that—for luck—had been put in all the holes of the stakes on the course, and of the little bag of salt and wax candle and silk cotton astutely concealed in the mane of the opposing horse. But it ruined Mose's reputation, and mayhap damaged his purse. He was set down as an hechicero (sorcerer) by his Sonoranian antagonist, and the second race fell through.

The first three American families permanently settled in the city, in 1850, were those of J. G. Nichols, J. S. Mallard and Louis Granger. John Gregg, son of Mr. Nichols, was the first American boy born—April 15, 1851.

Among the novelties of a strange region, emigrants could not fail to notice the vivacity and robustness of the native-born children, and the large proportion of persons of an advanced age. April 24, 1858, died at Santa Ana, Dona Guadalupe Romero, aged 115 years, leaving a son, in the city, upwards of 75 years. She came here in 1771, wife of a soldier named Moreno.

Where Downey Block stands, we miss the time worn, little old gentleman who was wont to sit there all day before the humble adobe—cared for by two faithful daughters, after the mother had left the scene. A soldier of by-gone days, to judge from the antique dress which he delighted to wear; in the same he was buried, at the age of ninety-two years, July 29, 1859. This was Don Antonio Valdez, who had served at San

Diego, San Gabriel and Santa Barbara, and in many an Indian chase or combat.

The men appeared to fine advantage in showy old style rancho attire, on their gay and spirited horses. Of the ladies, few words might scarce reflect the true judgment of a stranger; certes, it was admiration of elegance and naïvete and kindness, all with good sense and wit so happily blended, by some rare gift of Nature. That venerable religious pile on the Plaza did not have pews. To see the ladies kneeling in vari-colored silks of that time—and their rebosas—what gorgeous garden imaginable of dahlia and tulip of every hue could charm half so much? Then a perpetual baile—but 1850 is gone—or fashions have changed perhaps.

Of the 103 proprietors of town farms in 1848, before referred to, eight were foreigners: Abel Stearns, Louis Bouchet, Louis Vignes, Juan Domingo, Miguel N. Pryor, Wm. Wolfskill, Louis Lemoreau, Joseph Snooks—an Englishman, a German, three French, three “Yankees”—so has the city ever been, cosmopolitan.

Under the sound policy adopted at the beginning for the disposition of pueblo lands, the natural course of business and family changes, the proprietorship of real property is much altered. Those of Spanish origin, who numbered 3,000 souls within the city, and about an equal number outside in the county, retained good agricultural tracts. Within the patent of the city were 17,752 acres. The increase of culture of fruit trees—and ornamental too—was remarkable. In 1847 probably were set out 200 young walnut trees; only three bearing are remembered—one on the east side of Don Louis Vignes' place, one larger in the middle of the Pryor Vineyard, another, very large, of Claudio Lopez. The almond was unknown.

San Fernando and San Gabriel had a few olives. Long before 1840, the Californians had the fig, apricot, peach, pear and quince.

The county surveyor's report of January 1, 1876, gives fruit trees as follows: Quince, 1,425; apricot, 2,600; fig, 3,600; pear, 5,800; apple, 8,590; peach, 14,200; olive, 2,170; English walnut, 6,000; plum, 300; there were also cherries.

The value of the fruit crop of 1875 was \$525,000.

Plums were introduced by O. W. Childs. Seeds of the sweet almond, in 1855, were first planted by William Wolfskill, which were brought from the Mediterranean by H. F. Teschemaker of San Francisco. In January, 1875, this county had 1,100 trees. Compared with the meager agricultural crops from 1847 to 1855, the return for 1875 is: Beans, 24,400 bushels; onions, 28,350; buckwheat, 1,350; rye, 11,760; wheat, 20,000; barley, 415,950; corn, 639,000; and a respectable showing of hops, tobacco, etc. Hay amounted to 10,250 tons. The enclosed land was 47,500 acres; total in cultivation 64,500 acres, of which 4,950 were in grape vines. Add, of honey, 571,230 pounds. O. W. Childs, in 1856, introduced bees. He paid \$100, in San Francisco, for one hive and swarm.

In 1850 there was one pepper tree, lofty and wide-branching, over the adobe house of an old lady living near the hills a short distance north of the Plaza, the seeds of which came from a tree in the court of the Mission of San Luis Rey. In 1861 John Temple planted a row of pepper trees in front of his Main Street store. This the utilitarian woodman has not spared. But all the city is adorned with this graceful tree; and flowers of every name and clime—to rival an undying fragrance of the solitary Rose of Castile twenty years and more ago.

Of other trees that flourish now splendidly, William Rubottom of Spadra introduced pecans; William Wolfskill, persimmons; O. W. Childs, in 1856, black walnut—the seed from New York. About the same time H. P. Dorsey planted black walnut successfully at San Gabriel. In 1855 Solomon Lazard imported seeds of the Italian chestnut from Bourdeaux, France, which Wm. Wolfskill planted at his homestead, and afterward gave two of the trees to H. C. Cardwell. These trees, afterward large and productive, were long seen at O. W. Childs' place. J. L. Sansevaine also brought chestnut seeds from France, about 1855.

As in older times, every full moon in 1850 the country was invaded by the Yutahs, under their famous chief, Walker, to steal horses. Expeditions sent after him were in general unsuccessful, now and then unfortunate; as happened in June,

when he took off seventy odd of the best horses of Don Jose Maria Lugo, near the present Town of Colton. One of the pursuing party was killed by him. Before that the New Mexicans of Agua Mansa had been a barrier to the incursions of these Indians, without always preventing them. In this year a volunteer company was raised by General Bean, owing to hostile demonstrations by the Caluillas of San Gorgonio. About June the "Irving party" of eleven men were killed by the Indians in the cañada of Doña Maria Armenta. One only of the original twelve escaped, in the friendly shelter of some bushes. Juan Antonio, chief, had the boldness to offer fight to Bean.

The rising of Antonio Garra, chief of the Agua Caliente, in the fall of 1851, spread fear through Los Angeles of a general insurrection, from San Diego to Tulare. The danger soon passed away. The regulars and San Diego volunteers were under Capt. George Fitzgerald. Gen. J. H. Bean commanded the Los Angeles volunteers; Myron Norton, colonel and chief of staff; S. Bolivar Cox and B. S. Eaton, corporals. Hon. H. C. Rolfe, Wm. Nordholdt—and many who are dead—were in service on the occasion.

Estimable for many virtues, General Bean met an untimely end at San Gabriel, September 9, 1852. Our exposed position for a long time thereafter, in the Kern River and Mojave wars, and other troubles, kept amongst us officers of the U. S. army; and not seldom in active service. They possessed the regard of the people—Col. B. Beall, Majors E. H. Fitzgerald and George R. Blake, Captains Davidson and Lovell and Gen. Winfield Scott Hancock.

Lively recollections there are of the splendid band of the Second Dragoons, Fort Tejon, that made more joyous the "Fourth of July, 1855," with General Banning as orator of the day; again, when Hon. Myron Norton, in 1857, stirred up patriotic feelings. The day had been kept from the beginning. Maj. E. H. Fitzgerald lies in the Catholic Cemetery, Los Angeles. He died January 9, 1860, of consumption.

A quarter of a century, whereof reminiscences come involuntarily, is worthy of review. A record of crime must have attended this progress in manners and government. For one

reason or another the people felt compelled often "to take the law into their own hands." Those moral tempests which agitated the community to its depths, slumber, we trust, to rise no more, in this better social condition.

Let us make a diary of a year or two: 1851, May 24th, came news of the Stockton fire, on the 14th; loss over \$1,000,000. June 11th, Col. J. C. Fremont's visit created an agreeable sensation; 17th, died, Miss Rosa Coronel; 19th, feast of Corpus Christi was celebrated with great pomp; July Fourth passed off with great enthusiasm; July 6th, Elder Parley P. Pratt held forth at the courthouse; 19th, witnessed a performance of "The Rough and Ready Theater," Herr Ritter, manager, and the critic observes—"When Richmond was conquered and laid off for dead, the spectators gave the King a smile of decided approval." August 23d, Hon. W. M. Gwinn, U. S. Senator, was sojourning amongst us. September 1st, city lots sold at auction at from \$20 to \$31 each, purchaser to have choice. September 2d, died, Doña Maria Ignacio Amador, aged ninety-one years; 7th, Doña Felipa Dominguez, wife of Don Bernardo Yorba; 17th, Matilda Lanfranco, at fourteen; and 21st, at eighty-eight, Doña Ysabel Gvirado. October 5th, D. W. Alexander started for Europe. November 1st, Nicolas Blair, a Hungarian, married Miss Maria Jesus Bouchet. November 8th was the first meeting of the Free and Accepted Masons at the Botica. The same day was published the marriage of William J. Graves to Miss Soledad Pico at San Luis Obispo, on October 20th. November 20th, at the Puente, aged forty years, died Doña Incarnacion Martinez, wife of John Roland. Of her it is said truly: "Many will remember with what zeal she ministered to the weary traveler, with what care and anxiety she watched the sickbed—feeding the hungry and befriending the friendless. Her whole life was an exemplification of that enthusiasm in doing good which so particularly characterizes the christian woman." December 14th were married Don Ignacio del Valle and Miss Ysabel Barrela. December 22d, "Forefathers' Day," rejoiced thirty gentlemen by the presence of ladies and a supper at Monrow's with toasts, songs and speeches. December 27, 1851, Antonio Garra was executed at Chino by sentence of court martial, for insurrec-

tion November 23d at Warner's rancho, for the murder of American invalids Ridgley, Manning, Slack and Fiddler.

Some of the property holders of 1851 were as follows, with the assessed value of property: Eulogio de Celis, 100,000 acres, \$13,000; Jose Sepulveda, 102,000 acres, \$83,000; John Temple, 20,000 acres, \$79,000; Bernardo Yorba, 37,000 acres, \$37,000; Antonio Maria Lugo, 29,000 acres, \$72,000; John Foster, 61,000 acres, \$13,000; Abel Stearns, 14,000 acres, \$70,000; Pio Pico, 22,000 acres, \$31,000; John Roland, 20,000 acres, \$70,000; Wm. Wolfskill, 1,100 acres, \$10,000; Antonio Ignacio Abila, 19,000 acres, \$14,000; Isaac Williams, \$35,000; Ricardo Vejar, \$34,000.

Surely it is interesting to look back into the mists of these old times.

We are loathe to drop the subject, and so we are going to give some more reminiscences. Let us hear from Prof. H. D. Barrows, long a prominent and highly respected citizen of our city, an American, who told, once upon a time, what Los Angeles looked like to him when he came to it eighty years ago, and the changes that took place in it for some years after.

Professor Barrows said:

The first time that I ever heard that there was such a place as Los Angeles was in the summer of 1854, at Benicia, where, in buying some fruit, which at that time was both of indifferent quality and scarce as well as dear, a friend told me that Los Angeles grapes would, later, be in the market, and that they would be far superior to any other kind of fruit then to be had.

I arrived in Los Angeles December 12, 1854, and it has been my home ever since. I came from San Francisco on the steamer Goliath, in the company with the late William Wolfskill, the pioneer, and his nephew, John Wolfskill, the latter still a resident of this county. The fare on the steamer at that time was \$40. Arriving at the port of San Pedro, we came ashore on a lighter, and from thence by stage to Los Angeles, where we arrived about noon.

The City of Los Angeles, when I first saw it, half a century ago, was a one-story, adobe town, of less than 5,000 inhab-



itants, a large portion of whom were of Spanish descent, and among whom, of course, Spanish customs and the use of the Spanish language prevailed. There were, I think, not to exceed three or four two-story buildings in the town.

Behold, what a magical change half a century has wrought. The population of the former Spanish pueblo or ciudad of 5,000 or less has risen to nearly 200,000 souls. The quaint, flat-roofed whitewashed houses, clustering around or near the Plaza, have given way to splendid fireproof, brick and steel blocks of two, three, five and ten stories; and to picturesque, luxurious homes extending throughout and beyond the four square leagues of territory granted to the ancient pueblo by the king of Spain, under whose authority its foundations were laid by that wise Spanish governor, Don Felipe de Neve, nearly a century and a quarter ago.

When I first came here Los Angeles had but one Roman Catholic Church edifice, that fronting the Plaza; and not one Protestant or other church building. How many places of worship there are now, of the numerous religious sects of the city and county, I do not know.

There were then but two public schoolhouses in the city; one, on the site of the present Bryson Block, on Spring Street; the other was located on the east side of Bath Street, north of the Plaza. Today there are I know not how many large, commodious school buildings scattered throughout the widely extended sections of the municipality, and the new ones are constantly being built to meet the pressing necessities of our rapidly increasing population. The number of pupils attending the two schools in '54 probably did not exceed 200. The number of children between the ages of five and seventeen years who attended the public schools during the school year 1903-1904, as reported by Superintendent Foshay, was 29,072; and of those who attended private schools 2,322—making the total number of both public and private school pupils, 31,394.

By the census of April, 1904, there were 35,411 children between the ages of five and fifteen, and 9,812 under five years; or, altogether, 45,223 children of seventeen years and under in Los Angeles one year ago. I think it a fair statement to say that at the present time there must be at least 50,000 chil-



MODERN SCHOOLS OF SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA: PASADENA

dren, and that the total population of the city must be not far from 200,000 (1900).

We had no high, polytechnic or normal schools in those early years. Los Angeles was so isolated from all the rest of the world, and so difficult of access, that first-class teachers were not easily obtained; and when one was secured he or she was retained if possible by any reasonable increase of salary.

In the early '50s I think we had but one District (Superior) Court, presided over by Judge Benjamin Hayes, and later by Judge Pablo de la Guerra of Santa Barbara, who in turn was succeeded by Judge Ygnacio Sepulveda, who later became connected with the United States Embassy at the City of Mexico. The former jurisdiction of this district included besides Los Angeles, the counties of San Diego and Santa Barbara. We had also a County Court, and Court of Sessions which was also a Probate Court, over which Judge W. G. Dryden presided for many years.

We had besides a U. S. District Court in the '50s, of which I. S. K. Ogier was the presiding judge. This southern district included all the southern part of the state extending to a line just north of the City of Santa Cruz. Sessions of this court were held alternately at Monterey and Los Angeles. In those early days of the '50s we had no horse or steam railroads or telegraphs. Electric roads, telephones, bicycles, automobiles and the like, so necessary to our recent modern life, were totally unknown.

We had no paved streets or sidewalks. We had no elevators, because, first, we had no use for them, as our houses were of but one story; and, second, because elevators were unknown. Typewriting machines and linotype printing machines and operators of the same were unknown and unthought of. We had no gas, and electric lighting had not been invented. We had, I think, but one book store, and, although modest attempt to establish a public library was made, it soon petered out. I know I contributed a few books to it, but I remember that, having made a trip to the Atlantic states in '57, when I came back I learned that the library had been abolished and that the books, including those I had donated, had been sold.

We had neither mercantile nor savings banks during the entire decade of the '50s, and but few money safes. All merchandise not produced here was brought from San Francisco by steamers of sail vessels, lightered at San Pedro, and brought up to town by big mule trains of "prairie schooners."

Until vineyards and orchards were planted and came to bearing in the upper country, after change of government, the people of that part of the state, including the population of the mining regions, depended on the vineyards of Los Angeles for their fruit. I know that for several years large shipments of mission grapes, the only kind grown here then, were made by each steamer during the grape season. The "vignerones" here realized all the way from one to two bits (reales) a pound for their grapes. Other fruits besides the "mission grape" were scarce here also, as well as in the north, and generally of inferior quality, until improved varieties were introduced from the eastern states. Among the enterprising pioneers who first brought the best standard fruits and vegetables to Los Angeles were Dr. W. B. Osborne, Los Angeles' first postmaster, H. C. Cardwell, O. W. Childs and others.

The Hollisters of Santa Barbara brought a flock of American improved sheep all the way from Ohio to Los Angeles, arriving here in the early part of 1854. Los Angeles was long known as one of the "Cow counties," as stock raising was extensively carried on throughout Southern California for some years under American rule, as it had been in mission times; and it was very profitable even in spite of occasional severe drouths, as these countries were natural grass countries, burr-clover, alfileria and wild oats being especially valuable indigenous grasses. Cattle did not need to be fed and housed in winter in our mild climate, as they are required to be fed in colder countries. Besides, the best known breeds of horse, sheep and neat cattle stock were gradually introduced. But eventually, as the admirable adaptation of Southern California for the perfection in growth of citrus fruits was demonstrated, and the splendid seedless navel orange was discovered, the immense cattle ranges were gradually converted into orange and lemon orchards. The English walnut crop has been found to be profitable here also, and thus, as we

now see, our orchards have taken the place of what were formerly extensive cattle ranges.

In '55 the *Star*, established in '51 by McElroy and Lewis, and the *Southern California*, published by Wheeler and Butts, both weekly, were the only local newspapers Los Angeles could boast of. We heard from the outside world by steamer from San Francisco, twice a month.

When "Johnny" Temple built a theater in '58, on the site of the present Bullard Block, our list of entertainments was somewhat enlarged. Instead of high-toned "Horse Shows" like that just held in Pasadena, we sometimes had bear and bull fights, cock fights and frequent horse, mule and donkey races, and occasionally a Spanish circus, or "maroma," and at Christmas times we were regaled with the quaint, beautiful characteristically Spanish "Pastorela," which was very effectively and charmingly presented by a thoroughly trained company under the direction of Don Antonio Coronel.

Of the adult people of Los Angeles who were living here when I came here, and with whom I gradually became more or less acquainted, very, very few are now alive, although many of their children have grown up, and have become heads of families.

I cannot suppress a feeling of sadness as I recall the past and review the changes that have occurred, in persons and scenes that now, as I look back, seem but dreams, but which then were indeed so real. And the thought arises, if such great changes have occurred during the past fifty years, who can tell or even imagine what Los Angeles will be fifty years hence, or what is in store for our children and grandchildren? Of the present citizens of Los Angeles except the younger portion, very few indeed will then be alive. And although we may strain our eyes to peer into the future,

"And strive to see what things shall be;"—

\* \* \* \* \*

"Events and deeds for us exist,  
As figures moving in a mist;  
And what approaches—bliss or woe—  
We cannot tell, we may not know—  
Not yet, not yet!"—

Our friend, Mr. Jackson A. Graves, did not arrive in Los Angeles at anywhere the early date that signalled the arrival of Professor Barrows. But Mr. Graves saw the old town change considerably, and from out the wonderful storehouse of his remarkable memory he gives us the following recollections:

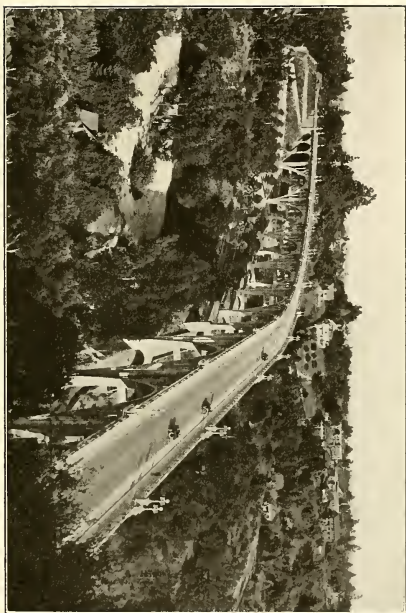
It is impossible for one who has come to Los Angeles in recent years to imagine its appearance or condition in June, 1875. I do not know what its population was then. The total registration of voters that year when Orange County was still a part of Los Angeles County was but 2,900.

At this date things were decidedly primitive in Los Angeles. The railroad was in operation from the city to Wilmington. All vessels were anchored outside of the present inland harbor at San Pedro, at a point beyond Dead Man's Island. The road to Santa Monica was being graded. It was started by Senator John P. Jones, who intended to run it to Independence, Inyo County. The financial crash of 1875 put an end to this enterprise. He sold his rights of way and road, as far as graded, to the Southern Pacific, which shortly afterwards completed the road to Santa Monica.

From San Francisco the road was completed into Caliente. From Los Angeles north it was built to the south portal of the San Fernando tunnel. This tunnel and the intervening road to Caliente over the Tehachapi was being constructed. Passengers from San Francisco had to stage it from Caliente to San Fernando. The road, afterwards completed by the Southern Pacific to New Orleans, was only built as far east as Spadra, some miles this side of Pomona.

All the business of the city was transacted within a short distance of Temple Block. That building and the Pico House were the only three-story buildings of any note in the city, if I remember rightly. There was not an elevator in the town.

The Farmers and Merchants Bank was then in its own building on North Main Street, just south of the present Cosmopolitan Hotel. The Los Angeles County Bank, founded by the late J. S. Slauson, was nearly opposite the Farmers and Merchants Bank, being located in a two-story brick building still standing, just north of the St. Charles Hotel. The only



A GREAT HIGHWAY LEADING OUT OF LOS ANGELES  
Colorado Street Bridge one of the Finest Concrete Structures of the  
Kind in the World

other bank in the city, that of Temple and Workman, was in the Temple Block at the corner of Spring and Temple streets. The Main Street corner of the building was occupied by A. Portugal, as a clothing store. Next to him, on Main Street, Joe Williams, still alive, conducted a saloon, "The Reception."

Sam Hellman, father of Maurice S. Hellman, had a book and stationery store adjoining this saloon. South of him on Main Street Geo. Pridham conducted a cigar stand. At the corner of Main and Market, in the Temple Block, was the office of Wells, Fargo and Company Express. Adjoining it on the west Jake Phillipi, ponderous, jovial and Dutch, kept a large and very popular beer hall.

The Pico House, opposite the Plaza on the east side of Main Street, was the leading hotel. Honors were shared with it by the "Bella Union," afterwards called the St. Charles. It was also on the east side of Main Street, a few doors south of the present Baker Block.

V. Dol conducted the Commercial Restaurant in the Downey Block. It was a well patronized and popular dining place. South of the Farmers and Merchants Bank Building the "City of Paris," the leading dry goods store of the city, was located. South of it was Billy Buffum's drinking saloon. Adjoining it just north of the Downey Block, Dr. T. Wollwebber, a large, portly German, had his drug store. The doctor was a fine old gentleman, possessed, however, of an uncontrollable temper. He afterwards kept a drug store on the corner of Third and Broadway, where the Bradbury Building stands. When telephones came into use he would get so mad at his that in his attempts to kick it off the wall he kicked down patches of plaster. (What would he have done with two telephone systems to contend with?)

South of Wollwebber was the wholesale liquor store of Levy & Coblentz, afterwards kept by M. Levy and Company. Next to it Upham & Rea had a bookstore, which, for many years afterwards, was kept by Phil Hirschfeld. Charlie Bush had a jewelry store in the same block.

Dillon & Keneally, dry goods merchants, were located on the east side of Main Street opposite the Temple Block. Next



to them were Dotter & Bradley, furniture dealers. They afterward founded the Los Angeles Furniture Company. It moved to a three-story brick building built for it by O. W. Childs and I. W. Hellman, on the east side of North Main Street opposite the Baker Block. From there the company moved to Judge Bicknell's building on Broadway below Second Street, later a part of B. F. Coulter's store.

Sam Prager conducted a clothing store in the corner of the Ducommun Block at Main and Commercial. His brother Charles was also in business on Commercial Street near Sam Meyer. Polaski & Goodwin, dealers in dry goods, were at the southeast corner of Main and Commercial, where the United States National Bank now is. The United States Hotel, smaller in size than it is now, was then, as now, on the southeast corner of Main and Requena streets. South of it, in the premises occupied by Harper, Reynolds and Company, Riviera and Sanguinetta had a large retail grocery store. South of them on the same side of Main Street, Eugene Germain and Geo. Matfield also had a retail grocery store, under the name of Germain and Matfield. In various portions of the business center the Nortons, Laventhal, and E. Greenbaum were engaged in the retail clothing business.

On the east side of Main Street nearly opposite Temple Street, where the Lanfranco Block now stands, was a two-story adobe building of the same name. Its upstairs was occupied by the family of that name. On the ground floor A. C. Chauvin had a grocery store and south of him Doctor Heinzeman a drug store. Below him Workman Brothers had a saddle and harness shop. One of the partners was the late William H. Workman. He had been mayor of the city, and its treasurer for several terms. Where the Baker Block now stands was a one-story adobe, the former home of Don Abel Stearns and then occupied by Mr. and Mrs. R. S. Baker, Mrs. Baker having been the widow of Don Abel.

The erection of the Baker Block was commenced in 1875 and for years it was the finest building in Los Angeles.

The wholesale business was all done on Los Angeles Street, and was largely confined to Hellman, Haas & Company, who were on the northeast corner of Los Angeles and Commercial

streets, and the Newmarks, who were on the west side of Los Angeles Street, a block to the south.

Over Hellman, Haas & Company's store were a number of rooms occupied by young unmarried business men. Among them was Mendel Meyer, a brother of Sam Meyer. Mendel



OLD COURT HOUSE

Between Main and Spring, Court and Market

was an enthusiastic violinist. Coming in one night after 12 o'clock, he began to play his violin. Doors flew open and shoes, boot-jacks and bric-a-brac were hurled at Mendel's door. He opened it, stuck his head into the hall and greeted his companions with: "Hey, what is the matter with you fellows? Can't a man make music in his own castle?" (A 6x8 room.) At the corner of Los Angeles and Aliso streets,

where Haas, Baruch & Co. now do business, Kalisher & War-tenberg, dealers in hides, and old timers of long standing, were located.

On Alameda Street north of Aliso was Don Mateo Keller's residence and wine cellars. Juan Bernardy had similar cellars on Alameda Street, but further south.

The old courthouse stood where the Bullard Block is situated. It housed all of the county officials on the ground floor. On the second floor were the courtrooms and judges' chambers. Hon. Ygnacio Sepulveda was district judge, and Hon. H. K. S. O'Melveny was county judge. Opposite the courthouse, on Market Street, was a large wooden pavilion which was used as a place of amusement, and for dancing parties, church fairs, etc.

Where the Nadeau Hotel stands there was a one-story adobe building on the street line. The rest of the lot was used as a stable and stock-yard by a stage company.

Louis Roeder's wagon shop was on Spring Street south of the stage station. The old jail stood where the Phillips Block now is. On Spring Street, opposite Temple Block, Ben Truman conducted the Daily Star, in a one-story adobe. Yarnell and Castyle had a job printing office in the Downey Block on Temple Street, where they also got out the Mirror, a weekly temperance publication. Out of this paper evolved the Los Angeles Times. Billings & Smith had a livery stable where the county jail and the adjoining building east of it are now located. Opposite this stable in the corner of the present county courthouse lot, was a small brick Episcopal Church. The high school was on top of the hill where the courthouse now stands.

Ferguson & Rose (L. J.) ran a large and fashionable livery stable on the west side of Main Street opposite Arcadia Street. Louis Lichtenberger had a wagon-making shop on Main Street north of First Street, where a building owned by his heirs and bearing his name still stands. He afterwards ran the Philadelphia Brewery on Aliso Street, which later became the Maier Brewing Company.

Judge E. M. Ross lived in a brick house on the east side of Main Street opposite Third Street (Third Street did not

then extend east of Main Street). Capt. C. E. Thom lived in the large dwelling house still standing in the rear of the Thom Block at the corner of Third and Main streets. Mr. Andrew Glassell lived about where the Hoegee Company's store is situated.

Governor John G. Downey lived in a brick building on the west side of Main Street just north of the Van Nuys Hotel. The hotel site was occupied by the family residence of James G. Howard. Mr. I. W. Hellman was building his residence, one of the best in the city, at Fourth and Main, where the building of the Farmers and Merchants National Bank stands.

Judge O'Melveny had a very attractive home at Second and Broadway, west side. South of his place was the residence of John M. Griffith. Next to him that of Eugene Meyer and south of him that of Harris Newmark. The block on Broadway, between First and Second streets, was filled with the residences of pioneer citizens. The hill section of the town was hardly occupied at all.

Between San Pedro Street and portions of Main Street and the river were vineyards and orchards. Orange groves were on Main and Spring and Broadway as far north as Second Street. The three principal orange groves of the city were the Wolfskill, the first one set out here, located in the neighborhood of the Arcade Depot, and the Breswalter and Childs groves, which were east of Main Street, at Ninth and Tenth streets.

All of the lawyers and doctors and surveyors were housed principally in the Temple and Downey blocks.

Judson and Gillette and W. H. J. Brooks were the only searchers of records. John Carlin, W. J. Brodrick and Fred Drakenfelt shared the insurance business of the community. Butchers and bakers were scattered here and there as they are in all towns. Fred Morsch, a good-natured German who loved a glass of beer, was the sign painter of the town. The lumber yards were all located on Alameda or San Pedro streets.

The Cathedral, on Main Street south of First Street, was in course of erection. The old Plaza Church was just as it is

now. John Jones and family occupied an adobe residence opposite the Plaza and nearly opposite the Plaza Church.

Below Fourth Street there was only an occasional house on any of the streets between Main and Figueroa. Agricultural Park was in existence. Fairs and races were held there. J. S. Slauson was one of the pioneers in the Figueroa Street district. So was Judge Brunson, the Longstreets, Col. J. F. Godfrey and a few others.

None of the streets of the city had been paved. A little gravel from the hills was put onto some of them. In winter the streets were a sea of mud. In summer the dust was to some extent allayed by spasmodic sprinkling.

In 1875 certainly one-half of the community was Spanish.

Everybody knew everybody else, and the people seemed to be one great happy family. I think I can safely say that I knew every man, woman and child in Los Angeles within ninety days after I got here.

Driving was one of the great daily amusements. The well-to-do families all had their own carriages. Those who were not so fortunate patronized the livery stables.

After one got beyond the immediate city limits one found natural roads, good except at times of heavy rains. There was not enough travel on them to make them rough or dusty. The Arroyo Seco Drive was a favorite one, also a road up the river. On Sundays and holidays in the summer time, a drive to Santa Monica was the thing. The drive there in the early morning, a dip in the ocean, a dinner at Eugene's and the drive home in the cool of the afternoon, afforded one a full day's amusement.

If the city was small and thinly populated, what of the county?

East Los Angeles was almost unborn as yet. All that portion of the city and much more was owned by Dr. J. S. Griffin and his nephew, Hancock Johnson.

Beyond East Los Angeles, in the Arroyo Seco, and to the east and west of it, there were no dwellings or improvements except the dancing pavilion at the Sycamore Grove and John Benner's slaughter house, where Garvanza is located.



BUILDING NOW COVERING OLD PASADENA

City Hall, Library and Play Grounds—Scenes on Colorado Street and  
Raymond Avenue

Lincoln Park was utterly vacant. The settlement of Pasadena had just commenced.

Going out of East Los Angeles, by what is known as the Adobe Road, the country was all open. The present sites of South Pasadena, Alhambra and Dolgeville were sheep pastures.

Oneonta Park was included in 1,200 acres of land known as the "Bacon Tract," owned by H. D. Bacon. It embraced the Raymond Hotel grounds and extended to Alhambra Road on the south, just beyond Sierra Vista on the west and to the center of South Pasadena on that side, and, on its eastern side, the arroyo running south on the east side of the Raymond Hotel.

East of the Bacon tract was Gen. G. Stoneman's place of several hundred acres, mostly in vines, formerly the Myles place, and now subdivided. Next came the Solomon Richardson place. Then the home place of Col. E. J. C. Kewen. East of Kewen was the home of B. D. Wilson, now owned by his daughters, Mrs. G. S. Patton and Miss Annie Wilson. Then the Shorb ranch and the Winston home, both the property of Mr. H. E. Huntington, except a portion of the Winston place, which he sold to W. G. Kerekhoff, who still possesses it. Adjoining Winston on the east was the James Foord property, now owned by the I. N. Van Nuys estate. Then came the Titus ranch, with its sign on the gate, "Dew Drop," now owned by Judge Bicknell and the Bradbury estate. Titus was an orange grower, a rival of L. J. Rose as a breeder of trotting stock, and a man of sterling worth.

Next on the east were the princely possessions of L. J. Rose, known as "Sunny Slope." Here he made a reputation as a winemaker and as a breeder of trotting stock, winning for himself fame throughout the world. East of him was A. B. Chapman, and then came Santa Anita, the first property in the county owned by E. J. Baldwin. From there on to Azusa there was not a house in sight.

At San Gabriel there was a small settlement and another at El Monte and at Puente. Leaving Los Angeles and going southeast there were no habitations until you got to Downey and Rivera.

The Cienega ranch was mostly a swamp and the best duck and snipe grounds in California. From Los Angeles to Santa Monica was almost all open country. From Santa Monica to Wilmington and from Agricultural Park to the ocean, in the winter months, untold numbers of wild geese "honked" and fed. The San Rafael Rancho, where Glendale is located, was but sparsely settled.

The Providencia Rancho, where Burbank now is, was owned by Doctor Burbank, who grazed it to sheep. Later he sold it for subdivision, and built the theater of his name on Main Street in Los Angeles.

The only street car line in Los Angeles was one that had been built the year before by Judge R. M. Widney and his associates, from the Plaza on Main Street, down Main Street to Spring Street, then out Spring Street to Sixth Street and on Sixth Street to Figueroa Street. Shortly afterward the Main and Agricultural Park line was put into operation and another line built to East Los Angeles.

Oil had been discovered in the Newhall district, and the Pacific Coast Oil Company was doing considerable development work there.

I have written this article entirely from memory, without consulting an authority, newspaper file or public record.

Such was the foundation for the wonderful development which has taken place in this community in thirty-five years. Surely the population of this city in 1875 did not exceed 7,000 people, one-half of whom were native Californians. In 1900 its population had increased from 13,000 in 1880 to 101,000. The census just taken, I am positive, will show its population in the neighborhood of 320,000.

Predicting for the future from the past, can any human being paint the picture as it will be thirty-five years hence? To my mind we are yet in our infancy and our growth and development will be more rapid in the future than it has ever been up to the present time.

Passing reluctantly from the reminiscences of Mr. Graves, it is recalled that the one great sensation of the old times—that is to say, the times of forty years ago—was the celebrated failure of the Temple and Workman Bank. You can-



not talk very long to any man or woman living now who have been residents of Los Angeles for the past fifty years without having them surely tell you about the time "when the Temple and Workman Bank failed."

More recent comers to the city might be curious to know what were the facts in this celebrated case, and in order to satisfy legitimate curiosity of this nature, we give those facts briefly as follows:

In September, 1875, the Bank of California in San Francisco, supposed then to be the strongest institution on the Pacific Coast, got into difficulty and temporarily closed its doors. Its president, W. C. Ralston, either committed suicide or was accidentally drowned at North Beach.

The failure of the Bank of California was felt all over the state. In Los Angeles, the Temple and Workman Bank, a partnership composed of T. P. F. Temple and his father-in-law, Mr. Workman, a very wealthy landholder living at Puente, closed its doors.

The event created a most profound sensation and threw the community into a high state of excitement.

In the desperate effort to restore solvency to the bank, quite a sum of money was borrowed from Newmark and Company, and more from E. J. (Lucky) Baldwin on Spring Street property, a half interest in Cienega Rancho and thousands of acres of the land of the Rancho de la Merced at Puente.

After a lapse of some days the bank reopened its doors, but confidence in it had been destroyed and its depositors withdrew their money from it. It was again forced to close and make an assignment to Daniel Freeman and E. F. Spence. Freeman was the largest landholder at Inglewood, and Spence was at that time cashier of the Commercial Bank, afterward the First National Bank of Los Angeles.

Money, however, became tighter here and throughout the country at large. The assets of the Temple and Workman Bank shrunk incredibly, and collections were very difficult to make. In time the mortgages on the property of Temple and Workman were foreclosed. There was no way of raising money to redeem these properties, and all of them passed to the assignees. Creditors became dissatisfied with the man-

agement of Freeman and Spence, and at last a petition in bankruptcy was filed in the United States District Court in San Francisco.

Only a small dividend was ever made to the creditors. It was the most disastrous financial failure that had ever occurred here, and the only Los Angeles bank failure of record. The same thing occurred in innumerable places throughout the United States at the same time and during years immediately succeeding.

## CHAPTER VII

### KALEIDOSCOPE OF THE YEARS

Looking backward and across the years at the growth of Los Angeles from the time it was a sleepy pueblo, until now when it stands as a world metropolis, beginning with the first real awakening in 1849, and coming down to the present day, it is as though one looked through a magical kaleidoscope.

The mere bare chronicle of the events of the past sixty-five years is in itself sufficiently thrilling without any attempt whatever at embellishment.

We have been at pains to make a running record of those events, not only for the information and satisfaction of the readers of this book, but also in order that the chronicle may be set forth and preserved for this and future generations.

And the chronicle runneth thus :

In 1849 the first steamer touched at San Pedro, the Gold Hunter, from San Francisco to Mazatlan. And in the same year Temple and Alexander put on the first four-wheeled vehicle transporting passengers between the harbor and Los Angeles.

Captain Banning arrived in Los Angeles in 1851. He established a rival landing at San Pedro, resulting in lively competition between the stages. No time was lost transferring passengers, or on the road. In fact the trips were veritable races, resulting in lively betting and much advertising for the winners. The trip was made in  $2\frac{1}{2}$  hours, four to six bronchos, harness primitive, fifteen passengers, driver of team half seas over, fare \$5. Teams changed at half-way house.

At this time native Mexicans and Indians were referred to as "Californians."

The only real hotel in Los Angeles in 1853 was the Bella Union, a one-story building of adobe. In 1858 it was en-

larged to two stories, on Main Street above Commercial, where all the stages stopped and all city functions took place.

In 1850 ordinances licensed gambling places, but forbade card playing on the street—no limit to saloons and gambling places, no regulations for their management. The most notorious resort was Nigger Alley (Calle de los Negros), a thoroughfare not over forty feet wide from Aliso Street to the Plaza—one solid block of saloons and gambling houses. Men and women both dealing and playing, human life was cheap and killings frequent, time lost from games resented;



“REAL” HOTEL OF TODAY ON LONG BEACH

dispatches were quick and soon forgotten; few disputes left to court arbitration. Twenty or thirty murders a month. Sonoratown, across the Plaza, was given over to dancing and carousing.

Main Street was then the principal street.

The aristocratic gambling house of the time was the Montgomery, conducted by W. C. or “Billy” Getman, sometime sheriff of Los Angeles County, drinks 25 cents, games for all classes, and a billiard hall where moneyed matches occurred. Tables and games also to accommodate small bettors.

In 1852-54, for the purpose of raising funds, the city-owned lands at reasonable distances were offered at \$1 per acre.

John G. Nichols (ex-mayor) was said to be the father of the first white child born in Los Angeles of strictly American parents—John Gregg Nichols, born April 24, 1851. Nichols was again mayor in 1856-57-58.

About this time "Hancock's Survey" of the city was made.

In 1854 Common Council permitted owners with abodes stranded to claim right of way to the nearest existing thoroughfare.

There were no graded streets or sidewalks. Discarded articles were simply thrown in the streets. Dead horses on the streets were not uncommon. There were no street lights, except from lights in front of individual stores and saloons. Night walkers used candles and lanterns.

The city and county both had official headquarters in a one-story adobe building on the northwest corner of Franklin Alley and Spring Street.

In 1853 Mayor Antonio Franco Coronel lived at Alameda and Seventh streets. Maj. Henry Hancock, lawyer and surveyor, came from New Hampshire to Los Angeles in 1852, and by 1853 had made the second survey of the city, defining the boundaries of the thirty-five-acre city lots. He was himself always land poor, but retained the La Brea Rancho, which he always thought would produce oil and is now owned by his son, Allan Hancock.

In 1853 George Hansen arrived. He was a surveyor and worked with Hancock. He was also a fine student and linguist, and the ownership of Elysian Park is due to his foresight.

In 1883 the Farmers and Merchants Bank moved to the southeast corner of Commercial and Main, ground formerly owned by Jose Mascarel, and bought from him by I. W. Hellman in the '70s.

Newman says: "In a store near the corner of Commercial and Main street, A. F. Hinchman, as administrator of the Temple Estate, sold 18 lots, each 120 by 330 feet, on Fort Street (Broadway), on the East and West sides, some running through the Spring, some to Hill, for \$1,050, 12 lots for \$50 each and 6 corners for \$75 each."

The hunting grounds for doves and quail in those days

was Main to Olive and Sixth to Pico. The community was so village like that the location of stores was not known by street numbers but by saying "opposite Bella Union," "near Mr. Temple's," "next express office," etc.

Stores frequently closed for few hours at midday while people took siestas or played billiards.

Carriages were scarce—travel was chiefly by saddle horse, or by native carretas (platform 5 by 8 feet or thereabouts), mounted on two wheels, wheels solid and sawed out of logs, much jolting, squeaking and general discomfort, used for general freight carrying also, and generally pulled by oxen.

San Bernardino County, which had been in 1853 cut off from Los Angeles County and colonized by Mormons from Salt Lake City, was at this time one of the chief sources of supply for poultry, dairy supplies, etc. Transportation to Los Angeles across the desert took three days. In summer this was disastrous to supplies, but prices were more than reasonable—eggs 15 cents a dozen, 50 cents a pair for chickens. San Bernardino was also the source of the lumber supply.

In 1851 the first newspaper was established in Los Angeles. It was a weekly, *La Estrella de Los Angeles*—*The Los Angeles Star*, printed half in Spanish and half in English. It had no telegraphic news, of course, containing only local items and occasional news from outside brought by mail. The uncertainty of the latter resulted in letters from San Francisco sometimes taking as long as six weeks to reach Los Angeles.

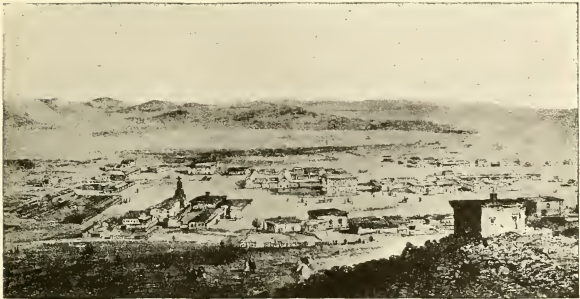
Gold was mined in the vicinity of Los Angeles this year, but not important in amount, the chief sources of the supply coming from the San Gabriel and San Francisquito canyons.

Protestants first established a chapel in Los Angeles in 1852. There were two cemeteries, one on Fort Hill and another on Buena Vista Street.

In 1853 there was a movement to provide public schools, though some sort of semi-private schooling had previously been provided, partly subsidized by city moneys. In 1854 the city still owned no school building of its own. Stephen C. Foster, then mayor of the city, was appointed also school

superintendent, and the first actual city school, a two-story brick building and known as School No. 1, was built on the northwest corner of Spring and Second streets, location later used for a city hall. It was where the Bryson Block now stands. This building cost \$6,000 and was opened on March 19, 1855. There were two teachers, one for boys and one for girls.

Wells, Fargo & Company seem to have established themselves here in the early '50s.



LOS ANGELES IN 1854 LOOKING EASTWARD

In 1854 the city depended almost entirely on "Zanjas"—open ditches—for its water supply, both irrigating and domestic. Some seven or eight main laterals connected to "Zanja Madre" or mother ditch, which in turn was fed from the river above the city for irrigating purposes. The "Zanjero"—water superintendent—issued permits, and the user paid a fee based on the time used without regard to quantity. For domestic purposes those who were near ditches helped themselves, others were supplied by a carrier at the rate of 50 cents a week for one bucket a day, more in proportion. This peddled water was mainly drawn from the river which was freely used by cattle, pigs, sheep, etc., and also as a bath-

ing place for both adults and children. It was also used by passengers and vehicles fording the river in the absence of bridges. There was supposed to be an ordinance against washing clothes in the river, but it was generally ignored by the native women.

In 1853 it was proposed that a pipe distributing system be installed, but it was not favorably considered.

In 1854 the first Masonic lodge received its charter. At this time smallpox was very prevalent, with epidemics about every two years.

When fires occurred a bucket brigade from the nearest zanja to the conflagration was the general method of procedure. Alarm consisted of a fusillade of pistol shots. On account of primitive methods, fire insurance was almost unobtainable. The first fire insurance known to have been written in Los Angeles was about the year 1858, at a rate of about  $\frac{1}{4}$  per cent for premium.

Metal money was in poor supply and much mixed. Much foreign coinage was used and freely exchanged irrespective of real relation of value. Mexican and United States dollars and French or Italian 5 franc pieces, and pieces of like size, were readily accepted everywhere as the equivalent of a dollar. The output of the gold placer mines was minted into slugs of various sizes and shapes by private circulation as coins for all purposes.

Money lending was immensely profitable. Rates were exorbitant, 10 per cent a week or more being not uncommon. We find in Newmark's "Sixty Years in Southern California" the following: "I recollect, for example, that the owner of several thousand acres of land borrowed \$200 at an interest charge of  $12\frac{1}{2}$  per cent for each week, from a resident of Los Angeles whose family is still prominent in California, and that when principal and interest amounted to \$22,000, the lender foreclosed and thus ingloriously came into possession of a magnificent property."

From this it may be inferred that the sky was the limit as far as interest rates were concerned.

The great social functions were "Fandangos," many of which were attended by the inhabitants of the ranches round



the city for long distances, the "carretas" bringing the guests who were often on the road all day to enable their occupants to indulge in the pleasure of the dance the same night. So popular did the "Fandango" become that the city fathers saw an opportunity to make money for the city out of it, and in 1861 passed an ordinance levying a tax of \$10 for a one-night license to hold a public dance in the city limits.

In the early '50s Los Angeles was the scene of the meeting of a very important body, the Board of Land Commissioners, appointed from Washington to settle land claims and prepare for the granting of patents to the various ranches and holdings heretofore held under varied titles. Often titles to the same land were vested in different people by the Mexican authorities. The Land Commission completed its work in 1855.

Another gold excitement in 1855 caused by discoveries in Kern County brought crowds of gold-seekers through Los Angeles who came from San Francisco and the north by way of San Pedro on their way to Kern County. Extravagant reports, for which there was no real basis, kept the stream of adventurers flowing through Los Angeles for a couple of years, but no rich finds were ever developed.

Besides regular travel by boat in the '50s, a regular stage line was established along the coast from San Francisco to San Diego, by way of San Jose, San Luis Obispo, Santa Barbara and Los Angeles.

In 1854 an appropriation was made by Congress for surveying and locating a public road between Los Angeles and Salt Lake City, through San Bernardino, which led to the establishment in 1855 of a pony express and then a stage line known as the "Great Salt Lake Express" from Los Angeles to Salt Lake.

Among favorite sports at this time was horse racing, fabulous stakes often being wagered in lands, cattle, sheep, etc., as well as in money; there were also bull and bear fights and cock fighting.

Earthquakes seem to have been of fairly common occurrence about this time, but on account of the large proportion of adobe houses—the most easily damaged—these disturbances

were probably more generally noticed and commented on than 'quakes of the same intensity would be now.

Wine making was one of the important industries. Primitive methods were used, the universal method of crushing grapes being foot power of Indians stripped to the skin with the exception of loin cloths.

Cattle raising was precarious because of the absence of irrigation methods and facilities; a hot spell with sandstorms often left thousands of dead cattle and sheep as a result.

In 1857 Los Angeles was made the point of departure for a



LOS ANGELES ABOUT 1857

filibustering expedition captained by Henry A. Crabb, a Stockton lawyer, the object being the invasion and conquest of the northern part of Sonora. The adventurers were led on by tales of fabulous riches. The expedition failed, and Crabb and party were captured and executed.

The following year banditry was common, carried on by Mexican outlaws. The formation of a vigilance committee and a committee of safety resulted in protecting the city and following the bandits to their strongholds. Many bandits were caught, given summary trial before assembled citizens, condemned, and hanged on a gallows on Fort Hill.

In 1857 the Sisters of Charity founded the first regular

hospital, the "Los Angeles Infirmary," at Bath and Alameda streets.

In this year also the first effort to make Los Angeles a citrus fruit center was made. Earlier attempts in a small way resulted in about 100 bearing orange trees in Los Angeles at that time. That year Will Wolfskill planted several thousand citrus trees inside what is now the City of Los Angeles. They thrived and yielded large crops, and others followed suit.

In 1858 excitement was caused in Los Angeles by the appearance through the streets of a herd of camels to be used for freighting between Los Angeles and Fort Tejon, part of a herd purchased for such uses in the desert stretches of the West. Even native camel drivers were imported from Egypt and Arabia to handle the beasts.

In 1858 business became brisker. Don Abel Stearns built the Arcadia Block, then one of the commercial marvels of the Southwest. It was elevated above the then grade of the street very considerably to avoid the overflow of the Los Angeles River.

About this time O. W. Childs entered into contract with the city to dig a zanja, not probably over one-third of a mile long, and to take his payment in land. The land in question took in most of the territory from Sixth to Twelfth streets, and Main to Figueroa. As it afterwards developed, Childs secured a principality in payment for a small ditch. But at the same time he considered this acreage of small value, and he distributed parts of it freely to relatives and charities. One block lying approximately on Sixth to Seventh and Broadway and Hill, he gave to the Roman Catholic Church, and later this was the site of Saint Vincent's College.

In 1857 a large tract acquired by Phineas Banning from Dominguez Brothers, north of San Pedro, started what was then known as "New San Pedro," and now Wilmington, and which took from the old San Pedro most of its shipping business. The new port was inaugurated on October 1, 1858. Banning also put into cultivation large acreage in that vicinity, putting down a large well with a steam pump for irrigating.

In 1859 the first effort seems to have been made to start a public library. A regular Library Association was organized and opened headquarters and reading rooms in the Arcadia Block. It acquired book collections, accepted contributions in books, periodicals, money, etc., but the library was not strictly public, the members being initiated on payment of a \$5 fee. It eventually failed for lack of patronage.

The year 1859 was exceptionally dry, with heat waves as late as October, followed in winter by excessive rains. On December 4th the worst rain ever known in Southern California occurred. Twelve inches were precipitated in one twenty-four hour period.

The year 1860 was notable for the institution of regular connections with the outside world by pony express, and some remarkable speed records for those days were made in delivering news. For example, in March, 1861, President Lincoln's inaugural address was delivered in Los Angeles in less than eight days from Washington. The report of the firing on Fort Sumter, some months later, took twelve days to reach Los Angeles.

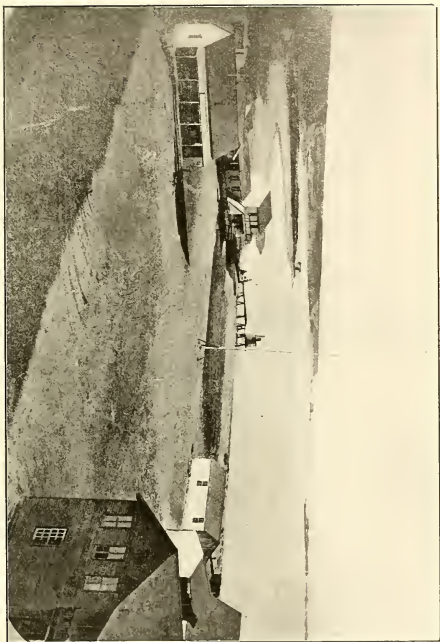
In 1860 the first effort to establish gas works and lay pipes for street and domestic lighting took place and the City Council entered into a contract for this purpose, but the effort fell through.

January 9, 1860, John G. Downey, the first governor of the state from Los Angeles, was inaugurated.

In 1860 Phineas Banning showed wonderful enterprise by purchasing in Leeds, England, and having shipped to San Francisco and then to San Pedro, a steam wagon said to have a capacity to pull a load of thirty or more tons over roads at five miles per hour. This was the big talk of the town at that time, and great hopes of better freight transportation were built up. The great wagon made some successful trips around San Francisco before being shipped down, but it was never able to negotiate the roads between San Pedro and Wilmington and Los Angeles, and the enterprise failed utterly.

In June, 1860, the Pacific and Atlantic Telegraph Company first approached citizens of Los Angeles with an offer to connect the city by telegraph with San Francisco. The stock

LOS ANGELES HARBOR IN 1858



was readily subscribed and work was commenced to make connection and extend a line east to Fort Yuma, but connection with San Francisco was not made until late in 1860, when the first messages were exchanged between Los Angeles and San Francisco.

As late as 1860 prisoners, especially Indians, were freely used on public works, waterworks, streets, etc., the public officials being authorized to use prisoners as needed.

In 1861 the city was much affected by the shadows cast by the secession of the southern states. The Los Angeles Mounted Rifles, part of a state force of some 5,000 men, was organized in March. When news of the firing on Sumter reached the city many southerners at once joined the Confederacy, amongst them being the famous Albert Sydney Johnston, then a citizen of Los Angeles, and at that time in command of the Department of the Pacific. He was succeeded by Gen. Edwin V. Sumner, and left for the South with about 100 men, via Yuma. He was later killed in the battle of Shiloh.

In February, 1861, the building of a railroad was first voted here, and a franchise was actually granted by state legislation May 17th, that year. Eastern capitalists asked \$100,000 subscription from Los Angeles County—\$50,000 from the city—but owing to conditions brought on by the Civil war, nothing further was done at that time.

August, 1861, Capt. Winfield Scott Hancock, who had much to do with keeping order in this part of California and who was one of the best known and most highly respected men in Southern California and a born fighter, left for the Union front accompanied by his wife, a southerner and natural sympathizer with the Confederacy. They sailed from San Pedro.

In 1861 the Government established barracks and a camp at Wilmington, called Drum Camp. Over \$1,000,000 was spent on the establishment, and it was a great help to the community in the way of supplies extensively drawn from Los Angeles and distributed to military posts all along the coast and in Arizona and New Mexico.

In 1861 the "Zanjero" was an exalted post, the salary paid being \$100 a month, while the mayor and city treasurer received only \$75 and \$50 respectively.



LOS ANGELES HARBOR IN 1860

About this time San Pedro and Wilmington were used quite extensively as fitting out posts for whalers. In 1862 and 1863 the effect of the war on currency was sharply felt in Los Angeles. Greenbacks depreciated sharply in value, fluctuating as good and bad news from the Union side percolated through, and at times falling as low as 35 cents value for the \$1 greenback in gold.

In April, 1863, one of the worst disasters ever affecting Los Angeles occurred. A small steamer, the *Ada Hancock*, belonging to Phineas Banning, while transporting passengers between Wilmington and the steamer *Senator* lying in the harbor preparatory to leaving for San Francisco, with its owner and fifty other passengers on board, blew up and was totally demolished. More than half the passengers perished, but the owner and the rest miraculously escaped. The catastrophe cast a pall over the city for many a day. Many of the dead were well-known citizens.

In 1863 there was a serious smallpox epidemic, especially fatal amongst Mexicans and Indians, from ten to a score of victims a day being not unusual. Panic conditions practically prevailed for a time.

In November, 1863, all citizens were formally registered with a view to picking out those who were able bodied and capable of military service.

The year 1864 was a hard one in Los Angeles. Uncertainty as to the outcome of the currency situation, and two dry winters immediately preceding, sent the price of provisions and supplies soaring. Fifteen dollars a barrel was paid for a poor grade of flour; 12 cents for red beans. These were enormous prices in those days.

News of the assassination of President Lincoln reached Los Angeles in 1865. It was received at first with considerably mixed feelings, Los Angeles having had all through the war a very strong element of southern sympathizers. But on April 17th the Common Council of the city passed a resolution of regret, and on the 19th, the day of the funeral, all business was suspended and appropriate ceremonies were held in front of the Arcadia Block. Shortly afterward Federal authorities, under orders from Washington, made several arrests of peo-



ple accused of rejoicing over or upholding the deed of assassination.

In the spring of 1865, Rt. Rev. Wm. Ingraham Kip, appointed some seven years previously bishop of California for the Episcopal Church, made his first visit to Los Angeles in that capacity, where there already was established the nucleus of that church here.

About May, 1865, one of the noted visitors to Los Angeles was Maj.-Gen. Irwin McDowell, formerly commander of the Army of the Potomac, but latterly in charge of the Department of the Pacific.

In 1865 the city inaugurated a policy of selling much of its public land in lots of about thirty-five acres at auction. Much land was sold at \$5 to \$10 an acre, and at that time an effort was made to sell the low lying area now known as Westlake Park. No bids were obtained, even at 25 cents an acre. This area lay unoccupied until when, in the late '80s, a number of landholders in the vicinity suggested making a lake and turning the area into a public recreation ground. This suggestion was adopted as the city policy during the regime of Mayor Workman.

In 1865 took place the beginning of a pipe distributing water system when the existing waterworks, zanjas, etc., were leased to private parties for operation, and they undertook to lay the first distributing pipes through the business section, pipes being pine logs bored and set end to end. These pipes were continually bursting, proving very unsatisfactory.

In 1865-66 the trade of Los Angeles began to expand considerably. Besides, there was opened a trade with Salt Lake and intervening points, extending as far as points in Idaho and Montana, some 1,400 miles, by teams.

1866. Those who had fought on both sides of the war began to return—former residents—also many making the trails to the West to begin life anew.

1866. Still opposition to railroads and especially to the much mooted proposition of the Los Angeles and San Pedro line, many of the rich and influential residents, especially of the ranchos, arguing that the railroads would do away with the horses and the market for barley, oats and feed.

The Government abandoned Drum Barracks. This was a real loss to the community, as it had done a very large business as a supply depot for Government troops and posts covering a large territory.

In 1867-68 began an important industry, namely, the harvesting of castor beans planted and growing wild along zanjas. For a long time the beans were shipped to San Francisco for extraction of oil. In 1867 a small mill was started in Los Angeles.

First laying of iron pipe for distribution of water, council contracting for some 5,000 feet of two-inch pipe, laying of which was completed in 1868.

In 1868 the city voted to lease the city waterworks for a term of thirty years for \$1,500 a year and the performance of certain stipulated terms. The original franchise holders then transferred their rights and privileges to a corporation known as the Los Angeles City Water Company, and although the franchise was vigorously fought by a section of the citizens, the water company won its fight to continue the franchise.

Ice, which had previously come from the San Bernardino Mountains, and was generally famous for lack of supply when most needed in the summer months, now began to arrive in regular shipments by boat from the Truckee River, and was distributed regularly by wagon from a central ice house on Main Street.

In 1868 J. A. Hayward of San Francisco and John G. Downey, with a capital of \$100,000, opened the first regular bank in the old Downey Block under the firm name of Hayward and Company, but the bank failed for lack of patronage. In July of the same year Hellman, Temple and Company, with a capital of \$125,000, opened a bank which was the real pioneer of the banking institutions of the city.

In 1868, on March 24th, the citizens voted on the long time fought over question of bonding city and county to help in the construction of the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad. The vote carried by a small majority, and on September 19th, the same year, first ground was broken for the railroad, work

starting from the Wilmington end, where about a mile of rails was laid by November.

In 1868 West Sixth Street was the most traveled highway connecting the outside country. It was used by overland stages, the Owens River Valley trade, etc.

It was in 1869 that Isaac Lankershim bought for \$115,000 the San Fernando Rancho, and with other San Francisco capitalists formed the San Fernando Farm Association, which Lankershim, afterwards associated with I. N. Van Nuys, farmed in a large way, some years later planting as much as 60,000 acres in wheat, much of which, on harvesting, was consigned to Liverpool. In 1881 the ship Parisian, from Wilmington to Liverpool, loaded with wheat and flour from this ranch, foundered at sea and was lost. Most of this large ranch is now incorporated as part of the City of Los Angeles.

One of the notable mining enterprises, with large bearing on the prosperity of Los Angeles, was the opening of the large Cerro Gordo lead and silver mines at Cerro Gordo, near Owens Lake, in the Owens Valley. Renee Nadeau undertook the difficult contract of transporting ore by large wagons and teams across the desert and San Fernando Mountains from the mines to Wilmington, where it was taken by boats to San Francisco and some to Swansea in Wales for treatment and smelting. These ore shipments became so large that the teaming of them became a wonderfully organized business, with headquarters in Los Angeles and stations built at intervals along the route to Owens Lake, the sites of many of the stations existing as posts along the way today, and the remains of others being still traceable though out of use for many a long year. These Cerro Gordo mines were by far the largest producers of silver and lead ores in California at that time.

In 1869, under Mayor Joel Turner, the Los Angeles Board of Education was organized, the forerunner of our modern school system.

May 10, 1869, was hailed as a red letter day in Los Angeles because of the completion of the Central Pacific Railroad by the driving of the historic gold spike at Promontory Point in Utah. Although it gave Los Angeles no direct rail connec-

tion, it helped the connection between East and West and held out hope of direct railway connection in the near future.

In 1869 telegraph rates from Los Angeles to San Francisco were \$1.50 for ten words, and 50 cents for additional five words.

Los Angeles in this year registered something over 2,400 voters.

On October 26, 1869, the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad officially opened for use of the public. Everyone was invited on the first day to a free ride to the harbor, with dedicatory ball held in the depot the same night. The depot was then on Alameda Street, corner of what was afterwards Commercial Street.

In 1870 all business activity of Los Angeles was centered on Los Angeles Street, north of First Street, and most of it on Main and Los Angeles streets. Spring Street was just beginning to show life, and an agitation that year was started on the question of "another street lamp for Spring Street," there being just one city light maintained on that street.

In 1870 the houses and stores of the city were numbered preparatory to compiling the first city directory, which made its appearance in 1871; 1870 also saw the construction of the first substantial bridge across the Los Angeles River, located where the Macy Street bridge now stands. Previous flimsy foot bridges had been carried away by winter floods many times, and this more pretentious bridge, built at an expense of about \$25,000, was itself broken up by floods some years later.

In 1870 also the first street sprinklers were operated on the city streets, the council allowing the operator to collect contributions from residents and stores along routes.

Late in the year 1870 a Frenchman, Lachenais, who had killed a neighbor named Bell in a quarrel over water, for a time escaped penalty, but by dropping an indiscreet remark the crime was traced to him and the Vigilance Committee hanged him. Some months afterwards the presiding judge charged the grand jury to indict leaders of a lynching mob, but the grand jury replied that if the law had previously been faithfully executed such incidents would be unnecessary, and refused to take any steps to bring the lynchers to the bar.

In 1871 the two original banking institutions in which Hellman and Downey dominated, were consolidated, under the name of the Farmers and Merchants Bank, with a capital of half a million dollars, 25 per cent of which was called in at the start.

This year also witnessed the first attempt to form a Los Angeles Board of Trade, the forerunner of the present Chamber of Commerce, and although organization was effected, internal quarrels killed the institution and it soon died.

In 1871 the first steps were taken by the U. S. Government to improve the harbor at Wilmington and San Pedro. A



CORNER OF PALISADE PARK, SANTA MONICA

breakwater was built between Dead Man's Island and Rattlesnake Island.

In the same year the Southern District Agricultural Society was organized, L. J. Rose, J. G. Downey and others being prominent figures in its inception. This society did much all through the city's history to promote agriculture and stock raising, and held annual exhibitions and trotting and running races.

In 1871 Santa Monica first began to attract attention as a seaside resort for the tired city man, the part of the beach then most favored being at the mouth of Santa Monica Canyon, on the banks of which were the few residences and tents then housing the inhabitants.

Also in this year, summer excursions to Santa Catalina

by way of Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad to Wilmington and boat to the island became first popular with a limited number of people in Los Angeles. Occasional specially advertised excursions were run over, and even a carrier pigeon service to Catalina was inaugurated in this year, the birds taking about an hour to cross to or from the mainland. Racing of these pigeons by rival owners was a popular sport, and one bird in that year is recorded as making the trip in fifty minutes.

In October, 1871, occurred the first recorded Chinese riot in the city. It started by fighting between rival Chinese factions during which a police officer was wounded and a citizen killed. Citizens roused and attacked Chinese indiscriminately, resulting in the death by hanging and shooting of some nineteen Chinamen, and an attempt was made to burn the whole Chinese quarter. Little punishment ever was meted out to the rioters, but the Chinese government protested to the United States Government and finally obtained a considerable indemnity.

In 1871-2 an immense wool boom struck the country. Wool which had previously brought 10 cents a pound was bid up in Los Angeles to 45 cents and even 50 cents per pound for dirty wool in the grease, just as it came from the clip, and many large crops were bought at these figures after the first offerings had been successfully disposed of in the East at a profit, but on the later large shipments sales failed to materialize and large consignments were stored in Boston, much of it being sold there in 1872 at 15 and 16 cents a pound, and many large consignments were lost in the great Boston fire of that year. This wool craze meant very severe losses for many of the large Los Angeles merchants. It materially crippled many of them.

In 1872 the first steps were taken to insure the extension of the Southern Pacific Railroad, then building down the San Joaquin Valley, through the Tehachapi Mountains and to Los Angeles. Much of the old opposition to railroads in general still existed in the community, and it took a hard fight to carry the proposition, which contemplated county financial help, in an election by the voters. But the question eventually

carried by a good majority in November of that year, and the authorities were then in a position to negotiate the terms of a concession with Leland, Stanford, Collis P. Huntington and others in control of that railroad.

Fire protection had been agitated for many years, but without definite results, and only in 1873 was the first real Volunteer Fire Company organized by thirty-eight progressive citizens, who called their organization "the 38's," assessing themselves \$1 a month in membership fees for the privilege of dragging the one solitary hose cart owned by the organization through the dusty, uneven thoroughfares to the scene of all reported conflagrations.

In 1873 was organized the Board of Trade, of which the present Chamber of Commerce is a direct descendant. Incorporated in August of that year with an initial membership of about 100 merchants, bankers, etc., eleven directors, admission fee of \$5, and they seem to have tackled the job of boosting the city and its surrounding areas right from the jump with something of the vim and energy which have characterized the organization ever since. One of its first notable achievements seems to have been the securing from Congress of an appropriation for surveying and improving the harbor at San Pedro and Wilmington. Some few years later there was a pause in its activities due to discouragement caused by drouths, bank failures, etc., but it revived, and its work has been practically continuous since.

In 1873 operations were started in the first woolen mill by Barnard Brothers. Heretofore all wool raised in the country had been shipped out and woolen goods imported.

In December, 1873, came a package through Los Angeles from Washington, D. C., addressed to L. C. Tibbetts of Riverside containing two small orange trees originally received in Washington from Bahia, Brazil, to be grown and tested by Tibbetts for the information of the U. S. Agricultural Department. These turned out to be the two original orange trees from which has sprung the whole navel orange industry which has meant so much to Los Angeles and to all Southern California and, indeed, to all California.

In 1874 a bandit, Tibureio Vasquez, who had already had

a spectacular career in the northern end of the state, invaded the vicinity of Los Angeles with a few followers. Some daring holdups with enforced contributions, etc., resulted. The bandits kept the whole city and countryside stirred up, and posses sent out were outwitted time after time, but Vasquez was eventually corraled and captured with some of his followers, others escaping to the hills. He was turned over to the authorities of San Jose, where he was tried for murder, convicted and hanged early in 1875. The doings and capture of Vasquez were among the striking events of this period.

In 1874 the first street railroad was opened and operated in the city. It was built under a fifty-year franchise secured in 1869. It ran from the Plaza to Pearl (Figueroa) and Sixth streets, going by way of Main, Spring, First, Fort, Fourth, Hill, Fifth, Olive and Sixth. Rolling stock consisted of two one-horse cars, small platform, each end of single track with turn-out at the midway point. Often in winter, when mud was deep, the trip from one end of the line to the other consumed an hour. Waiting for a car was no joke, and one car was often forced to wait at the passing point many long weary minutes for the belated twin car from the other end. The driver was also conductor, and stops for passengers were by no means confined to street corners. Pick 'em up where you meet 'em—single fares 10 cents, 4 for 25 cents, 20 for \$1. Tickets supposed to be bought at one of two designated stores in town instead of paying fares on cars. Soon afterwards the Main Street line started from Temple Block to Washington Gardens, and this was extended shortly after to Jefferson and out Jefferson to Wesley (University) Avenue and Agricultural Park to accommodate the patrons of the race course. This was quite a pretentious bit of street railroad, but the equipment and mode of travel were much the same as on the earlier line. Not until 1887 were there any "early bird" cars running before 6 A. M., or "owl" cars operating after 10 P. M.

July, 1874, the Los Angeles County Bank was started with a capital of \$300,000. In 1878 the bank moved into the banking room vacated by the Temple and Workman bank after its failure.





OPENING OF FIRST ELECTRIC LINE (1885)

About this time Stephen M. White came to Los Angeles. He was elected district attorney in 1882, state senator in 1886, and became president of the Senate and then acting lieutenant governor. He was later elected U. S. Senator. As senator in Congress he took a decisive stand against C. P. Huntington in the matter of the selection of a site for the harbor for Los Angeles. The fight then made had a decisive influence when the final effort was made to locate the harbor at San Pedro. Senator White died on February 21, 1901. A statue to his memory, unveiled on December 11, 1908, stands today on the Broadway side of the county courthouse.

In January, 1875, the Commercial Bank was organized (five years later changed to the First National Bank). Most of the organizers of this bank were San Diego men, though L. J. Rose and two or three others were from Los Angeles. E. F. Spence was first cashier. J. M. Elliott, cashier in 1885, afterwards for so many years president.

In April, 1875, E. J. (Lucky) Baldwin bought the Santa Anita Rancho, having just sold his large interest in the Ophir mines of the Comstock for a sum reputed to be over \$5,000,000. The price then paid by him for the ranch was \$200,000.

In June, 1875, J. A. Graves, a young attorney, came to Los Angeles and practiced law by himself and in partnership with other well-known attorneys for many years. He operated the first typewriter used in this city. In 1903 he became vice president of the Farmers and Merchants National Bank, and is now its president.

California enjoyed wonderful prosperity in 1875. The influence of the riches of the Comstock mines, though mainly affecting San Francisco, extended also to Los Angeles. The natural resources of Southern California were gradually being uncovered and developed, and much subdivision of large tracts in the vicinity of the city was being undertaken and many little outlying towns and settlements were now getting their start.

The wonderful prosperity of San Francisco at this time was primarily due to the immense riches being shipped there from the Comstock mines. All San Francisco was living in a financial elysium. Speculation was rife and everybody took

a hand. One of the chief factors in keeping up this state of things in the northern city was W. C. Ralston, then president of the Bank of California, who was freely lending the vast resources of that institution for speculative purposes, entirely regardless of recognized banking principles. His example was an incitement to others until all San Francisco was in a mad financial whirl. Naturally, this state of affairs could not continue, and the inevitable happened. In October, 1875, the Bank of California closed its doors, and a few days later Ralston was drowned at North Beach, whether by accident or suicide has never been definitely determined. As a direct result of this, the Temple and Workman Bank of Los Angeles suspended. The greatest depression overtook business, and the bottom seemed to drop out of everything. The bank had ample resources, but its assets could not be quickly realized on under the panic conditions which existed. Under the circumstances E. J. Baldwin, recognized at the time as the big individual ready money source of Southern California, was applied to as most likely to be able to tide over the bank. He proved willing to advance \$210,000 in consideration of a blanket mortgage on the real estate holdings of Temple and Workman, to which was to be added a mortgage on some 2,200 acres of land owned by one Mattias Sanchez, an intimate friend of Temple and Workman. This was finally agreed to, but proved only a temporary expedient, the mortgages eventually being foreclosed in Baldwin's favor. Temple died practically penniless, Workman soon passed away, and Sanchez died practically ruined.

Regarding the domestic gas supply. In the early days of the supply the rate was \$10 per 1,000 cubic feet. There was great rejoicing among householders when this was twice decreased to \$7.50 and then to \$6.75. But in 1876 citizens grew restive under these charges and a threatened boycott was resorted to unless charges were again reduced, which they were, as a result, to \$6 a thousand.

On Sunday, April 9, 1876, the Cathedral of Santa Vibiana, commenced in 1871, was first opened for public services.

In September, 1876, was completed a piece of engineering work which has meant much to the City of Los Angeles,

namely, the long tunnel of the Southern Pacific Railroad Company through the San Fernando Mountains, length 6,940 feet. The need of this tunnel had been the main obstacle in the way of making the Southern Pacific Railroad connection from San Francisco and Sacramento to Los Angeles. Great was the rejoicing over the completion of this tunnel and the later extension through it and to Los Angeles of the railroad. It was not long before much dissatisfaction was voiced regarding the arbitrary methods used by the railroad in handling the business to and from the city, there being no railroad commission existing in those days, the governing rule of the freight and passenger departments seemed to be "all that traffic would bear."

An unprecedented dry season in 1876-77 almost totally destroyed the then existing large sheep industry of Southern California.

The years 1877-80 were hard and a dull business period prevailed. It gradually gave place to more substantial conditions. It was in 1877 that William Mulholland, since famous as builder of the aqueduct, became first connected with the Los Angeles Water Company.

In 1879 I. N. Van Nuys acquired the site of the present Van Nuys Building at Seventh and Spring streets for approximately \$7,000, there being on the lots at the time a house said to have been alone worth the amount.

In 1879 some 400 acres of land were donated by several public spirited citizens for the purpose of starting a Methodist college, and in 1880 the first building of the college was completed on Wesley Avenue. This institution has since developed into the University of Southern California.

Business, which until this time had clung close to the vicinity of the Plaza, began in the early '80s to definitely creep southward, having at this time reached almost to Second Street. The Baker Block at North Main and Arcadia was still the central building and business pivot of the town. The first cement pavement was laid at this time on North Main Street and round the Temple Block.

In 1880 came Albert Kinney.

In 1881 a definite effort was made to bring about the par-



RELICS OF THE OLDEN DAYS

Upper: The Plaza Mission. Lower: Workman's Ranches

tition of California into two distinct states, Northern and Southern California, and a convention was formally called which met on September 8, 1881. Although the prevailing opinion was that state division was inevitable, the convention finally came to the conclusion that the time to bring it about was not propitious.

In 1881 Los Angeles celebrated her centenary. Population, 12,000. The well-known business of Hamburger's was established here in 1881 under the name of A. Hamburger and Sons, for a time located on Main Street near Requena, afterwards occupying the Phillips Block at Spring and Franklin streets specially built for them, finally moving in 1908 to their present quarters on Broadway and Eighth Street.

On December 4, 1881, the Daily Times was first issued, six days a week.

In the winter of 1881 Helen Hunt Jackson came to Los Angeles as an incident in her exploration of the Southwest in search of facts pertaining to the Indians, and on leaving Southern California she did much to bring about a realization of its charm and beauty through articles published in the Century Magazine.

In 1882 the first telephones in Los Angeles.

In the same year Col. Harrison Gray Otis joined forces with the then publishers and became manager of the Daily Times and the Weekly Mirror.

Beni Nadeau, after purchasing the southeast corner of First and Spring streets, erected on the site the Hotel Nadeau, notable as the first four-story structure in the city and a thoroughly up-to-date hostelry, for many years after the social and business center of Los Angeles.

In Newmark's History is found the following: "In 1882, F. H. Howland, representing the Brush Electric Lighting Company, made an energetic canvass in Los Angeles for the introduction of the electric light; and by the end of the third week in August forty or more arc lamps had been ordered by business houses and private individuals. He soon proposed to light the city by seven towers or spliced masts—each about 150 feet high—to be erected within an area bounded by the Plaza, Seventh, Charity and Main streets. The seven masts



LOS ANGELES IN THE '80S  
Upper View Centers in Old Court House

were to cast \$7,000 a year, or somewhat more than was then being paid for gas. This proposition was accepted by the council, popular opinion being that it was 'the best advertisement that Los Angeles could have'; and when Howland, a week later, offered to add three or four masts, there was considerable satisfaction that Los Angeles was to be brought into the line of progress. On the evening of December 31, the city was first lighted by electricity, when Mayor Toberman touched the button that turned on the mysterious current. Howland was opposed by the gas company and by many who advanced the most ridiculous objections. Electric light, it was claimed, attracted bugs, contributed to blindness and had a bad effect on ladies' complexions!"

In May, 1883, the Los Angeles Board of Education sold the northwest corner of Spring and Second streets, 120 by 125, to the city for \$31,000, the city using the inside 60 feet on which to erect a municipal building, and during the big boom in 1887 sold a corner 60 feet to John Bryson, senior, for \$120,000. The Board of Education, in turn, out of the money received from the sale to the city, bought a strip of land between Fifth and Sixth streets running through Broadway to Spring, with a frontage of 120 feet on each street, paying for the strip \$12,500. This strip is now known as Mercantile Place and is at the present writing being sold by the Board of Education at the reported price of about \$1,000,000. It can be seen that these two separate agencies of the city have taken full advantage of the respective good times to feather their nests for the advantage of the city.

August 22, 1883, ordinance passed creating Elysian Park.

The citrus industry, which meant and still means so much to Southern California and Los Angeles, developed steadily up to the middle '80s, when scale troubles developed to such an alarming extent that the whole industry took a slump. Science had failed to find a remedy for the devastating scale, and hope of the survival of the industry was almost given up until the importation in 1889 of the insect commonly known as the "lady-bug." This effective little enemy of the scale was brought from Australia under the auspices of the United States Department of Agriculture, and after being cultivated

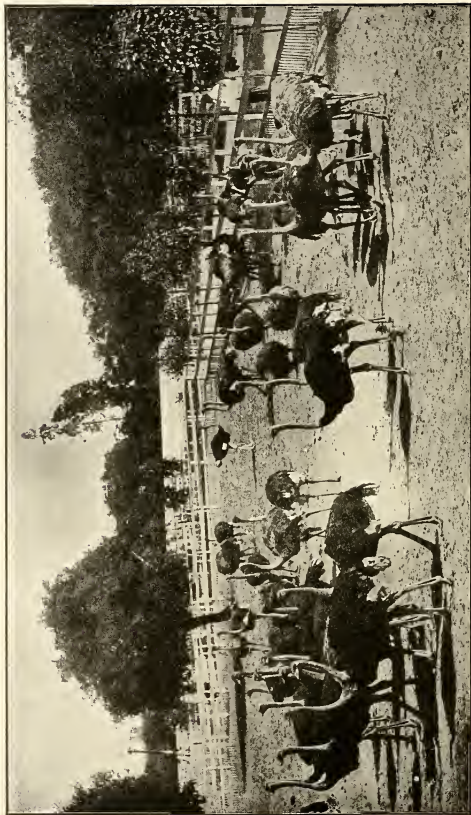


in the laboratories and distributed to the ranches, so quickly and efficiently performed its duty on the scale that hope among the citrus growers quickly revived, and this little insect has proved to be worth millions of dollars to Southern California, and is today one of the best friends of the Southwest.

One of the institutions at this time having its effect on the physical and social life of the city was the Los Angeles Athletic Club, first organized in 1879, and now a fast growing institution.

In 1884 Los Angeles installed its first street car line under the cable system, and in 1885 showed further progress by initiating the first electric street car line. About the same time the first ostrich farm was opened in the neighborhood or what is now Tropic. But the birds were kept more as a show and amusement feature than for the raising of feathers. However, in 1887, Edwin Cawston started a really commercial venture in the growing of ostrich plumes, importing his birds from South Africa. And though many of the birds were lost by death on the long journey, he contrived to land some forty in Los Angeles which formed the nucleus of the well-known Cawston Ostrich Farm, which was located at various places in the city from time to time and finally settled permanently at a site between Los Angeles and Pasadena.

On November 25, 1885, the Santa Fe Railroad ran its first train into the City of Los Angeles. Its own line was not then completed, but it made temporary arrangements to use the tracks of the Southern Pacific Railroad from San Bernardino. This gave Los Angeles two direct railroad connections with the East, and competition becoming keen, a rate war developed as a natural consequence. This rate war was far reaching in its consequence. In the struggle for passenger business in 1886-87 the competing roads bid against one another so keenly for passenger business that round trip tickets from Chicago and Missouri River points to Los Angeles could be bought for as low as \$15, and many tales by residents of the city of that date lead to the belief that still deeper cuts were made, and it has even been reported that at the high tide of the war passengers were persuaded to make the journey on one or the other of the roads without paying anything at all



CAWSTON'S OSTRICH FARM IN STILL LIFE

for the privilege. Some reports went so far as to say that the railroads in a few instances paid a slight bonus to obtain such passengers.

The result of all this competition for business was that large numbers of eastern people took advantage of the low rates to visit this district and were impressed with the country, its climate and possibilities, and looked round for an opportunity to make a temporary investment of a large or small amount.

This started what is generally known as the "Big Boom" of Southern California, which developed into a veritable craze—a mania of speculation. It made of staid business men spec-tacular promoters, created millionaires by the dozen, and generally created fictitious values which, after the bursting of the bubble, left a train of disastrous conditions which it took many a long year to correct. It was not only Los Angeles, but all of Southern California, that was affected by this real estate boom. Acreage was bought by the promoter, subdivided and laid out over night in lots irrespective of any natural demand for a town or community at that particular place, and when the lots were placed on the market they were eagerly snapped up by the so-called investor and by the man who depended on the boom conditions to give him a large profit by a re-sale of his lot within a short time.

Relics of these old boom subdivisions are to be met with all over Southern California. Some of the communities were entirely abandoned and have gone back into wheat and barley fields, some still existing as little villages for whose existence there is no particular necessity, and where lots can be bought today for less than the price at which they changed hands in the boom days of 1887.

As an example of the rapid advance in rents caused by the demand for real estate offices during the boom, this extract taken from Guinn's "History of California" will serve as an illustration:

"An old one story wooden building on Spring street, south of First, that before the boom might have brought its owner a rental of \$50 per month, was subdivided into stalls after the usual method and rented at from \$75 to \$150 per month



MAIN STREET IN THE '80s LOOKING NORTH AND NORTHEAST

for each stall, prices varying as you receded from the front entrance. The rental of the building paid the landlord an income of about \$1,000 a month. The building was so out of repair that the enterprising boomers who occupied it during a rain storm were compelled to hold umbrellas over themselves and their customers while negotiating a deal in climate and corner lots."

Such a boom had to run its course and quickly attain its inevitable end, and by 1888 the real estate speculator for the buying end of a deal was a *raris avis*. Many were the predictions of dire disaster as to the future of the city from the pessimistically inclined. However, more than the bursting of the boom was necessary to kill a city of destiny, and although the city and the whole surrounding country suffered for many a long year from the results of ill-advised speculation, the injury was in no way permanent. In fact, one good resulted. In 1888-9 building materials being cheap, the owners of real estate in the city who had bought during the boom at high prices, conceived it to be their best business policy to build on their investments in order to create an income, and this resulted in a building boom, in those years, of considerable magnitude.

During the railroad rate war, freight rates tumbled as well as passenger rates and there are authentic instances of shipments from Chicago of coal at \$1 per ton. A carload of willow ware from New York with a freight bill for the car of \$8.35. Of a train of Liverpool salt shipped from New York at 60 cents a ton.

Prof. T. S. C. Lowe, later a well-known figure in Los Angeles and formerly with the balloon section of the Union Army during the Civil war, startled the city in the late '80s by making the claim that he could manufacture gas from water at a cost said to be about 10 cents per 1,000 cubic feet, and distribute the same at a cost to the merchants and householders of a dollar per thousand or less. Although the existing gas company had by that time reduced its price to \$1.50 per thousand feet, the prospective price of \$1 and the profits to be made at that figure was a temptation not to be resisted, and a franchise was obtained, pipes laid, and a manufacturing



SOUTHERN CALIFORNIA BUNGALOW COURT

plant established and gas produced. But the cost of production turned out to be more than a dollar per thousand, the advertised selling price. This company and its business were eventually absorbed by the Los Angeles Gas Company.

Also in the late '80s Senator Stanford and the Southern Pacific officials completed with the city the long-discussed details of the promised Central Southern Pacific Station, and built what was then and afterwards known as the Arcade Station, on a part of the Wolfskill tract facing on Alameda, between Fourth and Fifth streets, on practically the site now occupied by that company's main station.

In 1887 the original Occidental College was established by a group of Presbyterian clergymen on donated land; the main college building being completed in the following year and destroyed by fire in 1896. At this period of the city's history there seemed to have been great liberality on the part of citizens in the matter of donating lands for any worthy object. In the same year Santa Catalina Island was sold to an English syndicate to be developed for its minerals, but mineral values failing to develop, as anticipated, the English syndicate refused to complete the deal, and in 1892 finally dropped any claim to the island.

Further contributing factors to the 1887 "Boom," now famous in history, was the wide advertising of Southern California, its climate and products at the Centennial Exposition held in Philadelphia, and the continued advertising efforts of the Board of Trade and the Chamber of Commerce.

Office hours of the boom real estate agents were by no means confined to daylight, but offices were open and busy far into the night. Properties frequently changed hands at advanced prices several times in twenty-four hours.

It is not to be supposed that all the mushroom towns laid out by the promoters in this period were failures, as many of the now prosperous smaller towns in Southern California are the result of locations planted in that year. But many of the centers that were started utterly collapsed and the companies operating them failed miserably. Where such companies had issued clear titles to lots bought for cash and the large acreage eventually reverted to its original owners

because of failure of the company, these small deeded lots scattered through the acreage remained for many years a matter hard to clear up. In many instances a cement contractor had got in touch with a lot owner and persuaded him to have a cement sidewalk laid in front of his lot as an added feature to his holdings. When the acreage reverted to farm land again a 25 or 50 foot section of cement sidewalk was not an uncommon sight in the middle of a wheatfield.

On the day when a new subdivision was to be put on the market the promoters would organize processions headed by bands of doubtful quality, and would arrange an immense barbecue on the lands to which all were invited, and every method of advertising, honest and dishonest, were employed, to make a quick clean-up sale of the subdivision. When the opening sale of what was considered a particularly desirable subdivision was announced, lines would frequently be formed in front of the office two or three days in advance of the opening day, so eager was the rush to obtain choice locations and desirable corners. The men paid to hold the places in these lines often received large fees for their services, it being cited that \$100 as a fee for such service was not uncommon.

So greedy for large profits were many of the operating syndicates that frequently chances for large fortunes were turned down in the expectation of larger offers.

The schemes evolved to boost the selling of the various tracts were so numerous and so shady that there is hardly any scheme that the mind of man can conceive that was not broached and put into operation at that time. As an instance of what the boom was doing on three separate days near its crest the real estate transfers were valued at \$660,000, \$730,000 and \$930,000.

Mental poise was conspicuous by its absence; capitalists on paper were as thick as bees; millionaires of a day were mixing with the crowds in ever-increasing numbers. Boom values do not seem to have increased in anything like the same proportions in the business and near-in sections of town as they did in the outlying districts, and many investments





LOS ANGELES VIEWS IN THE EARLY '80S

Upper: South on Olive. Lower: First and Spring Streets, Looking  
Toward Temple Street

made at that time on inside property have since proved highly profitable to investors.

The Southern Pacific Railroad had formally inaugurated its through service on August 20, 1887, the first through trains in both directions meeting at Santa Barbara, where a fete was held.

In this year the first regular street was paved on Main Street. Prior to that time streets had been natural dirt tracks.

In November of this year public-spirited citizens donated to the United States Government some 600 acres between the city and the seat which was accepted by the Government as a site for a National Home for disabled volunteer soldiers. The grounds were at once laid out, and the first unit directed of what is not the Old Soldiers Home at Sawtelle. In May of 1888, a commission was chosen to draw up a new charter for the City of Los Angeles, and the result was finally confirmed by the Legislature of the state early in 1889.

Although the boom had been disastrous to the city in many ways, one cannot escape the conviction that it was the turning point between the existence of a village gone to sleep again and the beginning of a progressive, bustling city.

From 1888-90 building was active, paving of streets progressing, sewer systems extended all over the business district and out to Tenth Street, and then through large bond issues, was projected to cover the whole residence sections of the city. The new City Hall on South Broadway and the County Courthouse on the hill on North Broadway were both started at this time. The street car railways were consolidated and a cable system covering a large area of the city inaugurated. In 1890 an electric street car system was built which was eventually to gobble up the cable system and give the city an entirely electric service. However, the last horse car did not disappear from the city until 1897.

In 1888 people were buoyed up by the prospect of a new transcontinental railroad from Salt Lake City, supposed to be in connection with the Union Pacific. A franchise was secured and the railroad was built south from Salt Lake City through Utah, but connection was never completed. The



LOS ANGELES THIRTY YEARS AGO AND TODAY

Upper View: West on Sixth Street from Main, in the late '80s.  
Lower: Same View in 1920

unused franchise along the east bank of the Los Angeles River was taken up by other parties and a system completed in 1891 between Pasadena and San Pedro through Los Angeles, the system being called the Terminal. This system was bought in 1900 by Senator W. A. Clark, who used it as the nucleus for the now existing "Salt Lake Railroad."

In 1889-90 the moral aspects of the city seem to have been more carefully considered—gambling houses were closed, saloons compelled by ordinance to close on Sunday, and it



THE A. W. FRANCISCO PLACE AT NINTH AND FIGUEROA STREET

generally came to be recognized that the future prosperity of the city and decent moral standards must run hand in hand.

In 1888 the subject of state division was again raised, but enthusiasm seemed to have died down and it received little support in the southern end of the state. It was in 1888 that the widening of Fort Street from Second to Ninth streets was inaugurated, causing the change of name of that street to Broadway. Much opposition was shown at the time to widening the street because of the lack of vision of the requirements of the future city.

The Santa Fe Railroad branch connecting Los Angeles with San Diego was completed and opened in 1891.

On January 1, 1889, the first annual Pasadena Rose Tournament was held.

In 1889 the southern half of Los Angeles County was authorized to split from the mother country and Orange County founded. This split had been advocated for many years chiefly on the ground that Los Angeles, the county seat, was too far away from many of the outlying sections of the county.

As a result of the visit to Los Angeles and Southern California in 1890 of Charles Dudley Warner, then editor of Harpers' Magazine, the Harpers later published his book, "Our Italy"—an appreciation of Southern California, its climate, resources, etc., and a well drawn comparison between the Southern California country and countries with similar climatic conditions in Southern Europe. The book caused much comment, especially in the East, and turned many eyes in the direction of Southern California.

In 1890-91 Hollenbeck Park was donated to the city by William H. Workman and Mrs. J. E. Hollenbeck in the proportion respectively of two-thirds and one-third. It was first suggested that the park be named the Workman-Hollenbeck Park, but the modesty of Mr. Workman insisted on the elimination of his name. About the same time Mrs. Hollenbeck donated ground and created a liberal endowment for the Hollenbeck Home for Aged People, almost adjoining the park on the west.

The Friday Morning Club, a women's organization and since a social force in the city, was organized in 1891, building its present club house in 1899.

In 1892 E. L. Doheny and others, prospecting for oil in the western residence section of the city at a depth of some 150 feet, struck the black fluid and started an oil excitement in the city which attained considerable proportions. Between then and the year 1900 some 1,300 oil wells were drilled within the city limits, and though none of them were large yielders individually, the aggregate oil output was very considerable. Development elsewhere in the state produced an overproduction which, together with other causes, started a rapid decline in the price of oil. In 1900 oil was \$1 a barrel,



OIL FIELD IN LOS ANGELES

and in 1904 it dropped to 15 cents a barrel. As is the case wherever oil excitement obtains, Los Angeles was afflicted with an overabundance of incorporated oil companies. Much irresponsible and fraudulent oil stock was sold. Much money was made and much was lost, and the losses largely fell on those least able to support it.

Showing that the general prosperity of the city was not overly affected by the hard times referred to, the following table of bank clearings for the years indicated are instructive: 1892, \$39,000,000 (year before the panic); 1893, \$45,000,000; 1894, \$44,000,000; 1895, \$57,000,000; 1896, \$61,000,000.

In 1894 the Chamber of Commerce moved its headquarters and permanent exhibit to Fourth and Broadway, from which a most active campaign for the building up of Los Angeles and Southern California in general was conducted. Later the Chamber of Commerce moved to its present location on Broadway between First and Second streets in a building specially erected for its use. In 1892-93 the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce was the leading factor in exploiting Southern California at the great Columbian Exposition in Chicago.

1892-96 witnessed a brisk fight for appropriation from Congress to locate and start the harbor.

The Belgian hare craze struck Los Angeles in the late '90s. An impression got abroad that Belgian hare meat was superior to anything else and that it could be turned out at a small proportion of the cost of other meats. As the impression grew, everyone started the industry in his back yard. From the growing of hares for meat to the raising of fancy stock for breeding purposes was the next step, and fancy rabbits quoted at \$100 to \$1,000 each were thick all over town, and a common topic of conversation.

The impression prevailed that it was impossible for the supply to outrun the demand, as there was supposed to be a world market for all that could be produced, but it was only a comparatively short time until the supply was superabundant and the demand practically nil. Thus the craze dropped from sight and into history.

In 1892 Prof. T. S. C. Lowe, previously referred to in



connection with gas enterprises, began the building of a railroad up a mountain back of Pasadena, afterwards and since known as Mount Lowe. The road was formally opened to the public in 1893, and in 1894 the Mount Lowe Astronomical Observatory was built.

In 1894 Los Angeles was suffering from depression caused by the panic depressions of the previous year, and was casting round for a method of overcoming general apathy,



THE ASTRONOMICAL OBSERVATORY

and hit upon the plan of holding an annual event in the spring to be known as "La Fiesta de Los Angeles." The Fiesta was in the nature of a general carnival, with processions, decorations and the general carnival spirit in evidence. And, as an annual event, it did much to center attention on the city from the outside and to keep the spirit of co-operation alive within the city itself.

In 1894 the Ebell Club was organized.

In 1896 Gen. M. H. Sherman and E. P. Clark, brothers-in-law, laid the foundation of the present unequalled electric interurban car system enjoyed by Los Angeles. In that year the whole steam railroad was electricized between Los Angeles and Santa Monica and building was started on an electric road to Pasadena. The system of electric interurban



transportation then started by these men has been increased until it covers points in Southern California as much as eighty miles out from the city.

In this same year Arthur Letts, with only a few hundred dollars, bought a small bankrupt stock of goods, located his store at the corner of Fourth and Broadway and so started the career which has meant so much in the upbuilding of the modern Los Angeles.

In 1896 Griffith Park was presented to the city by Col.



MAIN STREET LOOKING NORTH IN 1898

Griffith J. Griffith, an expanse of over 3,000 acres, one of the most magnificent gifts ever presented to a city by an individual.

In 1898-99 came the Spanish-American war, in which citizens of Los Angeles bore their full share. Col. Harrison Gray Otis of the Los Angeles Times was appointed brigadier general of the United States Volunteers by President McKinley and was given an important command in the Philippines.

In 1899, after a year or more of negotiation, the city entered into an arrangement to buy the plant of the City Water

Company, and, in August of that year, the question of issuing \$2,000,000 worth of bonds for the purchase and extension of the system, when submitted to the vote of the people, was carried overwhelmingly. The water works were taken over by the municipality under a commission of five appointed for its management.

For several years prior to 1908 various mercantile bodies of the city had been in constant dispute with the railroads, chiefly the Southern Pacific, on the matter of equalizing and adjusting rates to and from the San Joaquin Valley and contiguous territory, so that Los Angeles would have a fair chance of competing in mutual territory with San Francisco as a point of supply. Through the Railroad Commission very considerable concessions were secured, followed by still further reductions in 1910 and 1912.

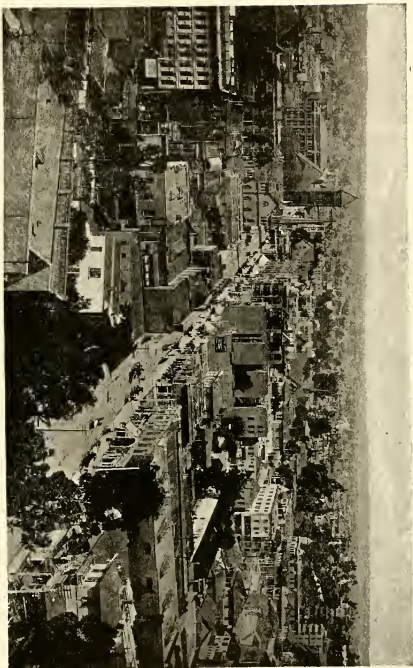
In the first years of the century Henry E. Huntington gradually began transferring his large interests from San Francisco to Los Angeles, and commenced the development of interurban electric systems. In 1902 he completed the road to Long Beach, and in 1903 to Monrovia and Whittier. In latter years he erected the building at Sixth and Main streets, known as the Huntington or Pacific Electric Building, the ground floor of which was designed as a Union Terminal for the various electric lines under his management.

In 1901, due to the growth of the western residence districts of the city, and to the obstacle presented by Bunker Hill, it became necessary to make a connection, and the first of the tunnels was constructed through that hill on Third Street.

In 1902 the first commercial wireless system out of Los Angeles was established between the city and Santa Catalina Island.

In 1903 a Southwest Society was founded as a branch of the Archaeological Institute of America, whose headquarters were in Boston, but rapidly outgrowing the parent organization in membership, it withdrew its affiliation in 1913 and devoted its entire energy and funds to the furtherance of the Southwest Museum which the society had founded in 1907.

In 1905 public spirited citizens, ashamed of the mean quarters occupied by the postoffice and Federal Building, sub-



LOS ANGELES IN 1900

scribed funds necessary to the purchase of the site now occupied by the Federal Building on Temple, Main and New High streets, and presented the same to the United States Government. An appropriation of \$800,000 by Congress was inadequate for the building designed, and it was not until 1907 that the difficulty was overcome by the sale of the old site at Main and Winston streets.

In 1905 the Los Angeles, San Pedro and Salt Lake Railroad was completed.

On October 1, 1910, the Times Building on First and Broadway was blown up by dynamite with criminal intent as the result of a conspiracy fomented by radical elements. Twenty-one lives were lost in the explosion, and the building and plant totally destroyed.

The foul deed created great excitement and the sensation which was country wide. The perpetrators of the crime were eventually run down and the two main perpetrators and some of their dupes convicted and sentenced.

In 1907 a comprehensive plan for civic betterment for the development of a civic center, widening of streets, and the foundation for a general city plan were drawn up by architect Charles Mulford Robinson, under appropriation authorized by the city for the purpose. So far this plan has not been carried out but is being considered in conjunction with other plans submitted by architects and city planning bodies, and no doubt a comprehensive system will be evolved on which the future growth of the city will be built.

In 1909 the "Shoestring Strip" connecting Los Angeles with San Pedro and Wilmington was annexed to the city, completing the consolidation of the city and its harbor.

The actual consolidation under one municipality of Los Angeles, San Pedro and Wilmington came up in 1909, a matter that called for a great deal of preliminary negotiation, during which Los Angeles pledged herself to obtain for the harbor districts equal freight advantages with the larger city, to spend specified amounts on harbor improvements, etc. The results of the actual elections for the annexation of Wilmington and San Pedro held on August 5 and 12, respectively, of that year, were large majorities in favor of consolidation.

Consolidation was joyfully hailed throughout all the districts of the enlarged city as a foretaste of the great development to be expected. The port became officially known as Los Angeles Harbor on February 13, 1910.

In 1909 litigation finally established title to the tract in the Southwestern part of the city known as Exposition Park as belonging to the State of California which, in that year, entered into a lease of the same to the city and county of Los Angeles for fifty years, and its development with a museum



BROADWAY LOOKING SOUTH FROM SIXTH STREET IN 1920

building, fine arts building and state armory was immediately planned and commenced.

In 1909 the city council created the first harbor board, and this action was confirmed at a popular election in 1911, when the board was definitely accepted as a regular part of the city organization under its charter. Members appointed for the first board were: Stoddard Jess, Thomas E. Gibbon and M. H. Newmark.

In 1911 wireless telegraph communication was established between Los Angeles and San Francisco and other points along the coast; and in 1912 with Honolulu. At first there was considerable difficulty in establishing regular communication with the latter, and it was necessary to send all mes-



ENTRANCE TO MUSEUM OF HISTORY, SCIENCE AND ART

sages to that point during the night hours, because of peculiar atmospheric conditions.

In November, 1913, the Museum of History, Science and Art was located in the new Exposition Park and formally dedicated.

Much has transpired since this last mentioned date, and the kaleidoscope of the years is still magical with the whirling colors of events that the future historian will set down for those who will then, as now, look backward with eyes of wonder upon the Wonder City of the West.

## CHAPTER VIII

### FROM THE SPANIARD TO THE AMERICAN

The events of the first seventy years of the existence of Los Angeles as a human habitation—that is to say, from the founding of the pueblo down to the time it really became an American city—cannot fail to be of interest, and certainly the events of the time that transpired between those two epochs is of vital historical importance. This book, or any other book with a similar purpose, failing to record these events, would fail of its object.

We shall proceed now to pass these events in review.

In 1781 a royal regulation or order authorizing the founding of the Pueblo of Los Angeles was formulated. The settlers and families were to be healthy, strong and of good character and to include a mason, blacksmith and carpenter obligated to remain for a term of ten years. Each settler was to get an allowance of \$116.50 a year for the first two years and \$60 for each of the next three years, sums to be paid in clothing and necessaries at cost; also two horses, two mares, two cows and a calf, two sheep, two goats, one yoke of oxen, a plow point, spade, hoe, axe, sickle, musket and leathern shield. Breeding animals to be supplied as community property, likewise forge, anvil, crowbars, spades, carpenters' tools, etc. Cost of articles to be charged against recipients and to be paid for at the end of five years in stock and supplies taken at market price for army consumption.

Within three years each settler was to have a good adobe house constructed and land cleared, and within five years to have a fair crop of wheat and corn growing, good farm equipment, chickens, etc. After five years the title to property to be more or less vested in occupant but without right to sell or mortgage.

No colonist was permitted to own over fifty head of cattle



in order to prevent monopoly. But this regulation was distinguished in the breach rather than in the observance.

The regulations in regard to real estate holding were modified somewhat, and in 1786 Jose Arguello, appointed by Governor Fages, authorized and did issue deeds for the house lots and to the farm lots to nine families, the net result of the original colonization after expulsions and additions.

The original pueblo contained four square leagues, or thirty-six square miles—laid out six miles square. Near the center was the Plaza, 275 by 180 feet, the surrounding lots 55 by 111 feet. Outside one-half mile from the Plaza farming lands each about seven acres were laid out and each settler was entitled to two of these with community right in the general area inside and out of the pueblo for pasturage.

The original Plaza lay approximately as follows: Beginning at what is now the southeastern corner of San Fernando an Upper Main, near the present site of the "Church of Our Lady of the Angels," along the eastern line of Upper Main Street nearly to Bellevue, thence across to the east line of New High Street, thence to the northern line of San Fernando, and thence to the place of beginning.

The first mayor (alcalde) was Jose Vanegas, 1788. Re-elected in 1796.

No known descendants of the first settlers are now in Los Angeles.

It was intended by Governor de Neve that settlers choose their own council and mayor, but for the first seven years no election was held and the pueblo was under a minor military official known as "Comisionado." The regulations required that within five years each settler have a substantial residence of adobe. The river was dammed at about Buena Vista Street Bridge to supply the "Zanja Madre," or main irrigation ditch, laid out to supply the fields with water.

In 1784 a chapel was constructed near the corner of Buena Vista and Bellevue Avenue. The first public structures were the town house, guard house and granary.

In the first six months Lara, a Spaniard, and Mesa and Quintary, negroes, were expelled with their families—sixteen

persons in all. Some years later Navarro, the tailor, was also expelled from the pueblo.

In 1785 Jose Francisco Sirova, a Californian, applied for admission, and was given original terms. Juan Jose Dominguez, Spaniard, also joined the colony, having been given a special land grant by Governor Fages. The grant was the San Pedro and Dominguez ranches.

By 1790 households had increased from 9 to 28, the population to 139. Up to 1788 there was much complaint against Corp. Vicente Felix, acting comisionado of the colony and arbiter of all disputes, resulting in the selection of an alcalde in that year—Jose Vangas, who had eight successors up to the year 1800, but during all of which time Felix remained the direct representative of the governor.

It appears that colonists managed only to grow supplies for their own use up to 1800, when we have first record of an "exportable surplus," the community in that year offering to outside buyers some 3,400 bushels of wheat at \$1.66 a bushel. The official price list issued by Governor Fages was as follows: Ox or cow, \$5; sheep, \$1 to \$2; chickens, 25 cents; mules, \$14 to \$20; well broken horses, \$9. The governor also attempted to arbitrarily fix the price of wheat at \$1.

In 1800 the population was 315, consisting of 70 families, and we already have records of the pueblo being recognized as a health resort, the custom being to send invalided soldiers from the various presidios to Los Angeles. In the census of 1790, out of eighty adults, nine were listed as over ninety years old.

We are to remember that this was 120 years ago, and that Los Angeles then had no school, with mail from Mexico only once a month, that foreign sea commerce was not allowed on the coast, that there were no sanitary provisions in the pueblo, no glass in the windows, and that each house lot contained its own slaughter house.

One of the great difficulties of successful colonization was a lack of a good class of women.

In 1784 there was a grant of the San Rafael Ranch to Jose Maria Verdugo. It was four leagues from Los Angeles. In the same year Juan Jose Dominguez was granted a tract

along the ocean at San Pedro and up an estuary one-half way to Los Angeles. In the same year also the Encina Ranch was granted to Francisco Reyes, rescinded in 1797, and then given to the Mission San Fernando.

The years 1800-1810 were peaceful and uneventful in Los Angeles. In the latter year the rebellion of Mexico against Spain was under way. By 1820 all America, except Cuba and some other islands, was lost to Spain.

During the decade from 1800 to 1810 the population of Los Angeles increased from 315 to 365, with no improvement in crops, and an actual decrease in cattle and sheep.

In 1805 the first known American ship arrived at San Pedro—the *Lelia Byrd*, engaged in contraband trade.

In 1806 a new agricultural impetus took place by growing hemp, which continued until 1810, when the market demand ceased and nearly brought disaster to growers.

During this decade disputes arose between the pueblo and San Fernando Mission authorities over the use of the water of the Los Angeles River. It was held by the governor that all the water of the river belonged to the colonists of the pueblo, and that if the dam constructed by the padres at Cahuenga interfered with the pueblo supply the dam must be removed.

In the Mexican rebellion, California sided with Spain against the rebels. The change came without bloodshed and was of seemingly little interest to the inhabitants of Los Angeles.

There were hard times between 1810 and 1820, caused chiefly by a suspension of payments from Spain for army and civil life in California. Spanish trading ships feared to visit the coast because of Mexican and South American privateers.

From 1810 to 1820 the population of Los Angeles doubled.

Holder of land grants in the vicinity of the pueblo were included in the population and were under its jurisdiction in local matters. There was a large birth rate due to easy living conditions on the ranches. The immigration from Mexico was of a poor stamp. The Mexican Republic introduced "transportation to the Californias" as a form of punishment for

heinous offenses. The people protested, and consequently the practice was never exercised on a large scale.

Land for cultivation was to be had at almost for the asking in Los Angeles, yet in 1816 nearly 50 per cent of the population was listed as landless. They were probably too listless to attempt cultivation.

The year 1815 was characterized by an excessive rainfall. The river left its bed and ran along San Fernando Street to Alameda, forming a new channel. In 1825 there was a still greater flood and the river returned to its original and present channel.

The year 1812 records the first work done on a permanent church; the cornerstone being laid in 1814. Its location was changed after the flood in 1815 to the present Plaza church. Actual building of the church commenced in 1818 upon a subscription of 500 cattle at \$5 a head to defray cost.

The governor took over the cattle to be used as army supplies, and agreed to include the construction of the church in his next year's expense budget, but owing to virtual bankruptcy of the territory, the governor's promise was not carried out. Later the padres subscribed seven barrels of brandy worth \$575. The church was still uncompleted in 1821, and again an appeal to the padres was made and more brandy subscribed, augmented by cash subscriptions by colonists all over the province. The church was dedicated December 8, 1822.

About this time, under the new regime in Mexico, California was entitled to a representative in the Mexican National Assembly, to be elected by a California legislative body. In this first Legislature of California, Los Angeles was represented by Jose Palomares, and in the following session by Jose Antonio Cabrillo also.

About the same time the local administration of Los Angeles also underwent some changes. It included the addition of a syndico, combination of treasurer and legal adviser, and a secretary, added to the already existing offices of alcalde and two regidores, making a body of five. This civil body then intimated to the governor that the authority of the comisionado might well be dispensed with, but the governor demurred.

The trouble was finally adjusted by the existing comisionado, one Guillermo Costa, being elected alcalde. Thus the two authorities amalgamated and the old order of things was never again used.

Troubles over municipal elections seemed prevalent about this time. In 1826 the election was ruled to have been illegal and was ordered held again.

During the period 1822 to 1847 California was a Mexican territory in which regular and several irregular governors of California reigned from period of from six months to six years. The whole territory was much disturbed by petty squabbles and local rebellions, the Pueblo of Los Angeles being a particular political storm-center, the birthplace of plots for the overthrow of governors, etc., due largely to the insistence of this pueblo that, as the largest in the territory, it was entitled to be made the capital in place of Monterey. In 1835 came an order from Mexico that the capital be moved from Monterey to Los Angeles, but the decree was not carried out until 1845.

In 1831 Governor Manuel Victoria, arrogant, cruel and hated, expelled two respected citizens of Los Angeles—Jose Antonio Cabrillo and Don Abel Stearns. This action caused a manifesto fathered by Pio Pico, Juan Bandidi and Jose Antonio Cabrillo of Los Angeles in which it was demanded that the people depose the governor. Revolutionary forces met and defeated Victoria and his following, and he was deported. Pio Pico was elected by the Legislature to serve as temporary governor.

In 1831 the population, according to Forbes, was about 1,400, and in the present area of Los Angeles County about 4,600.

Governor Jose Figueroa, best of all governors, was sent to California from Mexico, 1832-5.

In 1835 Governor Mariano Chico, perhaps the worst governor California ever had, was in power. During his term occurred the first record of a lynching of a white settler, the victim being a man who had eloped with the wife of a citizen named Felix, and who, on being followed, had turned on and killed Felix. Governor Chico was deposed by revolution.

In 1836-37 Juan Bautista Alvarado became governor by revolution and popular following, but was not recognized by Mexico, whereupon he announced himself to be governor of the "Free and Sovereign State of California." He was not backed by the citizens and, on the initiative of the ayuntamiento of Los Angeles, he was accepted only as governor until Mexico could appoint. Alvarado demurred, but finally accepted the Los Angeles demands.

In 1837 Carlos Antonio Cabrillo was appointed governor by Mexico, but Alvarado would not acknowledge him, and Carrillo, backed by a following raised in Los Angeles, was defeated by forces under Alvarado and abandoned his claim. Then Mexico recognized Alvarado.

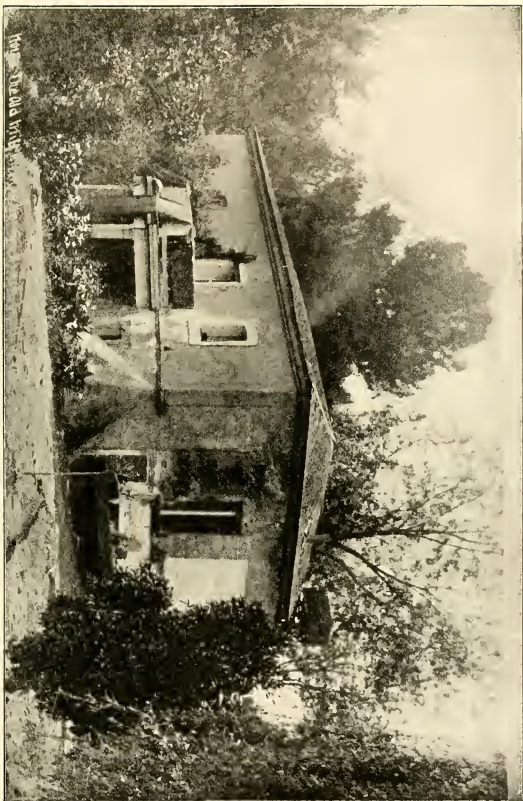
In 1842-45 Governor Emmanuel Micheltorena ruled by the brute force of his following of dissipated and cut-throat soldiers. A revolution against him under Alvarado resulted in a battle near Cahuenga, won by the revolutionary troops chiefly from Los Angeles, and Micheltorena was eliminated and deported. Pio Pico was one of the leaders of the revolution, under whom were many of the foreign residents of Los Angeles.

In 1845-47 Don Pio Pico went into history as the last governor under Mexico.

The first American to settle in the vicinity of Los Angeles was Joseph Chapman. He was first treated as a prisoner of war, but owing to his resourcefulness and ingenuity he was accepted as a citizen. He built the first successful water power grist mill for Padre Zalvidea of San Gabriel, and was also instrumental in framing the timbers for the Plaza Church. He constructed a schooner for the padres of San Gabriel Mission, to be used for otter hunting. It was constructed in sections, carried to San Pedro, assembled there and launched. Chapman died in 1849.

In 1829 came George Rice and John Temple, who opened a general merchandise store on the present site of the Federal Building, which was then the southern limit of the city. This partnership ceased in 1831, and Temple carried on the business alone until 1845.

In 1828 came Abel Stearns, known as "Don Merchault."



OLD MILL AT SAN GABRIEL MISSION

He erected, on the site of the Baker Block, a sumptuous home known as the "Palace of Don Abel Stearns." At his death he was the largest owner of property of value in the southern half of the state. His widow, formerly Arcadia Bandini, later married Col. R. S. Baker.

In 1831-35 considerable trade was established between California and New Mexico, of which trade Los Angeles was the center. Caravans arrived and departed from Los Angeles.

In 1830 we find no record of medical men or regular doctors, but medicines of various kinds were used and in more than alopatic doses. The priests were looked to for medical care by the inhabitants.

In 1841 came the first notable organized immigration party to Los Angeles. It consisted of forty members from Pennsylvania, many whose members afterwards became prominent here, among them being William Workman, B. D. Wilson and D. W. Alexander.

After the independence of Mexico a more liberal course was adopted towards foreigners. They were not encouraged, but tolerated. In consequence there commenced a larger infiltration of foreign blood and a greater use of imported merchandise.

In 1842 Commodore Catesby Jones, commander of Pacific squadron of the United States Navy, believing in a rumor of war between the United States and Mexico, took possession of Monterey on October 19, 1842. He hoisted the United States flag and declared all California a part of the United States, but learning of his mistake one day later, he hauled down the flag and retired. Governor Micheltorena, then on way north to Monterey, heard of the action of Commander Jones and retreated to Los Angeles and commenced to establish a defensive position on Fort Hill. News came of Jones' action at Monterey, and Micheltorena abandoned his warlike preparations and prepared to receive the American officer and accept the official apology which he was to tender.

In March, 1846, Capt. John C. Fremont came to California with a surveying party of sixty-two men and received permission of General Castro, commander-in-chief of the California military forces under Governor Pio Pico, to encamp in the



San Joaquin Valley, but this permission was almost immediately revoked by Castro, and Fremont was ordered to leave the country. Fremont refused and entrenched on "Hawk's Peak," thirty miles from Monterey. After a few days he broke camp and proceeded north towards Oregon.

In June, 1846, Captains Merritt and Ide, probably under orders from Fremont, seized the military post of Sonoma and there hoisted the "Bear Flag"—described as a sheet of cotton cloth, having a crude figure of a grizzly bear smeared thereon, the pigment used being berry juice—and proclaimed California an independent territory, freed from Mexico. Subsequent action of the American residents confirmed these acts. It was at this time also that Commodore Sloat seized Monterey, and that Commodore Stockton prepared to reduce the City of Los Angeles.

Meantime the American Congress—unknown to Fremont and his aides—had declared war against Mexico, and an expedition of upwards of 1,600 men under Gen. Stephen W. Kearney was already marching across the country in the direction of the Pacific.

With the object of seizing Los Angeles, Commodore Stockton organized a mounted corps with Fremont in command and Gillespie second, which force embarked on the sloop Cyane and left for San Diego with orders to co-operate with the commodore in his proposed plan for the seizure of Los Angeles. On August 1st Stockton sailed in the Congress and arrived off San Pedro on August 6th, after a short stop to take possession of Santa Barbara on his way down the coast. He arrived at San Pedro and learned that, under Generals Castro and Andres Pico, there was a hostile force near Los Angeles. He learned also that Fremont landed at San Diego but was unable to obtain horses and so was unable to join forces. However, Stockton, impressed by the necessity of quick action, landed about 400 sailors and marines and some six small guns from the ship and prepared for an advance by land. A few days after landing he was approached by a flag of truce from Castro. Stockton impressed the messenger with an exaggerated idea of his strength and sent them back in panic and a refusal of the terms. Two days later Castro sent

other messengers defying Stockton and the United States. They were again sent back by Stockton and the terms disregarded. On August 11th, after having previously dispatched messengers to Fremont at San Diego to join him, Stockton commenced his march on Los Angeles.

Approaching Los Angeles, couriers from Castro warned Stockton of his peril to approach nearer. Stockton replied: "Tell the General to have the bells ready at 8 o'clock, as I shall be there by that time;" and he was. Castro, though advantageously posted, with some 1,000 men and artillery, never fired a shot, disbanded forces and fled. The abandonment of the city by Governor Pico followed. Stockton tried to capture Pico, but without success. Castro fled to Sonora.

Fremont arrived August 15, 1846, when many prominent Californians surrendered. Don Jose Maria Flores and Don Andres Pico were paroled—not to bear arms against United States. Stockton issued a proclamation declaring California a territory of the United States, and organized a civil and military administration, himself as governor and commander-in-chief. He invited all citizens to meet September 15th and elect officers.

About this time, Stockton for the first time learned that war had been declared between the United States and Mexico, and he proceeded north to look after affairs there, leaving Lieutenant Gillespie with fifty men to form the Los Angeles garrison.

In those troubled times there was, of course, a great deal of bitterness and a great deal of angry talk. Both the American invaders and the Californians who were up in arms in the defense of their country issued frequent proclamations giving their sides of the case. It is not necessary to state the American side of the case. But, since the standpoint of the native people is not so well understood, we feel that it is no more than scant justice to them to set down here an expression of their thoughts. And we think we can do this in no better way than by reproducing the famous pronouncement of the renowned Gen. Jose Maria Flores, issued from his armed camp in the City of Los Angeles, September 24, 1846:

Fellow-Citizens:—It is a month and half that, by lamenta-

ble fatality, fruit of the cowardice and inability of the first authorities of the department, we behold ourselves subjected and oppressed by an insignificant force of adventurers of the United States of America, placing us in a worse condition than that of slaves.

They are dictating to us despotic and arbitrary laws, and loading us with contributions and onerous burdens which have for an object the ruin of our industry and agriculture, and to force us to abandon our property to be possessed and divided among themselves.

And shall we be capable to allow ourselves to be subjugated, and to accept, by our silence, the weighty chains of slavery? Shall we permit to be lost the soil inherited from our fathers, which cost them so much blood and so many sacrifices? Shall we make our families victims of the most barbarous slavery? Shall we wait to see our wives violated—our innocent children punished by the American whips—our property sacked—our temples profaned—and lastly, to drag through an existence full of insult and shame? No! a thousand times no! Countrymen, first death!

Who of you does not feel his heart beat with violence; who does not feel his blood boil, to contemplate our situation; who will be the Mexican who will not feel indignant; and who will not take up arms to destroy our oppressors? We believe there is not one so vile and cowardly. With such a motive the majority of the inhabitants of the district, justly indignant against our tyrants, raise the cry of war, with arms in their hands, and of one accord swear to sustain the following articles:

1. We, the inhabitants of the department of California, as members of the great Mexican nation, declare that it is, and has been, our wish to belong to her alone, free and independent.

2. Consequently the authorities intended and named by the invading forces of the United States are held null and void.

3. All the North Americans being enemies of Mexico, we swear not to lay down our arms till they are expelled from Mexican territory.

4. All Mexican citizens, from the age of fifteen to sixty,

who do not take up arms to forward the present plan, are declared traitors and under pain of death.

5. Every Mexican or foreigner who may directly or indirectly aid the enemies of Mexico will be punished in the same manner.

6. The property of the North Americans in the department, who may directly or indirectly have taken part with, or aided the enemies, shall be confiscated and used for the expenses of the war; and their persons shall be taken to the interior of the Republic.

7. All those who may oppose the present plan will be punished with arms.

8. All the inhabitants of Santa Barbara and the district of the north will be invited immediately to adhere to the present plan.

[Signed] JOSE MA. FLORES.

Camp Angeles, September 24, 1846.

This proclamation was signed by more than 300 persons.

## CHAPTER IX

### WHEN UNCLE SAM STEPPED IN

All the books that have been written about California contain, of course, more or less elaborate and vivid accounts of the military operations which resulted in the occupation and possession of the Province by the American forces, as a result of which California became a state of the Union.

Concerning these operations as they relate particularly to Los Angeles, we are fortunate to have discovered an account of those matters by no less a person than the renowned Don Augustin Olvera who, as far back as the year 1841, was justice of the peace of the territory lying between Santa Ana and Las Flores. Don Augustin was admitted as an attorney to practice before the United States District Court in 1855, and in the year following acted as receiver of the United States Land Office in Los Angeles. In every way he is a most illustrious and reliable witness of the events of his time. He was long a resident of this city where he died in the fullness of his years, respected and beloved. Having been active in the administration of the law under both Mexican and American rule in Los Angeles, and a man of great mental ability, he was ideally equipped as an historian.

Let us go back to December, 1846, when Commodore Stockton and General Kearney with 600 men, camped at the gates of the pueblo of Los Angeles, then a community of a population of about 1,000 souls, and, as it were, standing behind American guns, let us see what happened as Don Augustin Olvera saw it.

Don Augustin relates that on the 9th of January, 1846, the army passed from the river into Main Street near the old "Celis house," thence up Main Street to the Plaza. Two guns, with a couple of hundred men, were stationed on the hill overlooking Main Street; the rest quartered as comfortably as

possible. On the 14th, Col. J. C. Fremont marched in from Cahuenga, his battalion "a body of fine looking men in general on good horses and armed with rifles."

Eleven hundred of United States troops were now in the city. Upon the hill at once was commenced a Fort, on which the patriotic sailors worked cheerily, although they had begun to talk of their ships, and the term of service of many of them had expired. It was finished by the Mormons. It has been said that a small entrenchment at this spot existed, made in the time of Governor Micheltorena. This is a mistake. Before 1846 it had been the playground of the children, a favorite resort of lovers, the place for picnics or recreation on days of festival. In 1859 and several years thereafter, hundreds of persons every fine Sunday afternoon of early spring might be seen there, culling the wild flowers or gazing over the beautiful panorama of mountain and plain and sea. A very long time passed before it began to have charming residences. January 18th, General Kearny, with his dragoons afoot and almost shoeless, and after the casualties of their hard campaigns, scarcely more than fifty in number, marched for San Diego. Captains Emory and Turner, Lieutenants Davidson and Warner, and Doctor Griffin, returned with him. Commodore Stockton followed the next day.

The battle-ground of January 8th is at present "Pico Crossing"; by the Californians always named Curunga. Gen. Jose Maria Flores commanded the Californians. He had ordered the charge to be made by a squadron. The company advanced under Capt. Juan Bantista Moreno. Don Francisco Cota, bearing the Mexican standard, placed himself at its head, and the column dashed down the precipitous hill, about seventy in number, upon the close ranks of Stockton. The sailors received them with a terrible fire. The other company reached the brow of the hill to follow their comrades, when Don Diego Sepulveda, acting upon his own judgment, ordered a halt, advanced alone, and commanded a retreat. He was aid of Flores. This feat was accomplished by Captain Moreno under heavy fire, but without further loss than a severe wound which he received. Two had been mortally wounded by the first fire of the sailors, namely, Ygnacio



PRESENT APPEARANCE OF COMMODORE STOCKTON'S HEADQUARTERS NEAR THE PLAZA

Sepulveda (El Cuacho), brother of Don Diego, and Francisco Rubiou (Bachico). They died of their wounds, at San Gabriel.

Californians still speak of their strange emotions, retired only about 1,000 yards, at the music of Stockton's band, when the heights were taken and their late camp occupied by him.

In the artillery duel of the Mesa, Alferéz Jose Maria Ramirez was slightly wounded, and a youth named Ignacio "El Guaimeno" killed. Their entire force did not exceed 400.

At the distance, it was easy for the American army to be misled as to the effect of its shots, owing to the habit of Californians, so agile on horseback, to hang themselves on their saddles, on either side from the danger. "El Guaimeno," that is to say, "of Guaimas," was a Yaqui Indian, born on the river of that name. In a battle against the Yaquis a soldier had captured him, then a child, and was about to kill him. Don Santiago Johnson interposed, bought him of the soldier for \$12, and finally brought him in his family to California.

It seems to have been thought that the personal eclat of some of the higher functionaries would inspire the rank and file with greater enthusiasm. Certainly common sense will not undertake to judge them as regular soldiers. Magnificent horsemen they were, and by a simple and active life made hardy for campaigns, but never had rigid military training. Most of them were very young.

This revolution owed much to the patriotic zeal of the women of the country, by fervent appeal and indignant upbraiding impelling father, brother, husband, lover, to resistance. Happily they were the first in January to bow gracefully to destiny—a gentle influence so new-born, like the rainbow, at the close of the storm.

Many of the graver inhabitants felt that they were not able to cope with the United States; their men undisciplined, and without any resources to wage war. So thought General Flores, we may well believe, with his reputation for experience and skill; and the like conviction has often been attributed to Gen. Andres Pico. But the untamed spirit of the majority at first did not stop to reason upon the consequences. Honor and love of country threw away cold calculation and military caution.



Gen. Jose Maria Flores was born at the Hacienda de los Ornos, in the Department of Coahuila. He had been aid to Governor Micheltorena. He died at Mazatlan in April or May, 1866. His wife was a native of California—Doña Dolores Zamorano, daughter of Don Augustin Zamorano, who had been secretary of Governor Jose Maria Echeandia from 1825, and afterward, in 1833, of Governor Jose Figueroa; he was born in Florida. Her grandfather was Don Santiago Arguello, formerly military commander of San Diego, and from 1840 until 1843 prefect at Los Angeles, whose eldest son, Don Santiago, was captain of the native Californian company, on the American side, at the battle of Curunga. General Flores was thirty years of age at the date of these events.

Lieut. Col. Philip St. George Cooke and the Mormon battalion reached the Mission of San Diego, January 29th; Stephen C. Foster was his interpreter. March 17th, with Company C, First Dragoons, and four companies of his battalion, Colonel Cooke took post at this city. The officers of Company C then were: Capt. A. J. Smith, First Lieut. J. B. Davidson, Second Lieut. George H. Stoneman, the last mentioned officer a graduate of the previous year at West Point.

Col. Jonathan D. Stevenson arrived in the latter part of April with Company G, Capt. Matthew R. Stevenson, and Company E, Capt. Nelson Taylor, of the New York Regiment. (Captain Stevenson is dead. Captain Taylor was a brigadier general in the Civil war, and member of Congress from New York.)

May 16th, by order of Colonel Cooke, Doctor Griffin was appointed as surgeon at this city. Doctor Sanderson, surgeon of the Mormon battalion, was discharged, their term of service being out; one company of which re-enlisted for the war under Capt. J. D. Hunter, who had commanded Company B of that battalion; Captain Hunter was a native of Kentucky. In August he was appointed agent for the Indians, who, especially in San Diego County, had done much damage upon the ranchos.

A pleasant reminiscence there is of Don Juan Abila. Doctor Griffin made his ride within two days and a half from San

Diego, in consequence of Colonel Cook's order. At the Alisos rancho his horse was too jaded to proceed. Don Juan immediately gave him—not a bronco, but one of his best saddle horses—with characteristic Californian hospitality. Thus early had confidence and cordial feelings sprung up among this open-hearted race. It is proper to observe that before the army had felt the amenities of resident foreigners identified by marriage with the natives, among them Don Edward Stokes of Santa Ysabel and Don Juan Forster, both these gentlemen of English birth.

July 4, 1847, the fort on the hill was finished. The staff was raised and the flag thrown to the breeze amid salutes of cannon, and the place christened Fort Moore. A grand ball at night, given by the American officers, ended the national anniversary. The fort was named in honor of Capt. Ben Moore, who had fallen at San Pascual, December 6, 1846. One, on the then western frontier well-remembered, so kind and genial ever; stern, prompt, faithful when duty called. On that dark day near-by fell Lieut. T. H. Hammond. Companions they in arms, married to sisters, devoted friends, their life-blood mingled for their country's sake. They are buried together at the Old Town, San Diego.

July 9th, Lieut. Col. H. S. Burton having obtained necessary stores and two six-pounders at Los Angeles, left San Pedro with his command of 110 men on the U. S. store ship Lexington to occupy the Port of La Paz, Lower California. He had of the First N. Y. Regiment Company A, Capt. S. G. Steele, and Company B, Capt. H. C. Matsell. After several conflicts the occupation was firmly established and maintained, until the troops were withdrawn and that country delivered over to Mexico under the terms of the treaty. An episode of war, that has a glow of romance in more than one of its pleasing traditions. Lieutenant Colonel Burton afterward served on the Pacific Coast several years and in the Civil war. He died with the rank of major general. His widow, Doña Ampara de Burton, and son Harry and daughter Nellie resided in San Diego County. Captain Steele went to live in Scott's Valley, California. Captain Matsell afterward was a merchant at the City of San Diego, afterward

residing in New York. Of the privates in this daring service four came to Los Angeles: Messrs. Peter Thompson, James O'Sullivan, August Ehlers and Moses W. Perry.

Of the native Californians some probably dreamed of help to come from Mexico through their beloved governor, Don Pio Pico. In August, 1846, he had set out for the capital, leaving them his assurance of reinforcements. But by this time the better portion of the people had become convinced that further opposition must be unavailing. Their cherished institution—the ayuntamiento (town council), which had closed its sessions July 4, 1846, at the first sound of war—was restored in every detail according to their old laws. The familiar words "Dios y Libertad" (God and Liberty) authenticated their official communication among themselves as if the Mexican banner were flying. The election took place in 1847, the first meeting February 20th of that year. Its members were: First alcalde and president, Don Jose Salazar; second alcalde, Don Enrique Abila; regidores (councilmen), Don Miguel N. Pryor, Don Rafael Gallardo, Don Julian Chavez, Don Jose Antonio Yorba; sindico (treasurer), Don Jose Vincente Guerrero; secretary, Don Ygnacio Coronel.

Its record is creditable to their probity, intelligence, economy and zeal for the public good. Owing to misunderstandings between this body and the military commandant, Colonel Stevenson, at the end of December it was dissolved by Gov. R. B. Mason, and January 1, 1848, S. C. Foster, alcalde by military appointment, took the place of the ayuntamiento, with like jurisdiction over a wide stretch of country beyond the limits of the city. This office he held until May 21st of the ensuing year, displaying superior skill in its various and often difficult business.

The irrigation system every season had been a source of perplexity to the officers, and inconvenience and losses to the people, who never could find more than some temporary expedient to keep up the toma (dam) so necessary for the cultivation of the 103 vineyards and gardens then existing. In February, after his appointment, by a measure firmly executed at insignificant cost to each proprietor, Foster put it in a

condition that was not disturbed until the great freshet of 1861-62.

A thousand things combined to smooth the asperities of war. Fremont had been courteous and gay; Mason was just and firm. The natural good temper of the population favored a speedy and perfect conciliation. The American officers at once found themselves happy in every circle. In suppers, balls, visiting in town and country, the hours glided away with pleasant reflections. For hospitality the families were unrivaled through the world; and really were glad that it had not been worse at San Gabriel. "Men capable of such actions ought not to have been shot," they said in softest Castilian—admiring the American dash and daring displayed on that occasion.

Gen. Andres Pico and his compadre, Lieutenant Stoneman, had a horse race against Sutler Sam Haight and a native turfman—when Old "Oso" of the Picos and Workman, staked by the general and lieutenant—beat Dr. Nicholas Den's "Champion of Santa Barbara," name forgotten, 1,000 yards. On the other side a fascination seized them for the City of the Queen of the Angels. Army officers are believed to be no indifferent judges of wine. Doctor Griffin says of Los Angeles wine the day after their entry: "It is of excellent flavor; as good as I ever tasted. The white wine is particularly fine. I ate of the fine oranges. Taking everything into consideration, this is decidedly one of the most desirable places I have ever been at." Camped on the sandy Santa Ana January 19th, on the return march to San Diego, thought turned back to this "very pleasant place—we found it so—we lived well and had the best of wine."

At San Diego in December before, their reception had been, if possible, warmer from that ever enthusiastic and generous people. Don Juan Bandini and wife, Doña Refugio, had thrown open their mansion to Commodore Stockton. All San Diego vied one with another to pay him honor and gild the flying moments with joy. Don Miguel Redrorena and his relative, Don Santiago E. Arguello, took up arms for the United States; both went with Commodore Stockton to Los Angeles. The inhabitants saw the army depart on the 29th

in mingled sympathy and fear for the result. They welcomed all that returned to the wonted round of festivities. The navy reciprocated the courtesy of the people. "On the 22d, Washington's Birthday," says Doctor Griffin, "the commodore gave an elegant blowout on board of the Congress. The decorations were the flags of all nations; the ship's deck decidedly the gayest ballroom I ever saw. We had all the ladies from San Diego. Everything went off in the happiest manner."

The treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo was ratified May 30, 1848. The news did not reach Los Angeles until August 15th. In the same month were celebrated the nuptials of Stephen C. Foster and Doña Merced Lugo, daughter of Don Antonio Maria Lugo. Don Antonio Maria died in 1860. He was born in 1775, at the Mission of San Antonio de Padua. He was a link between two centuries—his name a household word throughout California.

In the same month, or July, ex-Governor Pio Pico returned to Los Angeles from Guaimas, having effected nothing during his absence of two years. The Mexican government neglected all his representations, and finally refused to permit him or his secretary, Don Jose Matias Moreno, to visit the capital. It was a patriotic dream which he had indulged for his native land. The cold policy of Mexico seems to have parted with this remote region without a single regret. Don Pio has lived to a green old age, none the less honored for having been the last Mexican governor of California.

In September Colonel Stevenson left for San Francisco. In January, 1849, a squadron of Second Dragoons, Major Montgomery Pike Graham commanding, fresh from Mexico, was posted at this city. His officers were: Captain Kane, quartermaster; Capt. D. H. Rucker; Lieutenants Cave J. Couts, Givens, Sturgiss, Campbell, Evans and Wilson. Capt. Rufus Ingalls was here in this year as quartermaster. The arrival of Major Graham relieved Company C, First Dragoons, which then marched for Sonoma, under its officers as before mentioned, and the surgeon, Doctor Griffin.

Commodore Robert Field Stockton was born at Princeton, New Jersey, in 1796; was distinguished by his naval services

in the Mediterranean and other seas. California owes to him its first press and first public schoolhouse under American rule. In 1851 he represented his native state in the U. S. Senate, and succeeded in having the passage of a law abolishing flogging in the navy. He died October 7, 1866.

Gen. Stephen Watts Kearny was born at Newark, New Jersey, August 30, 1794. In June, 1846, he was made brigadier general in command of "the Army of the West," and took possession of New Mexico, established a provisional government, and marched for California. He died at St. Louis, Missouri, October 31, 1848.

There is a deep fascination in those colorful events which witnessed the passing of the City of Los Angeles from Mexican control in the hands of American men and the American Government, and, in addition to the reminiscences of Don Augustin, we are glad to have an intimate account of those events from the diary of Capt. W. H. Emory, who was with Stockton and Kearney in the engineering corps of that famous "Army of the West."

Captain Emory's diary for the year 1846 contains the following exceedingly interesting entries:

January 6.—Today we made a long march (from San Diego) of 19 miles to the upper Santa Anna, a town situated on the river of the same name. We were now near the enemy, and the town gave evidence of it. Not a soul was to be seen; the few persons remaining in it were old women, who, on our approach, had bolted their doors. The leaders of the Californians, as a means of inciting their people to arms, made them believe we would plunder their houses and violate their women.

Taking advantage of a deep ditch for one face of the camp, it was laid off in a very defensible position between the town and the river, expecting the men would have an undisturbed night's rest, to be in the morning ready for the fight, which might now be expected daily. In this hope we were mistaken. The wind blew a hurricane (something unusual in this part of California), and the atmosphere was filled with particles of fine dust, so that one could not see and but with difficulty breathe.

January 7.—The wind continued to blow violently, which the enemy should have taken advantage to attack us. Our weapons were chiefly fire-arms; his, the lance; and I was quite certain that in such a gale of wind as then blew, the difficulty of loading our arms would have proved a serious matter.

The Santa Anna is a fine, dashing stream, knee-deep, and about 100 yards wide, flowing over a sandy bed. In its valley are many valuable vineyards and corn fields. It is capable of affording water to a great many more. On its banks are considerable tracts of uncultivated land within the level of irrigation. We now began to think there would be more formidable and united resistance by the enemy, and such was the unanimity of the men, women and children, in support of the war, that not a particle of information could be obtained in reference to his force or position. After traveling ten miles we came to the Coyotes, a rancheria owned by a rich widow, who had just married a handsome young fellow, who might well pass for her son. These people we found at home, and we learned from them that the enemy intended to give us battle the next day. Indeed, as we approached the rancheria, several horsemen drew off, reconnoitering us so closely as to make it doubtful if they were not some of our own vaqueros.

January 8.—We passed over a country destitute of wood and water, undulating and gently dipping toward the ocean, which was in view. About two o'clock we came in sight of the San Gabriel River. Small squads of horsemen began to show themselves on either flank, and it became quite apparent the enemy intended to dispute the passage of the river.

Our progress was necessarily very slow, our oxen being poor, and our wagons (the ox-carts of the country) with wheels only about two feet in diameter.

The enemy did not yet discover his order of battle, and we moved to the river in our habitual order of march, when near the enemy, viz: the 2d. division in front, and the 1st. and 3d. on the right and left flanks respectively; the guard and a company of volunteer carbiniers in the rear; our cattle and the wagon train in the centre, making for them, what the

sailors wittily termed a Yankee "corral." The artillery were distributed on the four angles of the rectangle.

This order of march was adopted from the character of the enemy's force, all of which was mounted; and in a measure from our own being men unaccustomed to field evolutions, it was necessary to keep them habitually in the order to resist cavalry attacks when in view of the enemy. We had no cavalry, and the object of the enemy was to deprive us of our cattle by sudden charge.

The river was about 100 yards wide, knee-deep, and flowing over quicksand. Either side was fringed with a thick undergrowth. The approach on our side was level; that on the enemy's was favorable to him. A bank fifty feet high ranged parallel with the river, at point blank cannon distance, upon which he posted his artillery.

As we neared the thicket, we received the scattering fire of the enemy's sharp-shooters. At the same moment, we saw him place four pieces of artillery on the hill, so as to command the passage. A squadron of 250 cavalry just showed their heads above the hill, to the right of the battery, and the same number were seen to occupy a position on the left.

The 2d. battalion was ordered to deploy as skirmishers, and cross the river. As the line was about the middle of the river, the enemy opened his battery, and made the water fly with grape and round shot. Our artillery was now ordered to cross—it was unlimbered, pulled over by the men, and placed in counter battery on the enemy's side of the river. Our people, very brisk in firing, made the fire of the enemy wild and uncertain. Under this cover, the wagons and cattle were forced with great labor across the river, the bottom of which was quicksand.

Whilst this was going on, our rear was attacked by a very bold charge, and repulsed.

On the right bank of the river there was a natural banquettes, breast high. Under this the line was deployed. To this accident of the ground is to be attributed the little loss we sustained from the enemy's artillery, which showered grape and round shot over our heads. In an hour and twenty



minutes our baggage train had all crossed, the artillery of the enemy was silenced, and a charge made on the hill.

Half-way between the hill and river, the enemy made a furious charge on our left flank. At the same moment, our right was threatened. The 1st. and 2d. battalions were thrown into squares, and after firing one or two rounds, drove off the enemy. The right wing was ordered to form a square, but seeing the enemy hesitate, the order was countermanded; the 1st. battalion, which formed the right, was directed to rush for the hill, supposing that would be the contested point, but great was our surprise to find it abandoned.

The enemy pitched his camp in the hills in view, but when morning came, he was gone. We had no means of pursuit, and scarcely the power of locomotion, such was the wretched conditions of our wagon train. The latter it was still deemed necessary to drag along for the purpose of feeding the garrison, intended to be left in the Ciudad de los Angeles, the report being that the enemy intended, if we reached that town, to burn and destroy every article of food. Distance 9.3 miles.

January 9.—The grass was very short and young, and our cattle were not much recruited by the night's rest; we commenced our march leisurely, at 9 o'clock, over the "Mesa," a wide plain between the Rio San Gabriel and the Rio San Fernando.

Scattering horsemen, and small reconnoitering parties, hung on our flanks. After marching five or six miles, we saw the enemy's line on our right, above the crest made by a deep indentation in the plain.

Here Flores addressed his men, and called on them to make one more charge; expressed his confidence in their ability to break our line; said that "yesterday he had been deceived in supposing that he was fighting soldiers."

We inclined a little to the left to avoid giving Flores the advantage of the ground to post his artillery; in other respects we continued our march on the Pueblo as if he were not in view.

When we were abreast of him, he opened his artillery at a long distance, and we continued our march without halting, except for a moment, to put a wounded man in the cart,



SUNNY, BEAUTIFUL PASADENA OF TODAY

Upper View : Orange Grove Avenue. Lower : Typical Pasadena Street

and once to exchange a wounded mule, hitched to one of the guns.

As we advanced, Flores deployed his force, making a horse shoe in our front, and opened his nine-pounders on our right flank, and two smaller pieces on our front. The shot from the nine-pounders on our flank was so annoying that we halted to silence them. In about fifteen minutes this was done, and the order "forward" again given, when the enemy came down on our left flank in a scattering sort of charge; and notwithstanding the efforts of our officers to make their men hold their fire, they, as is usually the case under similar circumstances, delivered it whilst the Californians were yet about a hundred yards distant. The fire knocked many out of their saddles and checked them. A round of grape was then fired upon them and they scattered. A charge was made simultaneously with this as the beginning of the fight, but it was the end of it. The Californians, the most expert horsemen in the world, stripped the dead horses on the field, without dismounting, and carried off most of their saddles, bridles, and all their dead and wounded on horseback to the hills to the right.

It was now about three o'clock, and the town, known to contain great quantities of wine and aguardiente, was four miles distant. From previous experience of the difficulty of controlling men when entering towns, it was determined to cross the river San Fernando, halt there for the night, and enter the town in the morning with the whole day before us. The distance today is 6.2 miles.

After we had pitched our camp, the enemy came down from the hills and 400 horsemen, with the four pieces of artillery, drew off towards the town, in order and regularity, whilst about sixty made a movement down the river, on our rear and left flank. This led us to suppose they were not yet whipped, as we thought, and that we should have a night attack.

January 10.—Just as we had raised our camp, a flag of truce, borne by Mr. Celis, a Castilian, Mr. Workman, an Englishman, and Alvarado, the owner of the rancheria at the Alisos, was brought into camp. They proposed, on behalf of the Californians, to surrender their dear City of the Angels,

provided we would respect property and persons. This was agreed to; but not altogether trusting to the honesty of General Flores, who had once broken his parole, we moved into the town in the same order we should have done if expecting an attack.

It was a wise precaution, for the streets were full of desperate and drunken fellows who brandished their arms and saluted us with every term of reproach. The crest, overlooking the town, in rifle range was covered with horsemen engaged in the same hospitable manner. One of them had on a dragoon's coat, stolen from the dead body of one of our soldiers after we had buried him at San Pasqual.

Our men marched steadily on until crossing the ravine leading into the public square, when a fight took place amongst the Californians on the hill; one became disarmed, and to avoid death rolled down the hill towards us, his adversary pursuing and lancing him in the most cold-blooded manner. The man tumbling down the hill was supposed to be one of our vaqueros, and the cry of "rescue him" was raised. The crew of the Cyane, nearest the scene, at once and without any orders, halted and gave the man that was lancing him a volley; strange to say, he did not fall. Almost at the same instant, but a little before it, the Californians from the hill did fire on the vaqueros. The rifles were then ordered to clear the hill, which a single fire effected, killing two of the enemy.

We were now in possession of the town; great silence and mystery was observed by the Californians in regard to Flores; but were given to understand that he had gone to fight the force from the north, drive them back, and then starve us out of the town.

Towards the close of the day we learned very certainly that Flores, with 150 men, chiefly Sonorians and desperadoes of the country, had fled to Sonora, taking with him four or five hundred of the best horses and mules in the country, the property of his own friends. The silence of the Californians was now changed into deep and bitter curses upon Flores.

Some slight disorder took place among our men at night, from the facility of getting wine, but the vigilance of the officers soon suppressed it.

January 11.—It rained torrents all day. I was ordered to select a site, and place a fort, capable of containing a hundred men; with this in view, a rapid reconnoissance of the town was made, and the plan of a fort sketched, so placed as to enable a small garrison to command the town and the principal avenues to it. The plan was approved. Many men came in during the day and surrendered themselves.

January 12.—I laid off the work, and, before night, broke the first ground. The population of the town, and its dependencies, is about 3,000; that of the town itself, about 1,500. It is the center of wealth and population of the Mexico-Californian people, and has heretofore been the seat of government. Close under the base of the mountains, commanding the passes to Sonora, cut off from the north by the pass at Santa Barbara, it is the center of the military power of the Californians. Here all the revolutions have had their origin, and it is the point upon which any Mexican force from Sonora would be directed. It was therefore desirable to establish a fort, which, in case of trouble, should enable a small garrison to hold out till aid might come from San Diego, San Francisco, or Monterey, places which are destined to become centers of American settlements.

January 13.—It rained steadily all day, and nothing was done on the work; at night I worked on the details of the fort.

Thursday 14.—We drank today the wine of the country, manufactured by Don Luis Vigne, a Frenchman. It was truly delicious, resembling more the best description of Hock than any other wine.

Many bottles were drunk leaving no headache or acidity on the stomach. We obtained from the same gentleman a profusion of grapes and luscious pears, the latter resembling in color and taste the Bergamot pears, but different in shape, being longer and larger.

January 15.—The details to work on the fort were by companies. I sent to Captain Tilghman who commanded on the hill, to detach one of the companies under his command to commence the work. He furnished, on the 16th, a company of artillery (seamen from the Congress) for the day's

work, which they performed bravely, and gave me great hopes of success.

January 18, 19 and 20.—I received special orders which separated me from the command, and the party of topographical engineers that had been so long under my orders.

The battles of the 6th, December, and the 8th and 9th, January, had forever broken the Mexican authority in California, and they were daily coming in, in large parties, to sue for peace, and every move indicated a sincere desire on the part of the more respectable portion of the Californians to yield without further struggle to the United States authorities; yet small parties of the more desperate and revengeful hung about the mountains and roads; refusing or hesitating to yield obedience to their leaders, who now, with great unanimity, determined to lay down their arms. General Flores, with a small force, was known to have taken the road to Sonora, and it was believed he was on his way to that province, never to return to California.

So much for Captain Emory's diary. I have gone over these old matters in years past and have set forth in my book "California" the aftermath of that unrestful and somewhat distressful time. And perhaps I can do no better here than to repeat what I said in my former work. This is the way the situation appeared to me as the incidents of it came to a close:

With Stockton and Kearney in full possession of Los Angeles, and Fremont encamped in the old Mission San Fernando, a few miles away, the Californians gave up all hope and tried to make the best terms they could with the conquerors. They seemed to think they would fare better with Fremont and, accordingly, they sent a delegation to him from their hiding places in the hills. Fremont received the messengers courteously and gave them to understand that he would accept their surrender. He moved his forces southward through the Cahuenga Pass to a point which was probably the outskirts of Hollywood, and there on January 13, 1847, the famous treaty of capitulation was signed, bearing the signatures of Col. John C. Fremont as Commander of the American forces on the ground, and of Andres Pico, Com-

mandante of the Californian forces. Flores, the Californian Commander-in-Chief, was not present, he having turned over the command to Andres Pico just before this meeting and, taking to his heels, had fled to the far-away haven of Sonora.

The treaty was drawn up in both Spanish and English and stipulated that the Californians should deliver up their artillery and public arms, return peaceably to their homes, conform to the laws and regulations of the United States and aid and assist in placing the country in a state of peace and tranquillity. Colonel Fremont on his part guaranteed the Californians protection of life and property whether on parole or otherwise.

Colonel Fremont sent the document to General Kearney at Los Angeles and the next day proceeded with his forces to that city. The war was at an end.

Many bitter controversies and wretched quarrels grew out of the conflicting claims of the various military and naval officers who participated in the conquest of California, and out of the maze of testimony, pro and con, it is difficult to determine who was right and who was wrong. Indeed, in the light of the evidence furnished from many sources, it appears that there was a measure of justice in the claims of both the military and naval authorities in California. Kearney and Stockton, Fremont and Mason, were all men of action and ambition. California was a long way from the seat of government. Instructions had been issued from both the War and Navy Departments at Washington to respective officers. Had there been greater unity of action at Washington, and clearer expression of the President's wishes with respect to the occupation of California, it is probable that much of the friction which sprung up on the Pacific Coast might have been avoided.

It appears clear that Kearney, whose instructions have been heretofore quoted, made known to Stockton at San Diego that he felt himself authorized to assume supreme authority in California. Stockton later testified that he offered to relinquish authority at San Diego and that Kearney declined or neglected to assume it. Kearney was then suffering from wounds inflicted at San Pasqual, and he had

lost several of his officers and men who had marched across the plains with him, and to whom he must have been deeply attached. Doubtless the physical and mental conditions produced by these experiences, and his realization that Stockton had a large naval force and had really made considerable headway in the occupation of California, led Kearney to defer the assumption of the authority with which his instructions vested him. In any event, Stockton assumed full command of the forces in the march to Los Angeles and continued the extension of his claims as governor. Kearney, on reaching Los Angeles, began to resent Stockton's assumption of authority, and with this attitude on his part came a more determined position on the part of Stockton.

Fremont, who was approaching Los Angeles, reported to Kearney on learning that Kearney was at Los Angeles, but upon the signing of the treaty at Cahuenga (Hollywood), perhaps, suspicisioning that there might be a clash of authority, he sent an officer to Los Angeles with the treaty, instead of immediately going himself. Kearney at last formally requested Stockton to exhibit his authority for the proposed organization of a civil government, stating that if he was without such authority he must demand that Stockton cease his activities in that line. Stockton replied that a civil government had been established before the arrival of Kearney, and that he would not yield to Kearney's request. He at once suspended, or attempted to suspend Kearney from command of the forces at Los Angeles.

So far as the order related to sailors and marines Stockton probably was within his powers. Kearney then exhibited his authority from the War Department to Fremont and issued certain instructions regarding the management of troops under Fremont's command. Fremont refused to obey on the grounds that he had accepted his instructions from Stockton, had been appointed Governor of California by Stockton, and that he recognized Stockton as having superior authority. Finding himself without power to enforce his instructions and commands, Kearney at once marched with his dragoons back to San Diego, four days after the signing of the treaty at Cahuenga.



A battalion of Mormon volunteers, 300 strong, had now arrived at San Diego, and these troops were left at San Luis Rey while Kearney sailed for Monterey. At Monterey Kearney found Commodore W. Branford Shubrick, who had arrived on January 22, to succeed Stockton. Commodore Shubrick had already addressed a communication to Fremont, not knowing of General Kearney's presence in California. Stockton, on January 19, left Fremont in charge at Los Angeles, having commissioned him Governor, and sailed north. Stockton had also appointed a Legislative Council on the sixteenth, but no session of that body was ever held, due principally to the unwillingness of those selected to serve. For a period of about fifty days Fremont was recognized by a portion of the population of California, at least, as Governor.

On February 12, Col. Richard B. Mason arrived in San Francisco with instructions from Washington which clearly indicated that the senior officer of the land forces was to be Civil Governor. Mason was sent to succeed Kearney, as soon as Kearney could shape matters to leave. Commodore Shubrick, who had succeeded Stockton and who had already recognized Kearney's authority, now joined Mason in a public statement wherein Mason was declared to be governor, and Monterey the capital. On March 2d, Commodore Biddle arrived to succeed Shubrick. All officers, naval and military, with the exception of Stockton and Fremont, were acting in harmony. About this time there arrived in San Francisco the first detachment of a regiment sent out under Colonel Stevenson from New York.

General Kearney, now having adequate moral and military support, sent instructions to Fremont and other officers in command in the south. Among other things, Fremont was directed to report at Monterey.

After instructing Captain Owens, in command of the battalion at San Gabriel, to refuse to obey any instructions that might reach him from any source save himself, Fremont left for Monterey, arriving there on March 25th. On the same evening in the company of Thos. O. Larkin he paid a formal call on Kearney. The next day an interview was arranged between Kearney and Fremont. Fremont objected to the

presence of Colonel Mason. At this point Kearney demanded that Fremont state whether he intended to obey his orders or not. Fremont left Kearney's presence without committing himself, but later in the day expressed a willingness to obey instructions, having first tendered his resignation from the army, which was refused.

Fremont then returned to Los Angeles. Mason followed early in April and called on Fremont for a list of appointments made by him and for all records, civil and military, in his possession. Before leaving Los Angeles, Colonel Mason became involved in a quarrel with Fremont which led to a challenge for a duel which was never fought, though both parties doubtless had the spirit and courage to end their difficulties in that manner.

After much friction between Fremont and the officers in the north, General Kearney, on May 31st, with an escort, left Monterey for Washington by a northern route. Under orders of Kearney, Fremont was required to accompany him. Fort Leavenworth was reached on August 22, and here Fremont was placed under arrest and ordered to report to the Adjutant General at Washington.

With the end of all these troubles Los Angeles settled down to its fate and its undreamed-of destiny as an American city. The Act of Incorporation as passed by the State Legislature was approved by California's first American Governor, Honorable Peter H. Burnett, April 4, 1850, and was as follows:

An Act to incorporate the City of Los Angeles.

The people of the State of California represented in Senate and Assembly, do enact as follows:

Section 1. All that tract of land included within the limits of the Pueblo de Los Angeles, as heretofore known and acknowledged, shall henceforth be known as the City of Los Angeles; and the said City is hereby declared to be incorporated according to the provisions of the act, entitled "An act to provide for the incorporation of cities," approved March 18, 1850:

Provided, however, that if such limits include more than four square miles, the Council shall within three months

after they are elected and qualified, fix by ordinance the limits of the city, not to include more than said quantity of land, and the boundaries so determined shall henceforth be the boundaries of the city.

Sec. 2. The number of Councilmen shall be seven. The first election of city officers shall be on the second Monday of May next.

Sec. 3. The corporation created by this act, shall succeed to all the rights, claims and powers of the Pueblo de Los Angeles in regard to property, and shall be subject to all the liabilities incurred and obligations created by the Ayuntamiento of said Pueblo.

JOHN BIGLER,

Speaker of House of Assembly.

E. KIRBY CHAMBERLAIN,

President pro tem of the Senate.

A map of the city on which boundary lines were established as a basis for the above-mentioned Act of Incorporation had been made the year before, namely, in 1849, by Lieutenant Ord. The incident is famous in history as "Ord's Survey," and the circumstances which brought the survey about are both quaint and interesting. Fortunately, we have an authentic record of the same taken from the minutes of the Town Council of Los Angeles for June 9, 1849. This is the record of the minutes:

"In view of a note received from the superior territorial Government, ordering the making of a city map to serve as a basis for granting vacant city lots out of the unappropriated lands belonging to the municipality, Council resolved:

"1st. That the said Superior Government be assured of the committee's desire to give prompt and due compliance to its order, and to inform the same that there is no city map in existence whereby concessions of land may be made, and, furthermore that there is no surveyor in this town who could get up such a map.

"2nd. That this Honorable body desiring to have this done, requests the territorial government to send down a surveyor to do this work, for which he will receive pay out of the municipal funds, and should they not suffice, by reason of

other demands having to be met, then he can be paid with unappropriated lands should the government give its consent.

“Your committee charged by your Honorable body with the duty of conferring with Lieutenant Ord, the surveyor who is to get out a map of this city, has had a conference with that gentleman and he offers to make a map of the city, demarking thereon in a clear and exact manner, the boundary lines and points of the municipal lands, for which work he demands a compensation of fifteen hundred dollars in coin, ten lots selected from among those demarked on the map and vacant lands to the extent of one thousand varas, in sections of 200 varas each, and wheresoever he may choose to select the same, or in case this proposition is refused, then he wants to be paid the sum of three thousand dollars in cash. Your committee finds the first proposition very disadvantageous to the city, because conceding to the surveyor the right to select not only the said ten lots, but also the thousand varas of vacant land, the city would deprive itself of the most desirable lands and lots which some future day may bring more than three thousand dollars.

“The City funds cannot now defray this expense, but should your Honorable body deem it indispensable a loan of that amount may be negotiated, pledging the credit of the City Council and paying an interest of one per cent a month; this loan could be repaid with the proceeds of the sale of the first lots disposed of.”

“The same day the president was authorized to negotiate a loan of three thousand dollars and provision was made for the sale of lots from the proceeds of which the loan was to be paid.

“On the 19th day of September the syndic, Juan Temple, submitted to the Council the ‘Finished city map, as well as a receipt showing that he had paid the surveyor the sum of three thousand dollars, this amount being a loan made by him to the city, to enable it to pay for the map.’”

The following December, 41 lots in the survey were sold out of a total of 60 offered, from which the Council realized \$2,490, which was paid to Juan Temple on account, leaving a balance of \$510 in his favor, which the Council pledged itself to pay out of the proceeds of the first lots sold in the future.

## CHAPTER X

### PIONEERS OF TRADE AND COMMERCE

We are indebted to our old friends of blessed memory who formed the "Literary Committee of Los Angeles," in 1876, and who are held in the esteem of recollection by their American countrymen of today, for a relation of facts concerning the pioneer business men of Los Angeles and their activities in the days when the city was in the making.

According to the Literary Committee San Pedro was often lively in 1840—and had been so in mission times—by the trading vessels engaged, with active competition, in the purchase of hides and tallow. Francis Mellus gives a list of those on this coast, August 22d of that year, thirteen in number, as follows: "Ships—California (Capt. Arthur), Alciope (Clapp), Monsoon (Vincent), Alert (Phelps); Barques—Index (Scott), Clara (Walters); Brigs—Juan Jose (Dunkin), Bolivar (Nye); Schooners—Fly (Wilson), California (Cooper), Nymph, formerly Norse (Fitch), and two more expected."

From 1844 to 1849 the merchants at Los Angeles City were John Temple, Abel Stearns, Charles W. Flugge—found dead September 1, 1852, on the plains below this city—B. D. Wilson, Albert Packard and Alexander Bell. To these add, in 1849, Antonio Cota, Jose Antonio Menondez, from Spain; Juan Domingo, Netherlands; Jose Mascarel of Marseilles, and John Behn of the Grand Duchy of Baden. The last named came in 1848. He quit business in the fall of 1853 and died in December, 1868.

Madame Salandie is to be added to those of '49. She came on the same ship with Lorenzo Lecke from Pennsylvania in that year, started at once a little store, butcher shop, loaning money and general speculation.

Juan Domingo came to California in 1829, married here, was quite noted, and died December 20, 1858.

The first steamer that ever visited San Pedro was the Gold-hunter, in 1849—a side wheeler, which made the voyage from San Francisco to Mazatlan, touching at way ports. The next was the old Ohio. At San Pedro, from 1844 to 1849, Temple and Alexander had the only general store, and they carried on all the forwarding business. They had the first four wheel vehicle in this county, except an old fashioned Spanish carriage which this firm bought of Captain Kanem, Major Graham's quartermaster, in January, 1849, paying him \$1,000 for the carriage and two American horses. It created a sensation like that of the first Wilmington railway car on the 26th day of October, 1868.

Goods were forwarded to Los Angeles, twenty-four miles, in carts, each with two yoke of oxen, yoked by the horns. The regular train was of ten carts, like the California carretas. The body was the same, but they had spoked wheels tired, which were imported from Boston. Freight was \$1 per hundred weight. This style of importation continued until after 1850.

The first stage line was started by Alexander and Banning in 1852; the next by that man of iron, J. J. Tomlinson, whose death was early for the public good, June 7, 1867. In 1851, D. W. Alexander purchased at Sacramento ten heavy freight wagons that had been sent in from Salt Lake by Ben Holliday, and in 1853 a whole train, 14 wagons and 168 mules, that had come through from Chihuahua, paying therefor \$23,000. So ox-carts were supplanted.

Alexander and Mellus became a new firm, at Los Angeles City, in 1850, continuing until 1856. Wilson and Packard dissolved partnership December, 1851. Other merchants were: Jacob Elias, Charles Ducommon, Samuel Arbuckle, Waldemar, O. W. Childs and J. D. Hicks—Childs and Hicks; Charles Burroughs, M. Michaels, H. Jacoby, of violin celebrity, and who went rich to Europe, Jordan, Jose Vicente Guerrero, Jose Maria Fuentes, Jose Baltazar of Prussia, Rimpau, Fritze and Company, with Morris L. Goodwin as clerk, John Behn and Frank Laumeistre, a German; afterward, in the

same year, Behn & Laumeistre, and Mattias Savichi. The latter named estimable gentleman was of Dalmatia. He died in 1852, leaving two young sons. George Walters also had commenced business in this year. He was born at New Orleans, April 22, 1809.

Mr. B. D. Wilson was Indian agent for Southern California in 1853, and in the same year sold his place on Alameda Street to the Sisters of Charity for their institute; and in 1854 began to put into effect his plans for Lake Vineyard. He removed there in 1856. Mr. Packard went to Santa Barbara, entered into the practice of law. Wheeler & Morgan began in 1849 with trading establishments at Rincon, San Luis Rey, Pala, Agua Caliente. They, in fact, succeeded Wilson & Packard, in their store, in August, 1850. Mr. Wheeler was clerk of the U. S. District Court of the southern district of California from 1861 until its discontinuance in 1866; then deputy clerk of the circuit and later deputy collector of U. S. internal revenue of second division, first district, comprising Los Angeles, San Bernardino and San Diego counties, which office he resigned January 1, 1876.

In 1851-52-53 appear Lazard, Arbuckle & Bauman, Lazard & Bauman, S. Lazard & Company, Lazard & Kremer, Douglass & Sanford, 1852, Childs, Hicks & Wadhams, Thomas Brown and Prudent Beandry, Myles & Hereford, Bauman & Katz, Hoffman & Laubheim, Thomas S. Hereford, J. S. Mallard.

In January, 1853, there were three large dry goods stores and ten or more smaller houses that also kept a general assortment. Half a dozen other sold groceries and provisions exclusively. The liquor shop—its name was “legion.”

In 1853 John Schumacher introduced lager beer, from San Francisco. It was not manufactured at Los Angeles until Christopher Kuhn of Wirtemberg established a brewery in the latter part of 1854.

John Kays was a good baker, 1847. Confectionery was made in 1850, by Papier; Joseph Lelong followed with the Jenny Lind Bakery in 1851. French bread was used altogether until August Ulyard commenced his bakery in 1853.

The merchants of 1853 besides those already mentioned

were Joseph Newmark, Jacob Rich, J. P. Newmark, John Jones, who was the first wholesale liquor dealer, at the corner of Main and Commercial streets. Others were Felix Bachman, Phillip Sichel and Samuel Laubheim, Harris Newmark and E. Loewenthal, H. K. S. Labatt, Samuel Meyer and Loewenstein, M. Norton and E. Greenbaum, H. Goldberg, I. Cohen, Charles R. Johnson and Horace S. Allanson, Heiman Tischler, Barruch, Marks and Loeb Schlessinger, Matthew Lanfranco, Louis Phillips, H. Hellman, Casper Behrend.

In 1854 were Adolph Portugal, O. W. Childs, Samuel Prager, Jacob Letter, M. Pollock and L. C. Goodwin. In 1855, Wolf Kalisher, Charles Prager, Potter & Company, William Corbett, G. F. Lamson, P. C. Williams, J. C. Nichols, Dean & Carson, I. M. Hellman, B. Cohen, Morritz Schlessinger, L. Glaser & Company, Louis Cohen. In 1856, Calisher & Cohen, Henry Wartenberg—W. Calisher & Company. In 1857, Mendel Meyer, H. G. Yarrow. In 1857, Samuel Hellman. 1859, I. W. Hellman, eminent afterward as banker, L. Leon, Corbett & Barker, Wm. Nordholt, David Solomon, H. Fleishman and Julius Sichel—Fleishman & Sichel.

In 1860, Edward Newman and Isaac Schlessinger, Jean B. Trudell—in company with Lazards—Domingo Rivera. In 1861, M. W. Childs.

The mercantile link continued as follows: J. H. Still & Company, booksellers and stationery, 1863; H. D. Barrows and J. D. Hicks—J. D. Hicks & Co., 1864. Eugene Meyer and Constant Meyer—Eugene Meyer & Co.—Polaski & Goodwin, 1865; Thomas Leahy, S. B. Caswell and John F. Ellis—Caswell & Ellis—1866. Potter & Co. consisted of Nehemiah A. Potter and Louis Jazinsky. The latter gentleman soon afterward went into business at San Francisco. George Alexander, in 1872, removed to Columbia, California.

Francis Mellus was born at Salem, Massachusetts, in 1824 and died at Los Angeles City, September 14, 1864. He married Miss Adelaida Johnson, who survived him with seven children. Mrs. Mellus was a daughter of Don Santiago Johnson, an Englishman, who had lived at Sonora, and came to this coast in the year 1833. He married Doña Maria del Carmen Giurado, sister of the wives of Don Manuel Requena and



Alexander Bell. Brought early in contact with men like A. B. Thompson of Santa Barbara, David Spence of Monterey, Abel Stearns, Alfred Robinson, W. D. M. Howard, and himself having received the ordinary Boston high school education of that day—which must have been good, for at fifteen years he understood French and navigation, and was a neat draftsman—Mr. Mellus soon amassed the maximum of experience which fitted him to succeed in the California trade. His spirit and independence are worthy to be made a model by youth just entering among the currents and shoals of commercial life. “March 4, 1839,—The Bolivar arrived from the islands,” we quote from his diary: “March 9.—I went aboard as clerk for Mr. Thompson, at \$300 for the first year and \$500 for the next, which I think is a most excellent salary for me. I hope from this time forward to be a burden to nobody, but to be able to look out for myself.”

Bachman & Co. invested deeply in the Salt Lake trade. Merchants were the soul of every enterprise formed to develop the resources and expand the commerce of this country. Fortunes were rapidly accumulated. Some sped away to fatherland to spend the rest of their days. Solomon Lazard having once more beheld “la belle France,” returned March, 1861, to our sunshine and flowers. Mendel Meyer studied the Vienna Exposition and wandered the world over in gratification of a rare musical taste, “but to feel better at home,” as he often says.

John Temple made the European tour in 1858. He was born at Reading, Massachusetts, in 1796; came to California in 1828, and died at San Francisco May 30, 1866. Juan T. Lanfranco of Italy died May 20, 1875. Prudent Beaudry arrived at San Francisco April 26, 1850, and settled finally at Los Angeles, April 26, 1852. Beaudry's Block, on Aliso Street, finished in 1857, was at the time a surprise. What may we have said to “Beaudry Terrace” and its oranges and other magical fruits of his energy? Edward Neuman, another merchant, in the bloom of youth was murdered in 1863, on the Cucamonga plain.

From 1850 to 1860 and thereabouts, the cattle trade and shipment of grapes were the main reliance for money. The



LOOKING WEST ON TEMPLE STREET OF TODAY  
LOOKING NORTHWEST FROM THIRD STREET AND GRAND AVENUE

cattle sold to go out of the county, in the former year, were estimated at 15,000 head, at \$15 per head. Subsequent years, until 1856, show a constant demand for stock, if not so great; in this year, it was considered that \$500,000 had been invested in cattle, three-fifths of which belonged to native Californians, and, in part, distributed as follows:

Abel Stearns, 12,000; Juan Abila, 7,200; John Roland, 5,000; William Workman, 5,000; John Temple, 4,000; Ricardo Vejar, 3,500; Bernardo Yorba, 3,500; Ignacio del Valle, 3,500; Teodosio Yorba, 3,500; Leonardo Cota, 2,500; Vicente Lugo, 2,500; Pio and Andres Pico, 2,000; Augustin Machado, 2,000; Nasario Dominguez's estate, 2,000; Felipe Lugo, 1,000; Valdez family, 1,000; Enrique Abila, 1,000; Fernando Sepulveda, 1,000. Making just allowance for defective assessments, the amount was probably considerably—one-third—beyond this estimate.

The drought of the years 1863 and 1864 was more or less destructive throughout California. In Los Angeles County 1865 began with 90,450 head of cattle, 15,529 horses, 282,000 sheep. In earlier times sheep made little figure in the annual calculation of gain. In 1875 the total of flocks was counted at 508,757. From 1860 onward wool became a staple, added to wine and brandy, orange and other fruits, wheat and corn. According to the report of the county surveyor, January 15, 1876, the product of the wool was 2,034,828 pounds. Horned cattle were reduced to 13,000; horses, 10,000.

All the oranges in 1850 were from the Mission orchard of San Gabriel, and the gardens of Louis Vignes and William Wolfskill. June 7, 1851, Mr. Vignes offered for sale his "desirable property, El Alizo"—so called from the superb sycamore tree, many centuries old, that shaded his cellars. He says: "There are two orange gardens that yield from five to six thousand oranges in the season." It is credibly stated that he was the first to plant the orange in this city, bringing young trees from San Gabriel in the year 1834. He had 400 peach trees, together with apricots, pear, apple, fig, grapes and walnut, and adds: "The vineyard, with 40,000 vines, 32,000 now bearing grapes, and will yield 1,000 barrels of wine per annum, the quality of which is well known to be su-

perior." Don Louis came to Los Angeles in 1831. He was a native of France.

The shipment of oranges rapidly grew into a regular business. In 1851 there were 104 vineyards, exclusive of that of San Gabriel—all but twenty within the limits of the city. The San Gabriel Vineyard, neglected since 1834, was now in decay. In Spanish and Mexican times it had been called the "mother vineyard," from the fact that it supplied all the original cuttings; it is said to have once had 50,000 vines. In 1875 the grape vines of this county numbered 4,500,000.

In 1851 grapes brought 20 cents per pound at San Francisco, 80 cents at Stockton. Through 1852 the price was the same. Very little wine was then shipped; in 1851 not over 1,000 gallons. Gradually the manufacture of wine was established. Wolfskill indeed had, at an early date, shipped a little wine, but his aim was to turn his grapes into brandy. Louis Wilhart, in 1849 and 1850, made white wine which was considered in flavor and quality next to that of Vignes, who could produce from his cellars a brand perhaps unexcelled through the world. Among the first manufacturers for the general market was Vincent Hoover, with his father, Dr. Juan Leonce Hoover, first at the "Clayton Vineyard," which, owing to its situation on the bench, produced a superior grape; then from the vineyard known as that of Don Jose Serrano.

The cultivation of the grape about this time took a new impulse. At San Gabriel, Wm. M. Stockton, in 1855, had an extensive nursery of grape vines and choice fruit trees. Joseph Huber, senior, came to Los Angeles for health from Kentucky. In the year 1855 he entered successfully into wine-making at the Foster Vineyard. He died, aged fifty-four years, July, 1866, leaving a widow and six children. April 14, 1855, Jean Louis Sansevaine purchased the vineyard property, cellars, etc., of his uncle, Louis Vignes, for \$42,000 (the first large sale within the city). In 1855 he shipped his first wine to San Francisco. In 1856 he made the first shipment from this county to New York, thereby becoming the pioneer of this business.

Matthew Keller said: "According to the books of the great forwarding house of P. Banning at San Pedro, there

was shipped to San Francisco in 1857, 21,000 boxes of grapes and 250,000 gallons of wine." In 1856 Los Angeles yielded only 7,200 cases of wine; in 1860 it had increased to 66,000 cases. In 1861 shipments of wine were made to New York and Boston by B. D. Wilson and J. L. Sansevaïne; they were the real fathers of the wine interest here.

Sunny Slope, unexcelled for its vintage, and the orange, almond and walnut, was commenced by L. J. Rose in January, 1861. December, 1859, the wine producers were: Matthew Keller, Sansevaïne Bros., Frohling & Co., B. D. Wilson, Stevens & Bell, Doctor Parrott, Dr. T. J. White, Henry Dalton, P. Serres, Joseph Huber, Sr., Ricardo Vejar, Barrows, Ballerino, Doctor Hoover, Louis Wilhart, Trabuc, Clement and Jose Serrano. The total manufacture of wine was about 250,000 gallons; in 1875, 1,328,900 gallons, according to the official report of the county assessor, January 1, 1876.

Mechanical industry exhibits a progress slow and difficult for the first few years. In 1851 carpenters had gone to San Francisco, where they could get higher wages. In 1850 Alexander Bell commenced Bell's Row, which was a number of well-known little stores on Los Angeles Street, and an improvement which at the time made a sensation. This work was done by J. R. Barton and William Nordholdt through that and the succeeding year.

In 1853 Anderson & Matthews advertised as carriage makers, carpenters and joiners. September 6, 1861, Perry & Woodworth, Main Street, had matured their pioneer saw and planing mills, with the manufacture of beehives, upholstery, etc., and were prepared for contracting. In 1863 Stephen H. Mott entered this firm.

Eli Taylor, later of Los Nietos, was a carpenter in 1854. Others were as follows prior to 1859: George Stone, R. E. Jackson, George Leonard, Matthew Teed, Thomas Grey, C. P. Switzer, Peter Hendell, William Coburn, P. C. Williams, Harris Niles, John McLimond, Willis Stanton, W. Weeks, William Cover, Herman Muller, Herman Koop, Charles Plaisant.

House and sign painters, prior to 1859 were Wm. Shanning, Moses Searles, Charles Winston, Tom Riley, Forbes, Spilling, Viereck, Turnboldt; plasterers prior to 1857, Joseph Nobbs,

T. Stonehouse, Wm. McKinney; Newton Foote came in that year. Andrew Lehman set up a shoemaking business in November, 1852; it was three years before he began to "make a living." Afterward, prior to 1858 came Morris and Weber. There was little to do for shoemakers until 1860. B. J. Virgin was an architect in 1855. Viereck, painter of political transparencies in 1852, left next year for want of employment. But it must have been for some other reason, for he turned comedian at San Francisco. In 1857 C. M. Kechnie was a portrait painter. Henri Penelon afterward was a distinguished artist.

John Goller, a blacksmith and pioneer wagon-maker, was one of the emigrants by the Salt Lake Route. Louis Wilhart outfitted him with tools and helped him to customers. The charge for shoeing a horse was \$16. Few carriages were made during the first six or eight years. E. L. Scott & Co. were carriage makers and blacksmiths in 1855. Louis Roeder came to Los Angeles in 1856, worked nine years for Goller, then bought out J. H. Burke, later a wealthy citizen of Los Nietos, and in 1863, with Wm. Schwartz, blacksmith, as partner, set up for himself on Main Street.

Ben McLaughlin also was a wheelwright. Among the early blacksmiths were Hiram McLaughlin, C. F. Daley, Van Dusen, George Boorham, Henry King. John Wilson came August 20, 1858, and set up for himself in 1868. James Baldwin, sometime after 1858. Of gunsmiths, August Stoermer came in that year. He was preceded in 1855 by H. C. G. Schaeffer. In the memory of old citizens, from his former little adobe shop, it is a step into a garden where bloomed the choicest flowers of the world. He was still devoted, at sixty-five to floriculture.

S. C. Foy, in 1854, started his saddlery—the first to make any kind of harness. John Foy joined his brother in the following summer. These spirited pioneers led the way soon to flourishing firms in the same line—the brothers Workman, Bell & Green, Heinche, D. Garcia.

The first bricks were made by Capt. Jesse D. Hunter in 1852. From the first kiln was built the house at the corner of Third and Main streets in 1853; from the second, in the same year, the new brick jail. In 1854 was built the Guadalupe

Ross house. In 1855 the dwelling and store of J. G. Nichols on Main Street, near the courthouse. Joseph Mullaly and Samuel Ayers, coming here in 1854, embarked in brick making the next month. In August of the same year, David Porter arrived. The firm was then Mullaly, Porter & Ayers. Their "great year" was 1858, when they sold 2,000,000 of brick for the proposed improvements of 1859.

From 1855 to 1859 there is a hiatus which cannot be better filled than with the "Garden of Paradise," at the Round House, begun in 1856 by George Lehman, and which was a wonder to all by its mystic Adam and Eve, with the profusion of flowers and ingenious disposition of parterre and tree. In 1859 John Temple built and delivered to the city the market house, with its town clock and bell so "fine toned and sonorous," at a cost of \$40,000. He also constructed the south end of Temple Block. October 22d Don Abel Stearns rejoiced in the finishing touch to his prided undertaking, the Arcadia Block, bearing the the name of his wife, Dona Arcadia Bandinini—like the good ship, Arcadia, of Mr. Stearns and Alfred Robinson, that brought the second invoice of goods directly from Boston to San Pedro. In the same month Corbett and Baker removed into the northeast corner of the block, and it was soon filled. Then, too, the dining hall, just finished, of the Bella Union, was reported "one of the finest in California." The prevailing spirit awhile embraced the Plaza within its range. It proved to advantage to all who heeded it, although good William Wolfskill had forebodings, in December, 1860, on his return from the burial of Henry Mellus.

"What a pity!" he said; "if Temple had not built so much he might now be a rich mau!" And, at last, Mr. Wolfskill himself ran with the tide and spent \$20,000 to build the Lazard Store, Main Street, in 1866. It was completed by his executors.

A once well-known lady of Los Angeles who used to do her "shopping" here seventy years ago, has written a vivid pen picture of the stories of Los Angeles as they were in the year 1850. Her recollections are as follows:

If a person walking down Broadway or Spring Street, at the present day, could turn "Time backward in his flight"



VIEW ON THE PRESENT MAIN STREET  
THE LOS ANGELES RESERVOIR



seventy years, how strange the contrast would seem. Where now stand blocks of stately buildings, whose windows are aglow with all the beauties of modern art, instead there would be two or three streets whose business centered in a few "tiendas," or stores, decorated with strings of "chilis" or jerked beef. The one window of each tienda was barred with iron, the "tiendero" sitting in the doorway to protect his wares, or to watch for customers. Where red and yellow brick buildings hold their heads proudly to the heavens now, seventy years ago the soft hills slid down to the back doors of the adobe dwelling and offered their wealth of flowers and wild herbs to the botanist. Sidewalks were unknown, pedestrians marched single file in the middle of the street, in winter to enjoy the sunshine, in summer to escape the trickling tears of "brea" which, dropping from the roofs, branded their linen or clogged their footsteps. Now where the policeman "wends his weary way," the vaquero with his lively "cuidado" (look-out) lassoed his wild steer, and dragging him to the "manzanza" at the rear of his dwelling, offered him on the altar of hospitality.

Among the most prominent stores in the '50s were those of Labat Bros., Foster & McDougal, afterward Foster & Wadhams, of B. D. Wilson, Abel Stearns, S. Lazard's City of Paris, O. W. Childs, Chas. Ducommon, J. G. Downey, Schumacher, Goller, Lew Bow & Jayzinsky. With the exception of O. W. Childs, Chas. Ducommon, J. G. Downey, John Goller and Jayzinsky, all carried general merchandise, which meant anything from a plow to a box of sardines, or from a needle to an anchor. Some merchants sold sugar and silks, others brogans and barrels of flour. Goller's was a wagon and carriage shop. O. W. Childs' first sign read "tins to mend." Jayzinsky's stock consisted principally of clocks, but as the people of California cared little for time, and only recorded it like Indians, by the sun, he soon failed. Afterwards he engaged in the hardware business with N. A. Potter.

Jokes were often played upon the storekeepers to while away the time. Thus, one Christmas night, when the spirit of fun ran high and no policeman was on the scene, some young men who felt themselves "sold" along with the articles

purchased, effaced the first syllable of Wadhams' name and substituted "old" in its place, making it Oldhams, and thus avenging themselves.

It was almost impossible to procure anything eatable from abroad that was not strong and lively enough to remove itself from one's presence before cooking. It was not the fault of the vender, but of the distance and difficulty in transportation.

Mr. Ducommon and Mr. Downey arrived in Los Angeles together. Mr. Ducommon was a watchmaker, and Mr. Downey a druggist. Each had a small stock in trade, which they packed in a "carreta" for transportation from San Pedro to Los Angeles. On the journey the cart broke down, and packing the most valuable of their possessions into carpet sacks, they walked the remaining distance. Mr. Ducommon soon branched out in business, and his store became known as the most reliable one in his line, keeping the best goods, although at enormous prices. Neither Mr. Downey nor any other druggist could have failed to make money in the early '50s, when common Epsom salts retailed at the rate of \$5 per pound, and everything else was in proportion. One deliberated long before sending for a doctor in those days. Fortunately the climate was such that his services were not often needed.

Perhaps the most interesting window display in the city in the early '50s was that of Don Abel Stearns, wherein common candy jars filled with gold, from the finest dust to "chispas," or nuggets, could be seen from the street adorning the shelves. As gold and silver coin were scarce, the natives working the placer mines in the adjoining mountains made their purchases with gold dust. Tied in a red silk handkerchief, tucked into the waistband of their trousers, would be their week's earnings; this, poured carelessly into the scales and as carelessly weighed, soon filled the jars. What dust remained was shaken out of its folds, and the handkerchief returned to its place. No wonder that the native became the victim of sharpers and money lenders; taking no thought of the morrow, he lived on, letting his inheritance slip from his grasp.

The pioneer second hand store of Los Angeles was kept

by a man named Yarrow, or old "Cuarto Ojos" (four eyes), as the natives called him, because of the large spectacles he wore, and the habit he had of looking over them, giving him the appearance of having four eyes. Probably, however, this sobriquet attached to him because his glasses had four lenses, two in front and one on each side. His store was on the corner of Requena and Los Angeles streets, in the rear of where the United States Hotel still stands. The store room was a long, low adobe building with the usual store front of that day—a door and a narrow window. This left the back part of the long store almost in utter darkness, which probably gave rise to the uncanny tradition that certain persons, of reputed wealth, but strangers to the town, had been enticed into his dark interior to their undoing, and that, like the fly in the spider's den, they "ne'er came out again." This idle tale was all owing to Yarrow's spectacles—for in those days all men who wore glasses were under suspicion, the feeling being that they were to conceal their general motives and designs, which were hidden by the masque of spectacles, and were suspected to be murderers.

In the "tienda" of "Cuarto Ojos" were heaped together all sorts and conditions of things, very much as they are now in second hand stores, but the articles differed widely in kind and quality from those found in such stores today. Old "Cuarto Ojos" combined pawn broking and money lending with his other business. In close contact with the highly colored shawls, rebosos, gold necklaces, silver mounted frenos and heavily embroidered muchillas, hung treacherous looking machetes, silver mounted revolvers and all the trappings and paraphernalia of the robber and the gambler out of luck, and forced there to stand and deliver as collateral for loans from old "Cuarto Ojos."

Coming up Requena Street and crossing Main to the southwest corner of Main and Court streets one arrived at the pioneer auction house of 1850. Here George F. Lamson persuaded the visitors to his store into buying wares that at the present day would find their way to the rubbish heaps of the city. This story is told of his sale of a decrepit bureau: "Ladies and gentlemen—ladies minus and gentlemen scarce,"

said the genial auctioneer, "here is the finest piece of mahogany ever brought across the plains or around the Horn—four deep drawers and keys to all of them; don't lose this bargain, it is one in a thousand!" It was knocked down to a personal friend of the auctioneer for the modest sum of \$24. After the sale the purchaser ventured to ask for the keys.



AN OLD-TIME LOCALITY

The Plaza, Pico House and Old Gas Works

"Why," said Lamson, "when I put up that article I never expected you would be fool enough to buy it. There are no keys, and more than that, there is no need of keys, for there are no locks to it."

On Los Angeles Street in the same location where it stands today was kept by Sam C. Foy, stood and still stands the pioneer saddlery of Los Angeles.

Of the pioneer merchants of those days, Mr. Harris Newmark was the founder of a house still in existence. If any

youth of Los Angeles would see for himself how honesty and strict attention to business commands success, let him visit the establishment of Mr. Newmark and his successors.

In the early '50s some merchants were accused of getting their hands into their neighbors' pockets, or rather of charging exorbitant prices to the depletion of the contents of their neighbors' purses. These same merchants never refused to go down into their own pockets for sweet charity's sake. If a collection was to be taken up for some charitable object, all that was necessary was to make the round of the stores, and money was poured into the hat without a question of what was to be done with it. Now we have the Associated Charities and all sorts of charitable institutions, but for liberal and unquestioning giving, we take off our hats to the "stores of 1850."

Prof. J. M. Guinn, about twenty years ago, related to the members of the Southern California Historical Society the result of his researches concerning the advertising methods of pioneer Los Angeles merchants. Professor Guinn looked up the old files of the Los Angeles Star, which was the great newspaper of the town in the early days. Professor Guinn said:

Recently, in looking over some copies of the Los Angeles Star of fifty years ago, I was amused and interested by the quaint ways the advertisers of that day advertised their wares and other things. Department stores are great advertisers, and the pioneer department store of Los Angeles was no exception. Its ad actually filled a half column of the old Star, which was an astonishing display in type for those days. It was not called a department store then, but I doubt whether any of the great stores of Chicago or New York carry on so many lines of business as did that general merchandise store that was kept in the adobe house on the corner of Arcadia and North Main streets fifty years ago. The proprietors of that store were our old pioneer friends, Wheeler & Johnson. The announcement of what they had to sell was prefaced by the following philosophical deductions, which are as true and as applicable to terrestrial affairs today as they were half a century ago:

“Old things are passing away,” says the ad; “behold all things have become new. Passing events impress us with the mutability of human affairs. The earth and its appurtenances are constantly passing from one phase to another. Change and consequent progress is the manifest law of destiny. The forms and customs of the past are become obsolete and new and enlarged ideas are silently but swiftly moulding terrestrial matters on a scale of enhanced magnificence and utility.

“Perhaps no greater proof of these propositions can be adduced than the evident fact that the old mercantile system heretofore pursued in this community with its 7x9 stores, its exorbitant prices, its immense profits, its miserable assortments of shop-rotten goods that have descended from one defunct establishment to another through a series of years, greeting the beholder at his every turn as if craving his pity by a display of their forlorn, mouldy and dusty appearance. These rendered venerable by age are now considered relics and types of the past.

“The ever-expanding mind of the public demands a new state of things. It demands new goods, lower prices, better assortments, and more accommodations. The people ask for a suitable consideration for their money and they shall have the same at the new and magnificent establishment of

#### “WHEELER & JOHNSON,

“in the House of Don Abel Stearns, on Main Street, where they have just received \$50,000 worth of the best and most desirable merchandise ever brought to the country.”

When the customer had been sufficiently impressed by the foregoing propositions and deductions they proceed to enumerate, and here are a few of the articles:

“Groceries, soap, oil, candles, tobacco, cigars, salt, pipes, powder, shot, lead. Provisions, flour, bread, port, hams, bacon, sugar, coffee. Dry Goods, broadcloths, cassimeres, blankets, alpacas, cambrics, lawns, gingham, twist, silks, satins, colored velvet, nets, crepe, scarlet bandas, bonnets, lace, collars, needles, pins.

“Boots, shoes, hats, coats, pants, vests, suits, cravats, gloves, hosiery.

“Furniture, crockery, glassware, mirrors, lamps, chandeliers, agricultural implements, hardware, tools, cutlery, house furnishing goods, liquors, wines, cigars, wood and willow ware, brushes, trunks, paints, oils, tinware and cooking stoves.

“Our object is to break down monopoly.”

Evidently their method of breaking down monopoly was to monopolize the whole business of the town.

When we recall the fact that all of this vast assortment was stored in one room and sold over the same counter we must admire the dexterity of the salesman who could keep bacon and lard from mixing with the silks and satins, or the paints and oils from leaving their impress on the broadcloths and velvets.

Ladies' bonnets were kept in stock. The saleslady had not yet made her appearance in Los Angeles, so it was the sales gentleman that sold bonnets. Imagine him fresh from supplying a purchaser with a side of bacon, and then fitting a bonnet on the head of a lady customer, giving it the proper tilt and sticking the hat pin into the coil of her hair and not into her cranium. Fortunately for the salesman, the bonnets of that day were capacious affairs, modeled after the prairie schooner, and did not need hat pins to hold them on.

The old time department store sales gentleman was a genius in the mercantile line; he could dispose of anything from a lady's lace collar to a caballada of broncos.

Here is the quaint advertisement of our pioneer barber. The pioneer barber of Los Angeles was Peter Biggs—a gentleman of color who came to the state as a slave with his master, but attained his freedom shortly after his arrival. He set up a hair cutting and shaving saloon. The price for hair cutting was a dollar—shaving 50 cents. In the *Star* of 1853 he advertises a reduction of 50 per cent. Hair cutting 50 cents, shampooing 50 cents, shaving 25 cents. In addition to his tonsorial services he advertises that he blacks boots, wait on and tends parties, runs errands, takes in clothes to wash, iron and mend; cuts, splits and carries in wood; and in short performs any work, honest and respectable, to earn a

genteel living and accommodate his fellow creatures. For character he refers to all the gentlemen in Los Angeles. Think of what a character he must have had.

There is often both tragedy and comedy, as well as business, mixed up in advertisements. In the *Star* of forty-eight years ago appears the ad of a great prize lottery or gift enterprise. It was called the "Great Southern Distribution of Real Estate and Personal Property," by Henry Dalton. The first prize was an elegant modern built dwelling house on the Plaza valued at \$11,000. There were 84,000 shares in the lottery, valued at \$1 each, and 432 first class prizes to be drawn. Among the prizes were 240 elegant lots in the Town of Benton. Who among you pioneers can locate that lost and long since forgotten metropolis of the Azusa—the City of Benton?

For some cause unknown to me the drawing never came off. A distinguished pioneer sued Dalton for the value of one share that he held. The case was carried from one court to another and fought out before one legal tribunal after another with a vigor and viciousness unwarranted by the trivial amount involved. How it ended I cannot say. I never traced it through the records to a finish.

Old ads are like tombstones. They recall to us the memory of the "has beens;" they recall to our minds actors who have acted their little part in the comedy or tragedy of life and passed behind the scenes, never again to tread the boards.

And now, in the Wonder City of the West, it is like hearing the tenuous voices of a dream to read these old advertisements and to pass in memory's review the long departed merchants of the Los Angeles that used to be.



## CHAPTER XI

### THE PORT O' SHIPS

California has a coast line approximately 1,000 miles in length, with only two natural harbors. It has bights innumerable and many coast indentations that are no more than roadsteads in which ships of small burden might anchor safely from a storm if the storm were not over violent. But it has only two natural harbors—San Francisco and San Diego.

Sometime in some far-away and forgotten age of the earth a seismic disturbance doubtless caused a mile or so of the coast line opposite the rocky farallones to sink into the sea, the waters of which immediately poured into a vast area of low valley lands and thus was formed the magnificent and peerless harbor of San Francisco. It was so named by Fray Junipero Serra in honor of the patron saint and founder of his order, San Francis of Assisi.

And the mile or so of land that an earthquake sank into the sea, thus forming an entrance to the harbor of Saint Francis was fitly and beautifully named the "Golden Gate" by Capt. John C. Fremont, the immortal "pathfinder," in one of his official reports to the Government at Washington.

Just how the harbor of San Diego was formed by Nature, we are not aware, having seen no account of it, but this would be beside the board, anyway. It is enough to know that it is there—the Bay of San Diego shining blue against the sea—beautiful and lovely, a haven not alone for ships, but a great port in which the armadas of the world could assemble with ease.

We are not to be misled by the maps that were made and sent to Spain by the ancient mariners who first sailed the coast of California. If they were to be believed, California fairly bristled with harbors. They even mapped California out as a great island.

The fact is that almost any hole in the coast would do for a harbor for the little tubs of ships in which Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, the discoverer, and Sebastian Viscano and Sir Francis Drake sailed in the old times of the sea. The wonder is that they sailed so far, and made conquest of the whole earth, indeed, in these little ships, aboard of which the man of the present day would not care to venture across the quiet and placid waters of the channel between San Pedro and the Island of Santa Catalina.

Wherefore, we are to observe that what might be considered a port a hundred years ago, or even fifty years ago, would by no means constitute a port for the great ocean burden-bearers of today.

Now, as all the world knows, the port of the City of Los Angeles is the Bay of San Pedro. And it will doubtless prove interesting to know with what favor or disfavor that indentation of the coast was regarded by the old-timers.

In his log book, referred to at more length in an early chapter of this book, we find that one Rodriguez Cabrillo, the discoverer of California and the first white man ever to lay eyes on San Pedro as far as we know, refers to the harbor as being "a Port enclosed and very good." But, as we have previously remarked, while the Bay of San Pedro in the year 1542 might have been "a Port enclosed and very good" for the little galleons of Cabrillo, we may as well be frank to admit that it wouldn't be anything like that at all for the present day liners and freighters that now find anchorage there in ever increasing numbers. However, Los Angeles cannot be so poor in gratitude as to fail to remember always that so great a sailorman as Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo, who was also the first sailorman to put into our harbor, was very complimentary to it.

Still, it was always regarded as a harbor, more or less, and when a ship was built at the Mission of San Gabriel a century ago, it was launched at San Pedro as being the natural and best adapted place from which to launch a ship.

It seems that Sebastian Viscano in the year 1602 also regarded San Pedro (the original name of which, by the way,

was San Miguel) with much favor. He also said it was a good port.

All these ancient reports of San Pedro, however, became little or not at all known to the commercial world, being buried in the archives of Spain throughout the long years of nearly two centuries when California was as much forgotten as though the good Lord had never created it.

But in the year 1835 a Yankee sailor came to California who made San Pedro and all the other harbors and ports of California familiar to commerce. And the way he did it was by writing about them in a book which was widely read and which had created, indeed, a profound sensation. This book was called "Two Years Before the Mast," and was written by Richard Henry Dana, a Harvard undergraduate, who, on account of an affliction of his eyes which jeopardized his sight, put out to sea from New England on a long voyage around the Horn.

Dana said that San Pedro when he saw it first, eighty-five years ago, was not a land-locked bay, but rather one with little more than a crescent-shaped shore, really an open roadstead protected mainly by the outjutting Palos Verdes Hills and the Island of Santa Catalina lying lengthwise with the coast and less than eighteen miles away. On the bluff at the foot of the hills, and facing the sea, a wooden shed was the only building Dana could see from the deck of his little vessel. He wrote in his story of this voyage:

"I learned to my surprise that this desolate-looking place furnished more hides than any port on the coast. It was the only port for a distance of eighty miles, and about thirty miles in the interior was a fine plain country filled with herds of cattle, in the center of which was the Pueblo of Los Angeles—the largest town in California—and several of the largest Missions, to all of which Los Angeles was the seaport."

Cargo from vessels was at this time taken to the land in small boats, while the merchandise—mostly hides—taken in exchange was rolled down the bluff and taken from the shore to the vessel in the same boats.

Twenty-four years later Dana again called at the port,

and in the following words describes the changes that had already taken place in it:

"I could scarce recognize the hill up which we rolled and dragged and pushed our heavy loads. It was no longer the landing place. One had been made at the head of the creek, and boats discharged and took off cargoes from a mole or wharf in a quiet place safe from Southeasters. A tug ran to take off passengers from the steamer to the wharf—for the trade of Los Angeles is sufficient to support such a vessel.

"I walked along the shore to the new landing place where there were two or three storehouses and other buildings fronting a small depot; and a stage coach, I found, went daily between this place and the pueblo."

This stage line was for nearly forty years the common carrier between the pueblo and the harbor.

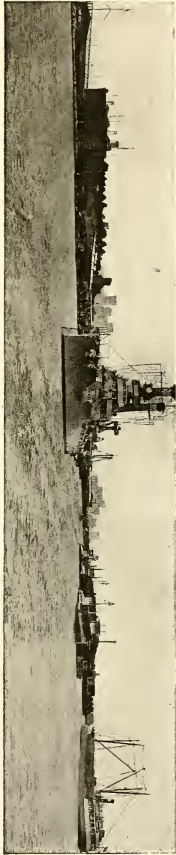
During this period many Americans settled in Los Angeles and it rapidly became the trading place of prime importance to the entire Southwest, and the harbor section grew to have a population of about 3,000 persons.

The time came at last when all these comparatively small traffickings became things of the past and Los Angeles had grown to be a real city with an ever-expanding fertile agricultural country back of it, with a transcontinental railroad running into it, and its affairs constantly assuming huger proportions.

Then the open roadstead at San Pedro and the one wooden wharf that ran out from it wouldn't do at all, and Los Angeles was stared in the face by the solemn fact that it had to have a real harbor and not one that was merely a make-believe.

And so, as it had always done when it needed anything, it went out and got it. If Nature had not made an honest-to-goodness harbor at San Pedro, then Los Angeles itself would make one there.

Thinking upon things like this, there are three outstanding facts of Los Angeles concerning which Nature did not provide for it and which it provided for itself. The first of these things is the railroad—a transcontinental railroad which was surveyed and was being constructed many miles away across the desert, leaving Los Angeles stranded and not



LOS ANGELES HARBOR, GATEWAY TO THE FAR EAST

even within hailing distance of it. But Los Angeles went out to the desert and said to the railroad: "Hey, Railroad, you are overlooking a big bet; you just turn yourself around a little and run over here to Los Angeles." And the railroad did it. In later times it had no river to supply it with water. So it trekked 250 miles over hills and valleys and across deserts, found a river flowing from the eternal snows of the Sierras, bought it and paid for it and turned it into big pipes with the result that the city will have water and plenty of it as long as it lives. In the same way it had no harbor that could be called a harbor. So it just naturally went to work and dug out one.

When it came to the point that Los Angeles had to have a real harbor, there was a big fight over it—a long and a bitter fight. Men still not very old can remember it.

The fight was between the Southern Pacific Railroad and the people. The Southern Pacific Railroad wanted the harbor located at Santa Monica, which would not only be to the railroad's advantage, but would give that once aggressive and pugnacious institution control over the commercial destinies of Los Angeles for all time to come. The people wanted the harbor at San Pedro, where it would be owned and controlled by the people. And, after years of acrimonious struggle and bickerings, the people won their point.

The story of the building of the Port of San Pedro, now known officially as the Harbor of Los Angeles, is of intense interest, and we are indebted to Mr. Christopher Gordon of the harbor commission for a relation of the following important facts:

About 1870 the Los Angeles and San Pedro Railroad was built to connect Los Angeles with Wilmington. This road was later transferred to the Southern Pacific Company as an inducement for it to build from San Francisco through Los Angeles and on into Texas.

This railroad construction naturally gave a great impetus to the business of the port, and about this time the United States Government began to take a hand in improving it in the interest of navigation and commerce.

At this time less than two feet of water covered the entrance to the inner harbor at low tide.

In 1871 the Federal Government commenced jetty construction at Dead Man's Island, with a view to having the tides scour out a deeper channel to Wilmington. This plan was successful, and with a little dredging and the expenditure of about \$400,000 such improvement in port conditions was effected that about 1885 a new realization of the port's significance was had and a movement was started to have the Government build a breakwater to protect the outer harbor.

The Southern Pacific about this time extended its Wilmington branch on into San Pedro, and in 1891 the Los Angeles Terminal Railway built a railroad on Rattlesnake Island, thus opening up the east side of the harbor by rail communication.

The Government then undertook to build the breakwater, and this was completed about 1910 at a cost of \$3,100,000 and with a length of 11,050 feet.

Later, at its outermost end, a splendid lighthouse was built.

During these years much dredging was done by the Government, not only in the main channel and turning basin, but also in the east and west basins, and later a considerable amount of dredging was done by the city in the east basin and in the Wilmington and the Mormon Island channels.

The harbor lines as fixed about this time have a length of about twenty miles—a pier line frontage that can be increased very considerably by the dredging of slips.

About this time the State of California transferred to the City of Los Angeles all its tide land holdings in and about the harbor, and these, after much litigation, became finally—to the extent of nearly 2,000 acres—the holdings of the city. Of these about 400 acres are in the outer harbor.

In 1906 Los Angeles extended its boundaries to the harbor district towns.

In 1907 the first Board of Harbor Commissioners of the City of Los Angeles was created by city ordinance. This Board proceeded energetically with the steps necessary to bring the harbor district within the corporate limits of the

city, to the end that the financial strength of the big and growing city might be employed in developing its harbor.

Early in 1909, by act of the State Legislature, the consolidation of the harbor municipalities with the city became possible. As an inducement to consolidation the city agreed to spend \$10,000,000 in harbor development, and in August of that year the entire harbor district became a part of the city.

In 1910 the city voted \$3,000,000 in harbor bonds to start the work, and in 1912, after litigation by opposing interests, this money became available.

In 1913 the city voted a bond issue of \$2,500,000. These issues with \$4,500,000, voted in 1919, making up the \$10,000,000 agreed upon.

The events of these few years really constituted the birth of a great seaport, and in 1912 a newly organized board proceeded at once to prepare for the shipping that was expected to come with the opening of the Panama Canal.

A reinforced concrete wharf 2,520 feet long was built on the west side of Pier 1 and another 400 feet long at the head of the west channel—both in the outer harbor. On the 2,520-foot wharf was built a steel and concrete transit shed 1,800 feet long by 100 feet wide, with clear span, with concrete fire walls 600 feet apart, steel smoke aprons and automatic sprinkling system—one of the finest buildings of its kind in the country.

Five railroad tracks and a 50-foot concrete roadway were installed on the pier, and a magnificent reinforced concrete warehouse, 152x480 feet in area and having six stories and a basement, equipped with automatic sprinkler system, whip hoists, elevators, outside stairways, cargo chutes, two railroad tracks inside the building and, in fact, all that goes to make it the peer of its kind in the United States.

On Pier "A" about 3,000 feet of creosoted pile wharf was constructed, and on it four steel on wood frame transit sheds all 100 feet in width, single span, with automatic sprinklers, and of lengths varying from 500 to 1,000 feet each, with four railroad tracks serving them and a 50-foot concrete roadway.





LOS ANGELES HARBOR AS A LUMBER RECEIVING PORT

At this enormous pier docked the American-Hawaiian Steamship Company and the Independent Steamship Company, and later the Pacific Steamship Company, the Los Angeles-Pacific Navigation Company, the Williams-Diamond Line and the California Pacific Steamship Company.

At the head of Slip 5 was constructed a wharf 670 feet long, and on it a transit shed 100x530 feet with railroad and highway service, as on the other piers.

Ferry terminals were installed at various places in the harbor. A vast amount of dredging was done in order to furnish adequate depth for the ships that were expected.

A fish harbor was created on Terminal Island, on which the fishing fleet could tie up to a 1,600-foot wharf that was constructed in front of the area set aside for fish canneries.

A wholesale fish market was constructed on the west side of the main channel, in which all of the wholesale dealers in fresh fish could be accommodated on equal terms and in a perfectly modern and sanitary building.

At First Street a wharf 330 feet long was constructed and on it an umbrella shed and a two-story building to house the pilots, the port warden, the wharfinger and offices for the steamship company using the wharf.

On the main turning basin was built, for the Standard Oil Company, a wharf 800 feet long, and across the way a wharf for the Union Oil Company, while on the breakwater a loading station site was provided for the General Petroleum Company.

A municipal belt railway was decided upon, and to date some fourteen miles of this railway have been built.

In addition to creating paved roadways serving all wharves, additional approaches to the harbor were created.

In the midst of this construction activity the great war was started, and as this took nearly all ships from the Pacific, the benefits expected from the Panama Canal could not materialize. As the funds for harbor development were exhausted about the same time, the work of harbor building, in large part, ceased for about four years and until a new bond issue by the City of Los Angeles of \$4,500,000 was voted and harbor work resumed.



FISH HEADQUARTERS, LOS ANGELES HARBOR  
This Reclaimed Average is Central Point in \$6,000,000 Fish Industry

The Harbor Department operates on Santa Catalina Island its own quarry, from which the rock needed for bulkheads, roads, etc., is taken.

It is now installing the latest mechanical appliances for handling cargo with speed and cheapness.

It has plans of further harbor development pressingly needed that will require, in addition to the present bond fund of \$4,500,000, another \$10,000,000 at least to complete.

The war, which took away the shipping, created in the harbor a large shipbuilding industry consisting of two shipyards with three ways each for wooden ships, and two shipyards with six ways each for steel ships. It was at least partly the means of locating the largest United States submarine base on the Pacific Coast in the harbor. It greatly increased the fish canning industry, an industry which in and about the port engages seven or eight hundred fishing boats.

The war helped to increase the fuel oil, gasoline and kerosene business in the port.

The war increased the demand for raw cotton, so that California and Arizona went into cotton-growing with great and surprising success, and Los Angeles Harbor became an important cotton port, and port officials installed a high density cotton compress.

A large refrigeration and ice-making plant is about to be installed to meet the growing demands of the fishing industry.

A vegetable oil trading and refining plant is being installed to take care of the vegetable oil business coming from the Orient and the South Seas.

A stockyard is being created to take care of importation of stock.

A supply of steam coal has been provided in the port for bunkering coal-burning ships. The bunkering of ships with crude oil is taken care of by three of the largest companies in the country, one of which has an enormous oil refinery a few miles from the port, and another is completing an enormous oil refinery within the harbor district.

A 10,000-ton floating dry dock is nearing completion.

A new and very fine fire boat has lately been built and brought into the service of the port.



GREAT OIL TANKERS PLYING IN AND OUT OF THE HARBOR

The United States Navy on the Pacific uses the port extensively, and the flagship of the admiral has Los Angeles as its home port.

The Globe Milling Company maintains and operates a grain elevator on the main channel.

Five of the largest lumber companies have extensive yards and mills on the waterfront.

A 10,000-ton marine railway for ship repairs, etc., is about to be installed on the west basin.

A channel to the Long Beach Harbor has been dredged, making it possible to create thirty miles of still water dockage in the inner harbor alone.

In 1920 the following steamship lines operated to and from the port:

Pacific Motorship Company (Los Angeles Pacific Navigation Company, agents)—Paita, Eten, Callao, Mollendo, Arica, Iquique and Valparaiso.

Los Angeles Pacific Navigation Company. Direct sailings—Honolulu, Yokohama, Kobe, Shanghai, Hongkong, Manila, Singapore, and return.

California & Mexico Steamship Company—Lower California and Mexican ports.

Pacific Mail Steamship Company (M. F. McLaurin, Inc.)—Balboa and way ports. All important Mexican and Central American ports. Also sailings for Havana, Cuba, and Baltimore, Maryland.

Gulf Mail Steamship Company (Los Angeles Pacific Navigation Company)—Guaymas, Topolobampo, La Paz, Mazatlan, San Blas, Manzanillo, Acapulco, Salina Cruz, Champerico, San Jose de Guatemala, Acajutla, La Libertad, La Union, Amapala, Corinto, San Juan, Puntarenas, South American ports.

Rolph Mail Steamship Company (Rolph Mills & Co.)—Mexican, Central American and South American ports as far south as Valparaiso.

South American Pacific Line (Rolph Mills & Co.)—Mazatlan, Manzanillo, Acapulco, Salina Cruz, Champerico, San Jose de Guatemala, Acajutla, La Libertad, La Union, Amapala,

Corinto, Puntarenas, Buenaventura, Manta Guayaquil, Callao, Mollendo, Arica, Antofagasta, Valparaiso.

Toyo Kisen Kaisha—Salina Cruz, Balboa, Callao, Arica, Iquique, Valparaiso.

Harrison Direct Line of Steamers (Balfour, Guthrie & Co.)—English ports.

Norway Pacific Line—Scandinavian ports.

Johnson Line (M. F. McLaurin, Inc.)—Scandinavian ports. (Sailings contingent upon cargo offerings.)

Williams, Dimond & Co.—New York, European and English ports. (Sailings contingent upon cargo offerings.)

Pacific Steamship Company (Admiral Line)—San Diego, San Francisco, Seattle, Tacoma, Victoria, B. C.; Vancouver, B. C.; Everett, Puget Sound ports, Mexican and Central American ports.

McCormick Steamship Company—San Diego, Redondo, San Francisco, Eureka, Portland, Gray's Harbor, Puget Sound ports.

Luckenbach Steamship Company—New York sailings.

North Atlantic and Western Steamship Company—Philadelphia and Boston sailings.

General Steamship Corporation—South American and Australian ports.

Swayne & Hoyt, Inc.—West Coast and East Coast South American ports.

Los Angeles is now known as the great seaport of the Southwest. An enormous commerce on the seas is assured it. The fledgling has become a young eagle with an eye on half the world. It shares with San Francisco and Seattle the trade of the Pacific—still in its infancy—but destined to grow with marvelous rapidity.

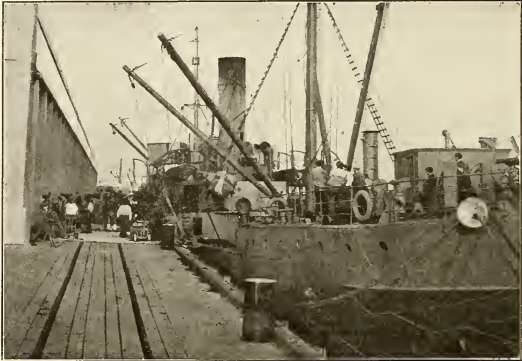
It is a municipally-controlled and regulated port, and this largely by reason of the fact that it is in large part a municipally-owned and operated port.

The rail haul to it is shorter and is made under better operating conditions from most parts of the United States than to other Pacific ports.

Its water highway to the Orient, Australia, New Zealand,

the Philippines and Hawaiian Islands is in the favorite Sunshine Belt.

It may be a source of surprise to know that the building of this haven has not required an extraordinary expenditure of money. Nature has already done so much to assist man in his labor that the trouble of construction was rendered easy. The breakwater cost \$2,900,000, and the dredging of the inner harbor up to the year 1910, \$1,638,000. And think what has



STEAMSHIP UNLOADING WHEAT FROM AUSTRALIA

been done with that comparatively small amount of money. It has required five and ten times as much to accomplish the same result in other harbors.

There will be comparatively small expense for yearly dredging to keep the harbor deep enough, as is the case with most large harbors of the world. This fact alone will mean a large saving. A great deal of the money allowed by the Government will be used in building proper fortifications.

The necessity and importance of fortification construction cannot be exaggerated. If one but stops to think how unprotected we are in this section of the country, one will see the



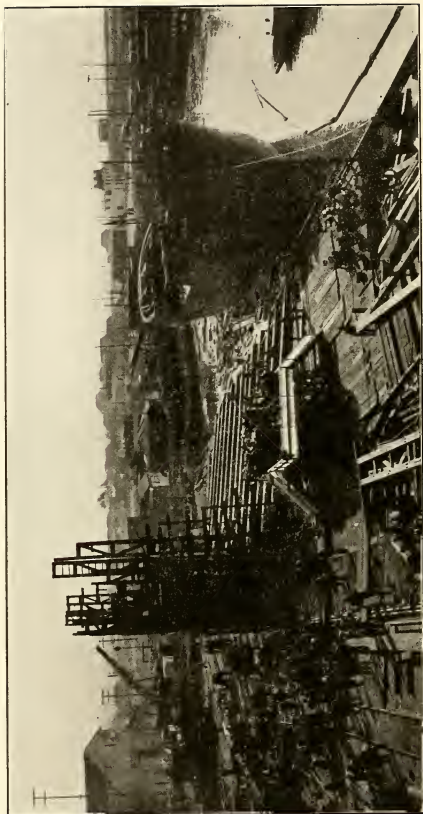
necessity of something being done to strengthen our position. The Government has spent millions of dollars fortifying the Atlantic coast, but on the Pacific coast only a very few of the most important seaports are made safe from danger in case of war. There is no reason why the most thriving part of the Pacific coast should be so situated that an enemy can walk right in its door without knocking. A few years from now there will be greater necessity for this protection, because the surrounding territory is being populated at such a surprising rate. The safety of millions of people will be brought into question, not to speak of the danger to shipping as well as to the harbor itself.

And now to begin with the advantages accruing to the Southwest through the harbor.

There has been a steady growth from year to year in the shipping business of Southern California. Some years have seen a remarkable increase, but it has to a great extent been dependent on the facilities for commerce which were developed. Most of the products have been exported by rail, but large quantities have also gone by water. Nevertheless, in the past we have not had a deep enough harbor to furnish the best accommodations for ships, and therefore could not receive goods from the largest ones. This, of course, hampered our foreign trade. Some of the large harbors of the world have appropriated large sums of money to deepen their gateways. As for the gateway to Los Angeles harbor it will be wide enough and deep enough for many years to come.

The trade of Los Angeles Harbor is nothing to be ashamed of. Even without the great possibilities which the Panama Canal will open up to us, we would unquestionably have a great trade anyway. But when the salient feature of the great circle route between the Panama Canal and the Orient, being only seventy miles from the entrance of the inner harbor, is taken into consideration, no one can imagine how much the harbor will mean.

In 1910 the crop of oranges and lemons amounted to almost 41,000 carloads. The tremendous quantity of citrus fruit that is shipped has to be forwarded by rail and at a very high freight rate. By water this crop should reach New York in



GREAT SHIPBUILDING COMPANY PREPARING FOR THE FUTURE

from thirteen to twenty days, depending entirely on the speed of the vessels plying on the route. At present it takes twelve days by rail, but what will the few days' difference amount to when the difference in rates is taken into consideration?

It is expected that oranges and lemons will be shipped to New York by water at the cost of one-third the rail rate. The icing of a car of oranges or lemons from Los Angeles to New York costs about \$75. On shipboard the temperature is always very even, much more so than on land, and if there is any necessity for refrigeration it can easily be done by the circulation of a refrigeration fluid by the engines. This can be accomplished by the use of a very little power, and consequently at a very low cost.

We should also ship to Europe at a considerably lower cost by the all water route. It is expected that freight will be sent to Liverpool and London by water at the cost of from \$7 to \$9 a ton. The rail rate for citrus fruits is far in excess of that.

As far as time is concerned, it takes three weeks for the citrus products to reach Europe now, while by the Panama Canal it should not take more than three or four weeks.

Thus it can be seen that the principal advantage of the Panama Canal is the furnishing of a new and cheaper manner of transportation to the eastern part of the United States. The railroads will have to lower their freight rates to the East, and therefore, traffic will be benefited in every direction.

Not only will we have a tremendous trade with the Atlantic coast and Europe by water, but there are many things raised in the Southwest which should build up a large commerce with the Far East. Lemons have been sent to Japan by way of San Francisco. Besides there should be a considerable demand for dried as well as deciduous fruits in the Orient. But one of the principal exports to the regions across the Pacific is cotton. In Imperial Valley cotton is being raised very successfully and it is said to be the finest in the world. The producers have already had orders from Japanese spinning mills and a number of experts from Japan have visited the field and were well impressed. Besides this, we are in direct communication with Texas, whose annual production of

cotton amounts to some 3,000,000 bales. There will certainly be a sufficient amount to supply the needs of the Orient.

Besides cotton, Japan imports principally iron manufactures, sugar and wool. All of these are produced in this part of the country. The imports of all the countries in the Far East very much resemble these. They export some very valuable products, some of which will be used in the Southwest. From China we will be able to procure pig iron at low figures. From Japan some very fine hardwood has been shipped, and the oak which has been received competes with eastern oak. Other exports are silk, coal, tea, matting, ore, bullion and camphor.

The commerce with Mexico has gone to San Francisco, but in the future there will be no reason on earth for sending the freight from Mexican points an extra 358 miles up the coast to San Francisco, when the same can be landed at San Pedro. In the new regions of the west coast of Mexico the people require a large amount of machinery and tools to develop their land, all of which Los Angeles can manufacture and send down to them. Once we have put in our claim to this trade, we will find that a large amount of produce, especially tropical fruits, can be brought to this place at a much less cost than at present. For all these tropical products we have had to pay a very high land freight rate, because most of them came through New Orleans to the coast.

From the west coast of Mexico we are able to secure these goods at a much lower price because we have vessels plying regularly between our harbor and their shipping places. There are excellent pineapples, bananas, and beds of oysters five feet thick to be found there. These oysters are as good as any found on this coast, and better than some which come from the Atlantic coast. In this region, which is situated in about the central part of Mexico, there is a great demand for dried fruits, and all kinds of groceries, principally condensed milk and butter. Most of the condensed milk is brought from Seattle, which, of course, means an extra trip of over 1,000 miles.

In this way Los Angeles has for years been losing trade which now logically falls to its lot. There have been plenty

of supplies, but we were hampered in our shipping facilities. The day is soon coming when we will be able to put in our claim for our own trade.

There are great riches stored in all parts of Mexico, and it will only require time and money to develop them. With the proper facilities for transportation and the consequent opportunity for bringing to light the wealth still concealed from the eyes of man, the possibilities for a great trade between those regions and the United States are enormous. Los Angeles Harbor will, on account of its proximity and the excellent railroad transportation to the interior which it offers, claim a great part in this commerce.

If such a wonderful commerce was given to Seattle by the discovery of gold in Alaska, what will Mexico mean to Los Angeles with its rich mineral deposits and also its agricultural products? In Alaska severe winters have to be faced by people unaccustomed to them, but in Mexico one will be secure from cold weather and plenty of assistance can be had at a very low rate from thoroughly acclimated natives.

The same may be said of South America, for in many respects the products are similar. There are rich mineral deposits still undeveloped.

In this direction lies one of the great openings of Southern California. From the wonderful lands south of us wealth is staring us in the face. A chance like this has seldom been given to any land.

Of course, Los Angeles will be the great center of attraction for tourists. The people who pass through on their way to the Orient will stop for a few days in the magic wonderland and visit the various attractive resorts and see the rich country surrounding Los Angeles. These tourists always bring a large amount of money into the city and the railroads derive a thriving business from this vast increase of sight-seers.

Many people are making the trip to the Orient and around the world at the present day. Very often they come to the western coast of America and leave from there for the Far East. Most of them make Los Angeles their final stopover,

because they visit Puget Sound and then come down the coast to Los Angeles by rail, through Portland, or they come via San Francisco. They were once forced to retrace their steps to take the steamship at San Francisco, but Los Angeles can accommodate the trans-Pacific liners now, and so these people take the vessels here.

In connection with this another fact bearing on the development of the Southwest should be mentioned. It has oftentimes been found difficult to secure labor, especially for fruitpicking, and sometimes the labor secured has not always been the most satisfactory. In the future good laboring men will be able to come via Panama at a rate much cheaper than the present one by water and rail. This, of course, will go far toward increasing and unearthing the hidden resources of the Southwest.

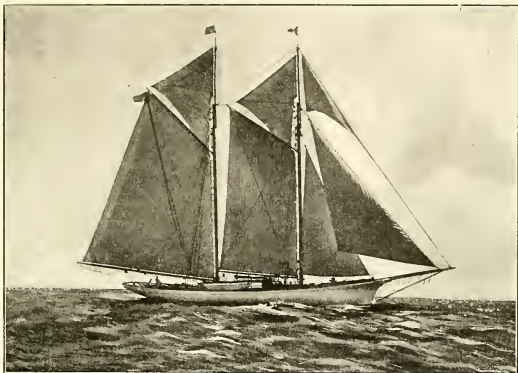
Manufacturing in Los Angeles has been increasing steadily every year, and is taking great leaps now that this is the maritime city of the Southwest. Think of the ease with which we can procure fuel. Here we can obtain millions of barrels of oil, on which great sums are saved for every barrel burned.

Most of the manufactories and warehouses of the future will be located in the vicinity of the harbor. There are excellent sites for these near San Pedro. Also back of Wilmington there is admirable flat land, on which vast numbers of them can be erected. A special advantage in regard to manufacturing will be the ideal climate, which will render all labor easy. The men will not have to struggle through heavy snowdrifts to reach their occupations, nor will they swelter under a burning sun which strikes to death with the force of its terrible rays.

Until we are finally prepared for receiving the vessels, we will not be able to half appreciate the great advantages which we will have. It will be a glorious awakening to behold the rays of the rising sun calling the laborers to another day of life-bringing toil. And as the great orb of day rises higher in the sky, at each stage, he will turn the emerald seas to sparkling crystal as the prows of a continuous stream of passing vessels wake to life the sleeping waters of the Bay of San Pedro. All day long there will be a bustle about the

wharves and docks, the loading and unloading of vessels, the departure and arrival of the great argosies.

When the evening sun sinks to rest behind the grim outlines of Point Firmin, the giant guarding the harbor, he will light the whole expanse with the golden rays of his setting. And perhaps some ship with sails spread, waiting for the first touch of the soft night breeze, will be kindled by the



SLIDING OUT OF LOS ANGELES HARBOR

glorious golden light shot through the sky by the king of day, until those very decks and sails seem aflame.

Gradually the light dies down and the ship becomes a gray specter on the grayer sea. But the Southwest, having beheld that sight, will know that another day has passed, another day that has been a day of labor, but labor fully rewarded, a day bringing in great wonders, and a day carrying away greater wonders. Above all, and through all, with the throb of the great liners' engines, will be heard the voice of the Southwest singing, always singing of the golden wonderland; of the land of Cathay; of the land of health, happiness and prosperity.

## CHAPTER XII

### THE AQUEDUCT

In my book "California," published by the Grafton Publishing Corporation, I made the following statement:

"The story of the Owens River Aqueduct is the story of a great city builded on a desert that one day awoke to the very serious fact that it must stop growing or find more water for its uses. The city did not desire to stop growing, but there was no more water anywhere within sight that it could obtain. It had utilized to the utmost limit every drop of water in every stream to which it had a right. The city that faced this grave problem was the City of Los Angeles."

And also, here again, in order to discuss the present and to forecast the future, we find ourselves compelled to revert to the past—that beautiful and mighty past when were laid the cornerstones of the commonwealth, and when California's career among civilized communities was begun. Wherefore, I ask the indulgence of my readers to quote again from my book "California":

"In considering the present and future greatness of California, the imagination constantly reverts to the first attempts that were made at civilization and commercial progress. One who knows and loves the story of California can never behold the great irrigation ditches which wake to living bloom the vast stretches of opulent plain and valley without seeing, as in a dream, the first uncertain waterway which Junipero Serra projected in the Mission Valley of San Diego. As one speeds now upon the shining highways that link towns and cities together from end to end of the Golden State, memory stirs in the loving heart, the dream of days when the Mission hospices, with their flocks and herds on the hill-sides, and the Indian neophytes chanting in the harvest fields, awaited the welcome traveller on the King's Highway. And





HEADWATERS OF OWENS RIVER, SOURCE OF LOS ANGELES WATER SUPPLY

thus Junipero Serra stands forth the first and greatest character of which California yet can boast—her first missionary, her first merchant, the first of her empire builders.”

It is difficult to believe that Southern California, before the coming of white men, was really a desert. But that is what it was. It is now a great garden and lush with bloom, its agricultural and horticultural products running into many millions of dollars in a commercial way annually. But when the mission of San Gabriel was founded in 1771, and the pueblo of Los Angeles founded ten years later, water was the least plentiful thing to be found between the Tehachapi and San Diego. The rivers and streams of the country were then, as now, dry streaks of sand throughout the long hot summers.

When Los Angeles was founded in 1781 there was in sight a quantity of water available for domestic and farming purposes sufficient only to meet the needs of a small community. And everything was all right in this respect for many and many a year while Los Angeles remained a mere village, sleepy and contented.

It was only when the “gringo” came and insisted on making a city where it seemed that neither God nor man ever intended a city should be, that the problem of water became momentous.

It is true, however, that by one means and another, the ingenuity of the engineers was able to cope with the situation. But the engineers were always at their wits' ends. Every year more and more people came to make Los Angeles a bigger town, but Nature did nothing to bring more water to it.

We can realize what the situation came to be if we will go back to the year 1905 when the population of Los Angeles was in the neighborhood of 200,000 souls.

In the month of July of that year the city found itself using every day 4,000,000 gallons of water more than was flowing into its reservoirs. The water commission found itself figuratively tossing on its bed and spending sleepless nights. It sent out its engineers on a quest for more water, as though by some magic or miracle the rocks might be smitten and heretofore unknown springs might be discovered.

And the engineers came back only to say that no possible source of water supply that could by any stretch of the imagination be considered adequate existed anywhere south of the Tehachapi or west of the range of mountains whose backbone lies back of San Bernardino.

It was of the future that these worried water commissioners and the engineers had to think. Los Angeles absolutely declined to cease growing. The experts estimated that by 1925 Los Angeles would have reached a population of 400,000 people. And it would be a city then tragically short of water. We can see now that as a matter of fact the estimate of the experts was entirely too conservative. For, as we are writing this book in the year of our Lord 1920, the population of Los Angeles is quite 600,000, and that in all likelihood it will reach 750,000 in 1925, the time fixed by the experts for it to reach 400,000.

It was in this critical year of 1905 that there came down from the snows of the high Sierras in the character of a Moses, an old-time lover and long-time resident of Los Angeles who had abandoned his old home town to devote his life to ranching far away to the north among the great mountain peaks of Inyo County.

This man was Fred Eaton, sometime city engineer and sometime mayor of Los Angeles.

The day that Fred Eaton came down from the mountains of Inyo to lay before the officials of Los Angeles his plan for a water supply is a day that should be set down in history. And Fred Eaton himself must be set down in history. His idea was to secure possession of the Owens River with its inexhaustible supply of snow waters from the high Sierras and divert its course through conduits over mountain and desert, a distance of 250 miles, for the relief of the city that was well beloved by him and that had heaped upon him its favors and its highest honors.

With the eye of the engineer, Fred Eaton saw that in former ages the Owens River had probably flowed along the eastern base of the Sierra Nevada and had emptied itself into the Mojave Sink. A rock uplift, maybe a million years ago, had interrupted this flow and confined it to the unfathomed

basin of Owens Lake, from which today there is no known outlet.

In these statements concerning the Owens River Aqueduct, I wish to say that I am quoting freely, and frequently verbatim, from authoritative published documents.

Fred Eaton was convinced from long and careful study of the Owens River waters and the geological formations hedging it in, that the obstacles standing in the way of making the old river available as far south as the San Fernando Range, near Los Angeles, could be easily overcome by means of tunnels and siphons, and thus be delivered to the City of Los Angeles. He was also convinced that the project, if carried to a conclusion, would develop electrical power of immense capacity.

Permeated to the very soul with this great dream, Fred Eaton came on a fateful day to Los Angeles, and unfolded his vision to the devoted officials in whose hands the destinies of the city were then entrusted.

Eaton submitted his idea in the greatest secrecy. His consuming fear was that his great dream might become publicly known with the result that private commercial interests would seize upon it, and that the city—which meant all its people—would lose forever the one supreme opportunity which was its salvation.

Wherefore, with the utmost stealth, and as men going forth on a profound secret mission, the discovery of which would spell disaster, the city sent its engineers to examine into the whole project. And when the engineers had reported the project to be entirely feasible, the Board of Water Commissioners secretly acquired all the necessary options on land and water rights to safeguard the project from every conceivable angle.

The engineers estimated that to build the aqueduct an expenditure of \$23,000,000 would be necessary. The tremendous cost, almost unparalleled in the history of American municipalities, and the boldness of the project—bolder than British dreams of Egypt—did not for a moment dismay the Los Angeles city officials. The officials knew their people—a people brave to do, and long used to big achievement. And they

laid the project before the people with the utmost confidence as to what the answer of the people would be.

I well remember that great morning in the month of July when this thrilling dream of the Owens River for Los Angeles was first made public in the columns of *The Times*, where it was published exclusively. The announcement sent a wild thrill through the whole population. And no wonder. Here was deliverance and salvation. It was like that time in Canaan when Joseph's brethren came back from Egypt laden with corn to succor their famine-stricken homes.

I think it is safe to say that upon the first announcement of this great news there were no discordant voices in the acclamations of joy with which it was received. It is true that later on the project was bitterly assailed from various sources and by various selfish interests. Even to this day, indeed, there are to be found those who will say that the Owens River Aqueduct constituted an extravagant and useless expenditure of the people's money. There are those who say that a sufficient water supply could have been secured nearer at hand and at one-tenth of the expense of the aqueduct. But these carping criticisms are so childishly founded and are voiced by those who are so comparatively outnumbered that they may be dismissed with scant notice. The proof of these statements lies in the fact that when the bond issue was submitted to the people for their approval on September 7, 1905, it was carried by a vote of approximately 15 to 1.

The engineers who surveyed and designed the aqueduct and later built and carried it to completion were William Mulholland, J. B. Lippincott and O. K. Parker. In the actual construction Mulholland and Lippincott were the active spirits, with Mulholland as the real head.

In passing, it would seem that more than this mere mention of William Mulholland should be made in these pages. In future generations it will be his name that will be most remembered when the people of the future recount with well-founded pride the achievements of the men who went before them in the building of their great city. In those times, if not now, some kind of lasting memorial in connection with the Owens River Aqueduct will be erected in honor of Fred

Eaton and William Mulholland—the dreamer and the doer, the man who brought from the snows of the high Sierras the great dream, and the other man who caused the dream to come true.

It seems only natural that a city like Los Angeles should produce such men as William Mulholland. The city, besides being a most stupendous practical achievement, is also a romantic dream. And out of the romance of the town comes the romance of this man Mulholland, who rose from his humble station as the tender of its water ditches when it was a sleepy pueblo to become its chief engineer and to stand in the front rank of the world's greatest engineers when the city had come to take its place among the great cities of the world.

I have been told that when William Mulholland was a boy in Ireland, where he was born, he had a longing for the sea. And that he ran away from home, and that he was taken away on a ship, and that he held to the sea till he served at last before the mast and became a real sailorman; that then he abandoned his sea-faring life and came ashore in America and drifted westward with the restless tides that have ever drifted westward in human history and that are westward drifting still. Until one time, on a sunny morning when he was still young, he found himself in the pueblo of Our Lady the Queen of the Angels, where, happily, he decided to locate.

Mulholland secured a job as "zanjero," which was the old Spanish title given to the man who attends to water ditches. He lived by himself in a cabin beside one of the ditches which were under his care. He followed around about the pueblo on the trail of surveyors and the occasional engineers that the community from time to time employed. At night, in his cabin, he studied books—books on mathematics, surveyor's manuals and works on engineering. His brain was alert and his desire for knowledge of this special nature was insatiable. He plodded patiently and with undaunted courage. And, step by step, he rose in knowledge and ability and in the confidence of the people. He became superintendent of the city's water system. He became known far afield, and was fre-

quently called into consultation to help other engineers solve big problems.

And the time came at length when his own city stood face to face with as big a problem as any city had ever faced in history—a problem requiring the expenditure of \$23,000,000 of the people's money. And without the least hesitation, without discussion whatever, the whole project was placed in William Mulholland's hands and he was told to go ahead.

Of course Mr. Mulholland was supported by the best advice available. Three of the most prominent engineers in the United States were at the beginning employed as a consulting board to thoroughly canvass the project. They endorsed Mr. Mulholland's report and pronounced his plans as being thoroughly feasible. It was then proposed that a bond issue of \$23,000,000 be submitted to the voters, this amount to cover construction. The people, at an election held June 12, 1907, gave their approval to this proposal by a vote of 10 to 1.

The Board of Public Works then took charge of work and, in combination with the Water Board, worked out a plan and the details of the great enterprise. The plan in brief was: To take the water from the Owens River, 35 miles north of Owens Lake, carry it through an open canal for 60 miles to a large reservoir, the Haiwee, with a capacity of 20,000,000,000 gallons, then to carry it another 128 miles through combination of conduits, tunnels and siphons to a reservoir at Fairmont on the northern side of proposed tunnel through the San Fernando Mountains, the tunnel to be 26,870 feet in length and to be a pressure tunnel regulated by the reservoir at Fairmont. From the southern portal of the tunnel the water would drop from the rapidly descending San Francisco Canyon, where big possibilities for power development existed, and by natural channels, tunnels, siphons and conduits, a distance of fifteen miles to the San Fernando reservoir and the upper end of the San Fernando Valley, a total distance of about 225 miles from the intake to the San Fernando reservoir.

It was realized that the long tunnel under the San Fernando Mountains would be the largest piece of work in con-

nection with the enterprise, and this work was at once started, working from both ends.

The general water plan of the city is now laid down roughly as follows: The water now developed and carried through the aqueduct is sufficient to accommodate a population of some 3,000,000 people. The city has laid down the policy that no territory shall be given the use of its present surplus supply which is not prepared to amalgamate with and become a part of the city. Large areas now inside the incorporated limits of the city are still farming lands, and surplus water is used on these for irrigation purposes at rates which they can afford to pay. Rights have been obtained for **additional sources of supply**, and plans are made for their development for future use. Preliminary steps are even now being taken to reservoir the Long Valley, an immense area and catchment basin many miles north of the present intake of the aqueduct.

The whole enterprise constitutes a comprehensive plan fully capable, when finally worked out, of taking care of water needs of the city of any possible size in this locality. During its development there has, of course, been much opposition, and many legal difficulties thrown in its way, but these have been mostly overcome and it does not now seem possible that anything can mar the full realization of the plan.

So much preliminary work had to be done that little other permanent construction was under way before the end of 1908. The preliminary work referred to was gigantic in its scope. A branch line from the Southern Pacific Railroad had to be built from Mojave up to the proposed line of the aqueduct to connect with the Owens River Valley. Hundreds of miles of road, pipe line, power transmission line and telegraph and telephone lines had to be built. Fifty-seven camps had to be established along the line, and all their facilities and equipment provided and installed. Provision had to be made for the vast quantities of cement needed for lining conduits and tunnels, and for this purpose the city bought thousands of acres of land in the Tehachapi Mountains covering the necessary deposits of limestone, clay, etc., and built a cement mill with a capacity of 1,000 barrels a day. Large areas of land had to be negotiated for and bought for the pro-



tection of water rights and reservoir sites, and the land so bought aggregated some 135,000 acres.

After general construction started in October, 1908, it was found that in nearly all features of the work the rate of progress was greater and the cost less than the engineers' estimates. Naturally, there were setbacks and delays such as are inevitable in all large works, but notwithstanding these, water was turned through the full length of the aqueduct and delivered at San Fernando on November 5, 1913, where its advent was hailed by a great outpouring of some 30,000 citizens who congregated to welcome the flood which insured the life of Los Angeles as a great city of the future. As it gushed from the mouth of the outlet, the chief engineer, William Mulholland, was called upon for an appropriate address to the assembled citizens. The address consisted of the remark, "There it is, take it."

A fitting finish to a work well conceived and successfully accomplished.

When we speak of the aqueduct being completed and accepted by the city when its flow was delivered to a point at the head of the San Fernando Valley, it must be explained that this was considered a finishing of the aqueduct proper and the further connection to the existing city distributing system was apart from the building of the aqueduct itself.

As a consequence of the bringing of water to the city from Owens River Valley, and of hardly less importance than the water itself are the opportunities made available for electrical power development. In the fall of the aqueduct at various points on its southward course there is available for such power a total gross fall of over 2,000 feet. The general plans for the development of this power were recognized throughout the construction of the aqueduct and provision made to avoid duplication of work, and in September, 1909, the Bureau of Aqueduct Power was created as a part of the organization of the Department of Public Works. A consulting board of three eminent engineers was appointed to pass on the plans, to investigate all the power possibilities, and to advise as to the best methods of maximum development.

As a start for carrying out the power plans, a \$3,500,000



ILLUSTRATING LOS ANGELES AS A WESTERN METROPOLIS  
Miniature of a Giant Photograph Showing the Arrival of the Pacific  
Fleet in Its Harbor

issue of power bonds was authorized at election in April, 1910. But this bond issue was not available until two years later because of court proceedings brought to test their validity. Meantime it was realized that this first bond issue would serve only to build the initial plant for the development of a small proportion of the possible power, and if the greatest benefit was to be obtained power developed by the city must be distributed by the city. Consequently, in May, 1914, an additional power bond issue of \$6,500,000 was voted for the purpose of extending the development work and also for building or procuring by negotiation a distributing system in the city itself.

Los Angeles is already finding that her municipally owned, almost inexhaustible and cheap water supply, together with unlimited and cheap electric power, is to be the deciding factor in making of Los Angeles one of the large manufacturing cities of the United States. Other contributing factors, of course, being the climate, which makes almost continuous work possible, and the harbor, which provides shipping facilities to and from all parts of the world.

In the old days, Los Angeles, tied down by coal at \$9 to \$11 a ton, could not compete as a manufacturing city with districts having cheap fuel available. Then came the year of California oil development which reduced the price of fuel more than half, and manufacturing began to show its head as a possibility. Now the city is entering on its third year from the basis of manufactures, and power development and distribution now make possible successful competition in manufacturing with any city in the United States.

This, therefore, is practically the story of the Owens River Aqueduct. But the mere relation of the facts leaves out much that the imagination must supply. It was a bold stroke. Courage of the very highest order was necessary even to merely consider so gigantic an undertaking. It is not every city of the size of Los Angeles in 1905 that would have had the vision to go 250 miles afield over strange deserts and under mountain peaks to corral a river and lead it captive to its gates.

But it is achievements of this nature that have made Los Angeles what it is today and what it is to be tomorrow.

## CHAPTER XIII

### THE GLORY OF THE SCHOOLS

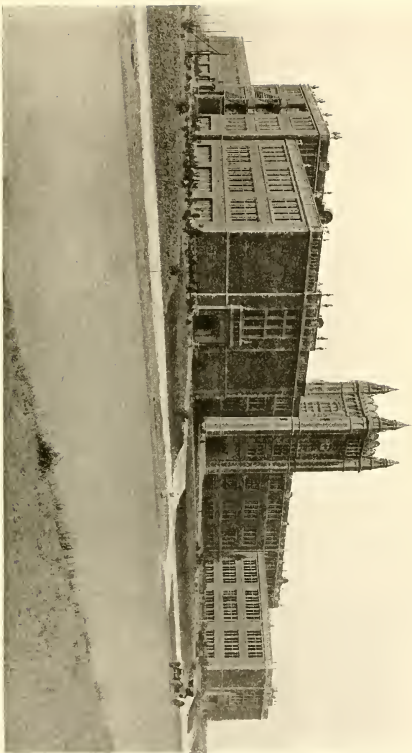
We are indebted to Laura Grover Smith for the following very illuminating and inspiring chronicle of the birth and growth of public education in the City of Los Angeles:

The school in the early pueblo of Los Angeles was not regarded as an indispensable thing in a new community, as it was in New England settlements. Outside of the missions, learning was only fitfully pursued for many years. Now and then an early Spanish or Mexican governor deplored the fact that there were children of school age and that no teachers could be found, but the matter appears to have gone no farther than that for a long time.

The brief records of those early times, as far as "schooling" was concerned, are picturesque reminders of the easy-going days on the great ranchos with more or less indolent splendor, and later of the outer circle of the adventurers of '49 who came this way. It was not until the tide of immigration brought eastern men and women from communities where schools had been established, that education by way of schools became important in the little pueblo of Our Lady of the Angels.

Thirty-seven years from the time of the founding of the pueblo, under a Spanish governor, Maxima Pina taught the first school. It lasted a short two years and he received \$140 a year.

There was a long vacation of several years, and the next record found in the early archives of the city is an item alluding to the fact that the ayuntamiento had allowed the purchase of a bench and table for the use of a school in the pueblo. It does not elaborate the fact, but doubtless the bench and table were for the school kept by Lucian Valdez from 1827-32.



THE LOS ANGELES HIGH SCHOOL.

This was the longest school period under Mexican rule, and was followed by the inevitable long vacation.

The school affairs of the pueblo were entirely under the ayuntamiento, which was all powerful, and its authority extended indefinitely from a geographical standpoint. To belong to this body was an unpaid honor. The only paid officials in the pueblo were the secretary of the ayuntamiento, the *sindic* or tax collector, and the schoolmaster, when there was one. The schoolmaster's salary was not to exceed \$15 a month, and the chief qualification and requirement was that he should not expect, and certainly must not ask for an increase of salary. In the latter event he was to be dismissed as unfit for the office.

In addition to the long vacations, there were frequent short ones when the teacher would be called before the ayuntamiento to explain. It was apparently quite a satisfactory excuse to say that the scholars had run away! Saints' days were holidays, and each child's name saint's day was invariably celebrated, so schools, to say the least, were intermittently conducted.

In 1844 Governor Micheltoarena took the matter of education in his own hands and secured from the state funds a grant of \$500 for any school to be established in the pueblo of Los Angeles. Doubtless he was regarded as very radical, for he went so far as to advocate education for girls. Up to this time girls were not regarded as a part of any scheme of education. What they learned at home in the way of embroidery and sewing were considered quite enough education for women.

A boys' school was soon under way with Ensign Don Guadalupe Medina as teacher. He had already been detached by leave of absence from his military duties. The school was conducted on what was considered at the time most modern methods. And certainly he had an ingenious plan in teaching. By cleverly developing a class of older children under his immediate supervision, these same children were able to teach the younger ones and, in this way, all of his hundred or more pupils had some benefit of direction.

Among the many good things told about this enthusiastic

young man, is the fact that he copied all the reports of the first census ever taken in Los Angeles. This was in the year 1836.

Don Guadalupe Medina, to the regret of the community, was recalled to military duty in 1844. His inventory signed February 2, 1844, reads:

“Thirty spelling books, eleven second readers, fourteen catechisms by Father Repaldi, one table without cover, writing desk, six benches and one blackboard.”

A side light on the recall of Medina to military duty, and the consequent closing of the school, is the fact that the school-house was needed by Pico and Castro for the soldiers, and the bigger boys were expected to change their pens for swords.

A five years' vacation followed.

Standing out in the intermittent teaching of these early days is the school which was presided over by Don Ignacio Coronel and his daughter, Soledad, in 1838-44. The children met in his own house, which was in the neighborhood of the Plaza. Don Ignacio was a man of ability, and the daughter far in advance of her day. She introduced in a simple way something of dramatic teaching and dancing in addition to the usual accomplishments. This was surely a “neighborhood school” and is a charming memory of the early days.

In the year 1847 there was no school whatever in the town. The gold excitement two years later brought eastern young men, who left in passing through, at least a sentiment about schools. But the lure of the gold fields was strong and the population constantly dwindled in numbers.

However, the feeling grew that schools were necessary, and when in 1850 the ayuntamiento was merged into the city council, sentiment in favor of education crystallized into action, and under American rule on July 4, 1851, the first school ordinance was signed.

The first teacher's contract under American rule was signed by Abel Stearns, president of the City Council. It was with Francisco Bustamente, who naively agreed: “to teach the scholars to read and count, and in so far as he was capable, to teach them orthography and good morals.” The

school year was to last four months and his salary was \$60 a month.

Another teacher of the early American days was Hugo Overns, who condescendingly agreed to teach a school aided by city funds, but the city should only send six boys!

The Rev. Henry Weeks and his wife conducted one of these combination schools, city and private, for which they received \$150 a month.

During the early '50s the school authorities and schools were much at sea. Such teachers as could be found taught as they saw fit, for there was no uniform course of study. They began the day when they were ready, and the school year lasted as long as the funds, which was usually about three months.

The schools, until 1852, when a tax of 10 cents per \$100 valuation was made, were either private or partly supported by the city. The subsidies were withdrawn about this time.

With the increasing immigration of eastern people over the mountains and across the plains, and the occasional arrival of a well-trained teacher, the demand grew for an organized system, similar to that in existence in eastern communities, and in 1853, John T. Jones submitted an ordinance "for the establishment and government of city schools." A committee was appointed consisting of J. Lancaster Brent, Louis Granger and Stephen C. Foster, with Mr. Brent, ex officio school superintendent.

To Stephen C. Foster, elected mayor of Los Angeles in 1854, is due the final and definite move to establish free education in this city. He himself was a man of education, was graduated from Yale College. In his appeal to the public at that time he says that "there is a school fund of \$3,000 on hand; there are 500 children of school age, and there is no school house for them."

Three school trustees were immediately appointed: Manuel Requena, Francis Mellus and W. T. B. Sanford. The mayor himself, Stephen C. Foster, was wisely chosen for the newly created office of superintendent of schools.

The year 1855 marked further progress in the erection of the first public school building in the City of Los Angeles,



which stood at the corner of Second and Spring streets. It cost \$6,000.

From this time on the school records become more and more interesting, for, connected with the development of the schools in administration and teaching are many names which are as honored now as they were then. The builders of our school system builded well, and their children and grandchildren are reaping the benefits today.

Mr. Newmark, in his interesting history of Los Angeles, tells of the faculty of that little school on Spring Street. In charge of the boys' department was William A. Wallace, who had come out to study the flora of this coast. Miss Louisa Hayes, who was the first woman teacher here, directed the girls' department. Among the pupils, Mr. Newmark adds, "were Sarah Newmark, her sister Mary Wheeler who married William Pridham, and Lucinda Macy, afterwards Mrs. Foy, who recalls participating in the first school examination."

The population during the period of the Civil war numbered many southern sympathizers, and sectional feeling was bitter at times. This affected the schools in many ways. The oath of allegiance was required at that time from the teachers of the state, and has been since then obligatory, before the issue of certificates. Many were called to the colors at the time, and the school attendance for that reason, and for economic reasons as well, dwindled to 350.

At the close of the war prosperity began, and Los Angeles grew rapidly, and the schools multiplied.

In 1868 the cause of education was quickened by the arrival of experienced instructors, several of whom became influential in laying the foundation of our present school system. Among them were T. H. Rose, Wm. M. McFadden, Anna McArthur, J. M. Guinn, Prof. Wm. Lawlor and P. C. Tonner.

The first teachers' institute ever held in the County of Los Angeles was called in the year 1870. The school building on Bath Street was chosen for the meetings, as it was more central than the one on Second and Spring streets. William McFadden, who was at that time the first county superintendent of schools, was the president of the first institute. J. M. Guinn and W. H. Rose were vice presidents, and P. C.

Tonner was the secretary. There were thirty-five teachers present, eight of whom taught in Los Angeles.

It was an interesting and enthusiastic meeting. It is pleasant to think of the members of this earnest little group hopefully looking to the future. They doubtless knew that their world was changing and the foundations they placed were for others who would come over the plains in the tide of immigration to build on the foundations thus reared. Their dreams, however, could not have pictured all that has come



OLD HIGH SCHOOL SITE OF THE PRESENT COURT HOUSE

to pass. Many of the little group lived to know that their achievement, in the day of small things, formed the corner stone of our present fine educational system.

In 1872, where now stands the courthouse, a school building was erected which for some years was used by the first high school. This was built under the benefit of the first school bond issue, which was for \$20,000. This building was afterwards moved and is now the California Street School.

In 1873, for the first time in the history of the city schools, a professional teacher was appointed to the office of superintendent of schools, Dr. W. T. Lucky, ex-president of the State Normal School. It was a most fortunate choice, and under his supervision the school system expanded rapidly

into a fine and orderly arrangement of graded school following established systems in existence in other cities.

In the previous twenty years of the school system, superintendents were never by chance teachers. Among them were men distinguished in other walks of life, lawyers, doctors, clergymen and merchants.

In 1875 the first graduating class from a high school in the city made its bow to the world in the old "Los Angeles High." The following named composed the graduating class: Henry O'Melveny, Henry Leck, Yda Addis, Addie Gates, Jessie Piel and Lillian Milliken.

From 1853 to 1866 the common council appointed the members of the board of education and the superintendent of schools. From 1866 to 1870 both the board and superintendent were elected by popular vote. In 1870 it was discovered that there was no provision under the existing law for electing a superintendent, so the office was abolished for a period of two years. Then, in 1872, by a special act of the Legislature, it was made legal to elect a board of education consisting of five members with power to appoint a superintendent.

It was the custom from that time until 1881 to elect the principal of the high school to the office of superintendent of schools.

In 1903 the city charter was changed to provide for a non-partisan board of education consisting of seven members to be elected at large from the city. The first board members to be elected were John D. Bicknell, Joseph Scott, S. M. Guinn, Jonathan S. Slanson, Charles C. Davis, Emmett H. Wilson and W. J. Washburn.

The first annual school report was published in 1881, under the superintendency of J. M. Guinn. Each year since then the record has been an eventful one. Every superintendent has matched with the progress of the schools in other states, and each one has left to the school system a wealth of organized ideas and fine ideals which have been followed. They have kept constantly in line with every advancement in ethics and science.

In 1884 the course of study in the high school, the only one at that time, was so graded that a graduate from the school

could enter with full credits any department of the state university.

Until 1895 the only special branch taught was drawing. Many things are taught now from the kindergartens to the high schools, of which the philosophers of that day did not dream. Step by step they have been added as the progress of the world has made its demands.

The kindergarten was regularly established as part of the school system in 1889. Madame Severance, whose memory is still so highly venerated in the community, was instrumental in bringing the first kindergartener to the city in 1871, a Miss Marwedel. She came at the request of Madame Severance, and in her practice school was assisted by Miss Kate Smith, who afterwards became Mrs. Kate Douglas Wiggin, since a popular American author whose books are now on the shelves of all the school libraries.

Music was added to the list of recognized school assets in 1885. Today in every school of the city it has become an important branch of education. One has but to hear the orchestras, the glee clubs and the chorus of any school to know the value of the department.

In many cases, probably in most cases, this musical training is all that the children of many families are ever able to afford. This study is of economic value in affording joy in school work, recreation at all times, and often employment as the children grow older. The ever willing orchestra is present at every school function and aids much in the good fellowship. The study includes collaterally a knowledge of music, a familiarity with the great composers and much else of cultural value.

Night schools were established in 1887. The first idea in their establishment was, to some extent, philanthropic. It has expanded far beyond this, and today the plan as carried out has become a civic necessity.

From a philanthropic standpoint, the plan was to afford a chance of continuing school to those who had been obliged to interrupt their education or had neglected earlier opportunities. It was soon found there were also many in the community who wished to add to their working efficiency a knowl-

edge which was along more scientific lines. Many who are at work at various trades have availed themselves of the privileges and opportunities of the night schools, and have appreciated the chance as perhaps only those can who realize what it means.

Among the many schools of this kind now in Los Angeles is one of special interest. It is called the Maple Avenue Evening High School and is conducted in the Labor Temple. The course of study is a typical one and embraces art, Americanization, music, electricity, mechanical drawing, plumbing, sheet metal work, power machine operation, Spanish, vulcanizing and welding. Those who avail themselves of this school are for the most part adults and fully alive to the democracy of the school and very much in earnest in the pursuit of their studies.

All the evening high schools are largely vocational schools, although not receiving state aid, as the day schools under the Smith-Hughes Act. Los Angeles in the field of these schools is unique in the localizing of vocational education. For example, the practical study of the oil industry as a vocational possibility, and the study of sugar chemistry, the production, and economic side of the raising of sugar beets and the commercial possibilities of the same.

The night school at Polytechnic High School is a beehive of varied industries. An infinite variety of subjects is taught to the classes, the members of which are either acquiring a vocation technically and academically or availing themselves of the opportunity to strengthen the weak places in their trades and vocations.

This is true, similarly, in the other evening schools which are adapting the course of study to the needs of the community.

The elementary evening schools are also most interesting. These schools are really community centers where a chance is given to adults to acquire an elementary education. The course of study in these schools is necessarily simple and elastic, adapted to the foreigner who does not speak English nor understand the laws of his adopted country. The teach-

ing is a friendly step-by-step teaching of simple things and is, of course, the beginning of Americanization.

In addition to the classes held in the schools, many of them are in labor camps, laundries, factories and in large boarding houses of men.

Another feature of the Los Angeles schools is the well developed and scientific treatment of the various types of the backward child. Each child under this system who fails to fit in with the school's scheme of work is taken out of the regular grade and put in a special grade in a room sometimes called an "opportunity" room, for here the backward child, the timid child or the child who is developed along one line and not another, may be brought into normality. These children vary in degree from a slight subnormality to the so-called "defective." Each one has a chance, and by careful study and treatment the children frequently advance to their grades in the schools and become useful, normal members of the human family.

The first class in this department was started in September, 1900, and was called an "ungraded" class. There are now about 150 of these ungraded classes. There are also about ten classes of what come under the head of "defective" children. These are taught according to individual capacity and developed as far as possible. In this line of the care of children modern scientific tests are applied and the exact grade of mentality is ascertained. The teaching follows the grading of normality and subnormality in the most careful and considerate manner.

There is also the truant child, who is often a lover of adventure and a rebel against conventions. The restraint of schools, with the necessary rules, irritates him into a state of absolute resistance to all law. If this quality can be corrected before it becomes chronic and develops into lawlessness, a fine member of human society may be saved.

There are others who need special moral teaching and for whom particular classes are arranged. These children are by no means bad children, but they go through a time when the slant is not quite right, and when proper advice and sympathetic treatment and new outlook are necessary. Over 90 per

cent of these children make good and are able to go on with school work, associating with other children and obeying the law which they have learned to respect.

In 1905 a class was started for deaf children. There are about seventy children in the city at this date needing this special education. There are a number of classes for them, where they are taught the oral system along the most up-to-date lines. It is gratifying to know that these children keep up with their grades and often reach the high schools, pursuing the course of study as effectively as the normal child.

There are also classes for the blind where the children are taught by the latest methods and develop as rapidly as their handicap permits. All the teachers of these handicapped classes must, and do supplement their ability as teachers with rare sympathy and understanding.

In September, 1899, what is called "domestic science," which includes cooking and sewing, was introduced into the schools. This has grown into one of the important branches of modern educational work in all the schools of the country. The plan is carried out from the lower schools to the higher, where in its scientific development it emerges into commercial application when desired, and at all times into the scientific management of the home. Every department of housekeeping is scientifically taught. The larger housekeeping, the economic questions in buying for the home, and outdoor work connected with the household, come under this study. Beautifying the home and interior decoration also belong in this department. The study of textiles, the prices and the principles underlying the clothing of the family, is incorporated also.

In 1907 the health and development department of the public schools was fully organized. As the name suggests, this department is concerned in the physical welfare of the children. A competent staff of physicians and nurses is maintained, whose duty it is to observe and care for defects of eyesight, hearing, breathing, posture and anything else that may not be normal.

Formerly a near-sighted child would fall behind for many school terms, because he had never been able to see properly.

Adenoids and faulty posture prevented right breathing and there was a consequent loss of force. This department is one largely of reclamation. There are many children whose defects might never be discovered but for the watchfulness on the part of the doctors and nurses of this department, and the majority of cases are easily remedied. The children are thus given an opportunity to be normal and to pursue their studies under average conditions instead of below average.

Morally this medical and nursing staff is of great aid to the schools, for it is a vital necessity at times to interpret problems along scientific, pathological and medical lines.

During the influenza epidemics of the years 1918-19, the medical department of the public schools rendered great assistance to the city health officers.

Possibly growing out of this department, and certainly working with it, is the physical training department of the public schools, which was established in 1909. This extends from the grades to the high schools in an ascending scale of application from simple gymnastics to the more elaborate work of the upper schools. Physical training directors with the older boys and girls are able to do much in the way of forming healthy minds as well as healthy bodies. Their work has decided ethical value in the making of a healthy citizenship.

In 1910 the manual training which had been introduced in the schools in 1896 was extended to include elementary schools. It now embraces all the grades from the very young children to those in the high school. An infinite variety of hand work is taught from very simple things to articles which might have a trade value. The wide range from cooking to carpentry includes all ages, and both boys and girls.

Manual training has definitely proven that a human being is never fully rounded out until he can co-ordinate both the brain and hands. To do hand work or brain work only is to do neither completely. There is a definite relation between hand and head which modern systems of education recognize.

The several neighborhood schools in our city are exactly what their name implies. Each school is a social center, a community house, and a place from which the American idea



must radiate. The activities of each center might be called a "continuous performance"—all day and every day and during the vacations with the work of the supervised playgrounds.

These schools belong to all the people, including the family from the baby to the father and mother. Fathers come in the evening to learn the elements of reading, writing and arithmetic, mothers come in the daytime with their babies, if they wish, and learn to speak English, as well as how to take care of the baby, and how to make American clothes for the children and take care of the little homes.

Day nurseries are maintained where the mothers may leave the children, and where the "little mother"—the little girl who has to take care of brother or sister—may be relieved of care while she is at school. The studies are adapted to community needs, and the school becomes a kindly socializing agent.

In each school is a chart showing the housing conditions of the neighborhood, in all the details. These are guides in many ways and explain the conditions under which the school may often solve its problems. Cafeterias in these schools, in addition to the scientific feeding of the children, provide food at under minimum cost. There are open air rooms for the benefit of tubercular and other delicate children, where they are fed three or four times each day. A careful record of the weight of a child is kept, and often by the feeding and care, it is restored to strength. There are, too, the ungraded rooms in which the individual development of the child is carefully considered.

These schools afford much in the way of community recreation in the parties, festivals, their own "movies" and the playgrounds.

Home teaching comes under the head of these neighborhood schools. The teacher is really a sympathetic visitor who goes to the home, enters into the problems of the father, mother and children, assisting them often in the complexities of life in a new and strange city. To bring all the family to the school is her main object. It is so often the case that a bright child who easily acquires a language and a knowledge of the country before the parents (especially the hard-working

mother), has a sophisticated contempt for them. One of the great pleasures of the work is to realize the joy it gives a mother to stand well in the sight of her quickwitted children.

These schools are cosmopolitan to the last degree, and are the great "melting pots" of our Los Angeles.

In speaking of these special departments one does not forget that they are the modern improvements on the old academic system. The academic side of the schools has been correspondingly developed and always emphasized. Foundation principles are the things that come first, and education and training of the mind is always the first consideration, as the courses of study so carefully arranged for each school amply testify. All other things follow.

To the elementary schools have come many improvements working out the theory of modern education. There is a growing conviction that the time to begin the work of making a good citizen is the first day the child goes to school. This day is a prophecy and promise of an all-around education which our democracy offers. The elementary teacher, therefore, and the elementary school are becoming more important each year.

Los Angeles is one of the first cities to have intermediate schools. To these schools, children of the seventh, eighth and ninth grades go. The plan was an educational experiment which has worked successfully. The concensus of opinion among educators is that it has broadened the school and increased the activity. Fewer children, as a result, have dropped out of school at the end of the eighth grade. It is obviously much better that a child at the age which is average in the eighth grade should remain for another year with younger children. This bridges over the wide disparity between the grade child and the high school student.

Children of the usual ninth grade age require careful consideration which is somewhat easier when they are with younger children rather than older. From the standpoint of the adolescent child the school as adopted in Los Angeles embracing the three grades has been a marked success.

There is no city in the United States where so large a percentage of young people go to the high schools and finish the

course as in Los Angeles. This has always been true here, but since the war there has been a marked increase in enrollment, due not only to the revelation of the draft showing the illiteracy prevailing in the country, but to the conviction now universally recognized, that the man or woman with an education is much more efficient.

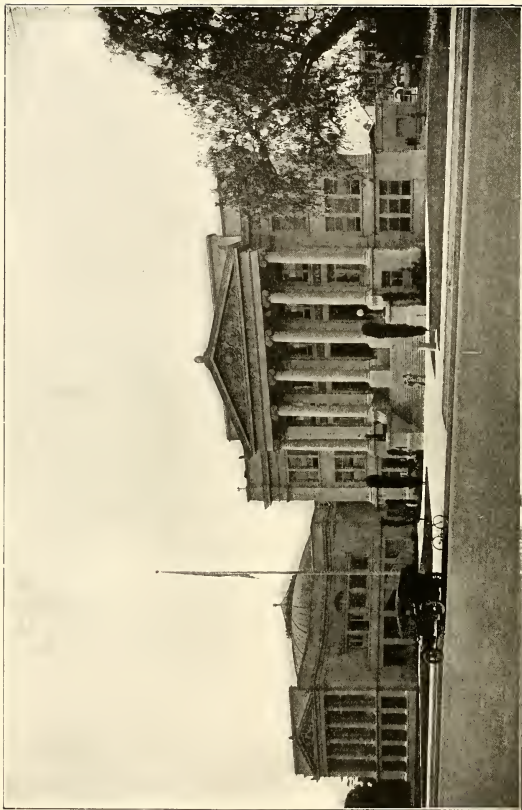
Los Angeles may well be proud of the beautiful high school buildings and the work accomplished in the wide range of subjects in the various courses of study. The courses vary in the different schools, owing somewhat to their localities. For instance, the course in shipbuilding is included in the San Pedro High School, at Gardena agriculture is specialized in, at the Polytechnic there is a wide range of technical subjects, while Los Angeles High and Hollywood pay special attention to academic work.

Even before the development of the vocational work which now exists in our public schools under the Smith-Hughes Act, the courses of study in the high schools had been worked out, which in a measure tended to lead up to the business of life both technically and academically.

Over the gateway of Lincoln High School is the most significant word in education, "Opportunity!" It is a word to thrill us who live in the United States where so much is offered free and where the most democratic thing that exists is the public school.

Citizenship is the all-embracing subject from the kindergarten to the highest grade. It is taught to the little ones, beginning with the story of the flag and the oath of allegiance and follows through all the grades. Civics and statesmanship are studied in the upper grades, holding the ideal always of the duties and privileges of the American citizen. This study is the open door through which a foreigner must enter, and our schools are carrying the burden of Americanization of the country.

Los Angeles was the first city where the school training given along the line of Americanization was recognized by the Federal Government, and a certificate testifying to a certain course given in the schools entitles the foreigner receiving it to naturalization papers.



THE POLYTECHNIC HIGH SCHOOL

It is ancient history to speak of the mothers' clubs, which were first organized in 1898-9. From this beginning has come the Parent-Teachers organization, which has become a part of the school system. In recognizing this organization as a definite part of school work, Los Angeles is unlike most cities.

This association in every way stands back of school work. The members take care of the poorer children in the way of clothing, and the clinics maintained by them have been of great value. They are generous in their gifts whenever needed, and have carried on many helpful things, especially in the neighborhood schools. The work they do is of great understanding, for only mothers can know the problems of other mothers. The various schools needing assistance on what might be called "motherly" lines, have only to appeal to the Parent-Teachers.

What the Los Angeles schools accomplished during the World war is a matter of school history and should be a matter of pride to the citizens. It demonstrated effectively the immense power of organization and system. The quickness with which it could be mobilized and the records of the war years show the enormous part the schools played in winning the war, both by way of the application of subjects taught to the needs of the hour and the larger opportunity the schools afforded for reaching the homes in lessons of patriotism, thrift and conservation.

It was a gratifying revelation to know what the schools are accomplishing all the time and an inspiration to observe how quickly the school power could be utilized and diverted in practical answer to the country's call.

In 1917, as soon as this country entered the war which was devastating the world, Dr. Albert Shiels, then superintendent of schools, appointed a general committee under which all other committees worked for the period of the war. He asked at once that the course of study, so far as possible, be diverted to patriotic lines. English classes were to develop the work along patriotic lines in the oral and written work. The manual training departments were charted, revealing young men and women who were fitted to assist in actual work. All the schools became 100 per cent workers and members of the

Red Cross organization. The library became a center of education. Books on the various countries at war were displayed, bulletins issued by the various departments were kept on file. All patriotic literature in the way of various pamphlets on thrift and conservation were carefully collected and arranged.

A survey was made of the high schools at the end of June, 1917, and it was found that in the shops there were many hundred boys who had been trained for forge, foundry and pattern making. There were boys who were skilled in woodwork and boys who could be used in field work and surveying. There were many who were skilled in printing and who could prepare mechanical drawing for army equipment and apparatus. There were hundreds of girls and boys who were ready as competent stenographers, typists, telephone operators, stock and routing clerks.

In the sciences several hundred were ready for wireless telegraph operators, others trained along electrical lines, installation of ground telephones, and still others who would be useful in higher chemistry departments. This survey was of use to the Government, outlining the possibilities of the young men and women of the nation, and on whom it might rely for technical work.

Agricultural departments in the schools immediately became of the most vital importance, not only teaching conservation and thrift but promising actual supplies. Thousands of pupils in all the schools were engaged in school gardening. In the rural districts great things were accomplished. The boys in one school, for example, began their school at seven in the morning in order that they might be ready to go to the ranches at 11 o'clock, where their labor was needed. Everywhere boys and girls worked for their country in the schools and after the school hours, according to the school plan.

The domestic science departments immediately turned their work into war work. All cooking was thrift cooking following the national plan. Sewing likewise followed the war outline. In the latter department the girls contributed their work in sewing to the making of children's dresses and other things needed at the Red Cross shop.

Lessons in first aid nursing were given to the older girls, and all the girls sewed on the usual Red Cross necessities and knitted the much-needed woolen articles.

In connection with the Red Cross shop, a notable achievement was the work by the boys in the manual training department in the making of toys for the Christmas trade and to be kept in stock.

Lessons as taught in the schools on thrift and conservation along intelligent and specialized lines, went directly to the homes, and the mothers were as earnest as the children in applying the principles learned to the daily life.

Salvage work in the schools earned much money. In this department as well as all other departments, the art teachers and pupils assisted with war posters. In the Liberty Loan drives and conservation the posters were most effectively used.

Each issue of the Liberty Loans and Thrift Stamps were sold in enormous numbers through the schools. The grand total of the second Liberty Loan bought by the teachers, the children and their friends, amounted to \$1,178,150.

At the time of the war the military department of the public schools became more prominent. It has always been known that this department did much for the physical development of the boys, increased a certain manly outlook on life, made the boys more amenable to school law, giving them a rigid sense of obedience to a higher authority. Personal loyalty to the school was increased in the fine esprit du corps.

Since the war, military training has been put on a different basis with definite Federal encouragement and aid. The United States Government has taken over this department as far as furnishing instructors, equipment in the way of guns, uniform and all other expenses. The departments are still under school supervision.

There are about 3,000 boys enrolled in the Junior "R. O. T. C." in the Los Angeles public schools.

The military training is in charge of seven United States officers under the command of Col. M. M. Falls, who is the head of the Western Division of the Reserve Officers' Training Corps, which includes high schools and colleges. A sum-

mer camp is held each year. This year, 1920, 150 Los Angeles boys are in military camps.

This aggregation of trained boys in the country is considered of great importance by the Government, revealing a potential and trained strength in case of need, and which is not an "unknown quantity" but a classified asset in the citizenship of tomorrow.

This organization knows no national or racial discrimination, and the boys who salute our flag and accept our commands are from the peoples of every nation within our hospitable boundaries.

One of the developments of the modern well equipped school is a library. Los Angeles is among the few cities which are in advance in this particular. The librarians who are trained especially for the work must have a college degree, in addition to library training in an accredited school.

Each high and intermediate school in the city has a library with a librarian in charge. The room is usually the most beautiful room in the school, well lighted and furnished as all modern libraries are. The school work naturally centers here, for all departments use it constantly in their reference work. Modern education no longer consists of isolated facts; each fact has some relation to another. Each age has had a past and will have a future, therefore all history is a series of facts which have some bearing on each other. Therefore, there is constant need of collateral reading which the library supplies and which the librarian is able to arrange in a way so that it may be intelligently and quickly used.

As the library is primarily a place for immediate reference, there are many standard books of reference on the shelves. Each department is represented by special books. English departments, for example, require biographies of authors, collections of essays, poetry and many other books. History shelves are rich in biography, modern geography of this swiftly changing world and the comparative history of other nations in all ages, and of American history in every phase, with the last word in books concerning science, discovery and invention in modern study. Sociology, citizenship



and Americanization all require books to enlarge and enrich text books.

In addition to the libraries of the high and intermediate schools, a city school library is maintained. It is a central library of many thousand volumes which are used by the teachers and the children of the elementary schools. The librarians are in constant touch with the teachers, and work with them in their book lists, following and amplifying the course of study with collateral material. In addition also to the books which are analyzed carefully according to the needs, collections of pictures are made and arranged in subjects as are the maps, records for phonographs and other educational aids. Everything is carefully classified, and when the schools are studying any particular country in their geography classes, they may have the benefit of a wealth of material to illustrate the teaching.

In 1853 Congress granted to the State of California the sixteenth and thirty-sixth sections of public lands for school purposes. This included over 1,000,000 acres, 46,000 of which were reserved for a state university and 6,400 acres for public buildings.

Besides the alarming number of illiterates revealed in the draft, it was found that the youth of our country was not so efficient as in other countries. This inefficiency became a Federal problem and the Smith-Hughes Act was passed, whereby Federal aid was given each state, to be matched dollar for dollar with state funds to carry out applied vocational training in our public schools. Investigation proved that the people who were working at trade occupations were frequently technically trained but could never reach a high efficiency so long as the limitation of limited education exists.

There was the group also of young people academically trained in high schools and colleges without a trade or profession in sight, who were obliged to add other years of education in order to enter the work of life. It therefore became evident that education should be somewhat in duplicate and should be planned with the objective of the life work.

It was decided also from the testimony of the workmen and the employer that a skilled worker in any trade must sup-

plement the training with a knowledge of the larger things that concern his work in an understanding of business and commercial conditions.

Generally speaking there are three classes of students who come under this vocational department: (a) Undergraduates who give their entire time to instruction; (b) those giving part of their time to instruction and part to earning in mercantile establishments or in factories, and (c) wage earners who through the instrumentality of the schools will receive supplementary education as a means of further training and advancement.

There are many in the first group who are more or less employed in wage earning occupations after school hours. Those who are in the second group are not thinking so much of the money earned as to the practical training which they are acquiring. In the last group are those who, perhaps, appreciate most the privileges of an added education, for their life work is already a matter of decision, and they have been in it long enough to know their limitations. These workers are less in need of technical and shop training, but do want and need a theoretical training. It may be seen how valuable to certain trades instruction in English, shop, mathematics, mechanical drawing and blue print reading might be.

In fact, when a boy or girl leaves high school, he or she will at least have something in the way of a foundation to build his "house."

In writing somewhat fully of this trade vocational work, it must be borne in mind that the high schools have their courses of study so arranged that students may also prepare, for the professions, entering the colleges and universities with much of the preliminary work already accomplished, thereby better equipped to begin their chosen work and shortening the college and special training necessary.

To understand the principles of great economic problems, investigation has shown that education must begin with the child.

In agriculture study, whatever the children do in the way of farming, raising vegetables or raising animals, the cost and the profit are considered and careful accounts are kept. These

exhibits which the schools have from time to time are important revelations of what the science of farming may become. A farmer or rancher who has toiled for many years might well attend them to learn something of the application of soil culture along scientific lines, of improved methods in raising live stock and the infinite economies of modern detail.

The latest development in the work of education in Los Angeles is the application of the law which requires part time school attendance of all children between the ages of sixteen and eighteen years of age who are already employed in wage earning occupations. This law was passed in this state in May, 1919, and requires that all children between those ages must be given four hours each week from their employer's time in which to attend school.

In addition the law requires that foreigners between the ages of eighteen and twenty-one, who do not know how to spell, read and write, or have no knowledge of arithmetic beyond the ability of a sixth grade child, must attend these schools out of employer's time.

This bringing together of workers and employers, school and teachers, the parents and the home, is an evolution of fine democracy and in states where it has been tried seems, in a measure to be answering the call of the world. In the last year and a half, 1920, nineteen states have passed this part-time law. Under this law compulsory attendance is increased in a way which does not interfere with the earning capacity of the child.

Thirty years have now elapsed since the time of the first Teachers' Institute in Los Angeles, and at the time of which the teaching force had only increased to the number of five in the previous fifteen years. In the succeeding twenty years the school enrollment had increased to over 16,000 children with 379 teachers. The present enrollment is 141,744 children, for whom 3,537 teachers are required.

In addition to the 15 high schools, 8 intermediate, and 164 elementary schools, there are under the system, 6 development schools, 13 parental schools, 21 elementary evening schools and 6 evening high schools.

Los Angeles has also, probably more than most cities of

the country, the problem of a floating school population. Tourists each year bring their children to the city to be placed for a few months in our schools, and for them the schools and equipment must be furnished in the same way that we care for our own children.

The crowded condition of our schools has called for another bond issue this year and which has been met by a large vote. With the \$9,500,000 under this issue, it is expected that within the next five years other school buildings will be erected in the various parts of the growing city.

Looking back on the past with its record of achievement, the future measured with the same scale is full of possibilities. In this swiftly changing world, with its many avenues of progress, the schools will ever keep pace.

To those who are familiar with the more conservative parts of our country, these opportunities may honestly be called glorious. Los Angeles has a glowing faith in its own possibilities and in school things there is a certain fearless approach to the new ideas of education. It is a notable fact that some of the best things of modern educational work have been tried out and proven successes in the schools of Los Angeles.

The first normal school of the state was in San Francisco, and somewhat later moved to San Jose.

By act of Legislature, in 1881, a branch of the school at San Jose was moved to Los Angeles. An appropriation of \$50,000 was made for a building, and a tract of 5½ acres was bought on what was known as the Bellevue Terrace Orange Grove on Fifth and Charity streets (Grand Avenue). To buy this tract the citizens of Los Angeles raised the sum of \$8,000 by popular subscription.

One year later, August, 1882, the school was opened with an attendance of sixty-one pupils and three teachers. Charles H. Allen, the principal of the San Jose Normal School, was also principal of the branch school here.

Another year later the Legislature added \$10,000 to the appropriation for the finishing and furnishing of the school. In the same year Ira Moore, who had been the principal of the State Normal School at St. Cloud, Minnesota, was elected principal of the normal school here.

The first class was graduated in 1884.

In 1887 the school here became independent of the San Jose school, and as the Los Angeles State Normal School was under the management of its own board of trustees.

It grew rapidly into an important institution, with so large an attendance that it became necessary to enlarge the school, and, looking to the future, a larger site was selected.

In 1907 the State Legislature authorized the sale of "Normal Hill," with the school buildings, and in 1911 granted an appropriation for a new location. A year later, twenty acres on North Vermont Avenue were purchased and subsequently another five acres.

On November 18, 1913, the cornerstone of Millspaugh Hall was laid, and in September, 1914, the school began its sessions in the new buildings.

Other buildings have been added and the plan has assumed noble and beautiful proportions. It is now a most harmonious and dignified group of buildings.

During the administration of Mr. Ernest Carroll Moore as president of the Los Angeles State Normal School, a change was made and by act of Legislature, the school became what is now known as the Southern Branch of the State University, under the control of the board of regents.

The active management of the University is under the president and an Academic Senate consisting of the faculties and instructors of the university, of which Doctor Moore is one at this writing, and on whom the burden of the management of the southern branch falls.

As Miss Smith thus concludes her eloquent narrative of the schools of Los Angeles, her reference to the normal school reminds us that a century ago there was at San Gabriel, the mother of Los Angeles, a normal school conducted by the Franciscan missionary fathers and in which young men were trained and equipped to teach in the various mission establishments of the Province of California.

Also in this general resume of the schools, it will be observed that mention is made of public schools only, while the fact is that Los Angeles contains numerous parochial and private schools of the highest degree of culture and efficiency.

So many and so excellent are these schools, indeed, that it is a matter of regret to us not to be able to write of them more fully because of the public character of this book. These non-public schools have a glory all their own which doubtless will be amply recorded by their own special historians.

But in conclusion, as far as the public schools of Los Angeles are concerned, it is almost needless to say that their splendor is a thing that has challenged the admiration of the whole world. The stranger within our gates is profoundly impressed at the very start with the greatness of our schools. Everywhere he turns he sees magnificent structures overshadowing the architecture of Rome itself—structures reared by a progressive and forward-going citizenship, regardless of the weight of the burden of taxation which their system of education put upon their shoulders and which they have borne and continue to bear willingly.

## CHAPTER XIV

### THE MEDICINE MEN

It seems that the practice of medicine is as old as civilization itself. We hear of doctors and medicine men with the first things known about the human race. Even savage peoples had their medicine men. Consequently, the history of medicine in Los Angeles can be traced back, in a way, immemorially. When Los Angeles was the Indian village of "Yang-na" and its inhabitants went to worship there in a sacred spot known as "Vanquech," it was the medicine men of the Indian tribes who held the chief places in the community. And this was long ago—long, long ago—hundreds and thousands of years before a white man even knew that America existed and when the sabre-toothed tiger and other prehistoric beasts chased the natives up trees and into caves all the way from Santa Monica to the top of Mount Wilson, and maybe farther.

Doubtless, also, there was a physician with the expedition of Juan Rodriguez Cabrillo when California was discovered in the year 1542; and with Sebastian Viscano's ships in 1602; and before that with Sir Francis Drake in 1579 when California was new to civilization, and the world was still young after its 200,000,000 years of revolution around the sun.

But the first physician that came to California of whom we have any record in the chronicles of white men was Dr. Pedro Prat, who came with Don Gaspar de Portola and Fray Junipero Serra in the expedition of 1769 which resulted in the founding of the mission and the permanent attachment of California to the world and civilization.

This is what we read in the old chronicles:

"After many months of great exertion, the expedition which had for its object the permanent colonization of California was ready to start. Three ships were in condition to

make the voyage—two of them to be sent out together, and the third to be sent later as a relief ship.

“The two ships that were to sail upon the appointed day carried a portion of the troops, the camping outfit, the ornaments for the new churches that were to be builded, a goodly supply of provisions and cargoes of agricultural implements with which the Indians in the new country were to be taught to till the soil.

“The first ship to sail was the San Carlos, a barque of some 200 tons burden, under the command of Vicente Villa. On this ship were also the surgeon, Pedro Prat; Father Fernando Paron, one of the Franciscan missionaries; twenty Catalonian soldiers under command of Lieutenant Pedro Fajes; and many other important personages, and also a blacksmith, a baker and a cook.”

“On the ship was the surgeon Pedro Prat.” Here, then, we have the name of California’s first doctor. And it turns out that he was a great physician, an honor to his profession, and that he had his hands full with the sick men who were around him, and that he worked hard and broke down under the strain that was upon him and gave up his own life, at last, in his efforts to save the lives of others.

In the Good Book it says that “Greater love hath no man than this that he lay down his life for his friend.” This is what Dr. Pedro Prat did, and I think it a kind of shame that the members of the medical profession in Los Angeles and throughout all California have never yet raised a monument or a tablet or even a simple stone to commemorate the great love and service and the fine abilities of Dr. Pedro Prat.

We find in the old records that the people who came with this expedition of 1769 became sorely afflicted with many maladies, chief among which was the terrible scourge of scurvy. Their lives were hard and their constant diet of salt meats made scurvy inevitable. And, night and day, through all those desperate months while they wrought to plant Christianity and civilization on the soil of the strange new land to which they had come, it was Dr. Pedro Prat who had upon his devoted shoulders the heaviest burden to bear.

His scant supply of medicines that he had brought up with



him in the ship from the peninsula soon ran out. But even this did not daunt him. He made a scientific study of the curative plants and herbs in the valleys and hills round about San Diego, and these he utilized, often with striking results, in the cure of the sick.

Like all great physicians, like all true doctors, Pedro Prat never gave a thought to himself while the cry of the sick was in his ears.

We read also in later of the old chronicles of other white physicians who came to California and made their headquarters in the various missions.

One hundred and twenty-five years ago there was in California a doctor whose name was Pablo Soler. There is ample testimony that he was a learned man and a great physician and surgeon. His name and fame still linger like a halo in the memory of the old times. He was renowned from one end of California to the other, and was a frequent visitor at the Mission of San Gabriel. He covered many miles of territory in his ministrations throughout all the places which now compose the great City of Los Angeles. It is said of him that he was constantly traveling up and down the King's Highway like a great white angel of mercy healing the sick. Nor were his services given wholly to those in high estate, the rich and the great. The poor Indians everywhere were also the beneficiaries of his skill and knowledge. Wherever Pablo Soler heard the cry of suffering, he went to that place, no matter how lowly the sufferer might be nor how great the hardship that he himself was forced to endure.

It is a fascinating subject indeed, this story of the pioneer doctors of California.

No doubt the early physicians found the mild, gentle climate of California a great aid to them in the successful practice of their profession. The vital and virulent diseases assumed milder forms in this climate, and, of course, it is not to be wondered at that in comparatively modern times—say, fifty years ago—by way of boosting Los Angeles, no doubt, we find a committee of the Los Angeles County Medical Association furnishing the local Board of Trade with a very elaborate disquisition on the benefits to be derived from the Los

Angeles climate. This report was drafted and signed by Drs. J. P. Widney, H. S. Orme and George W. Lasher, and it is such a masterpiece that I feel it my duty to reproduce it in these pages, if for no other reason that our present denizens of this fortunate place may have the backing of scientific authority in whatever claims they may make concerning our climatic good fortune.

The report of the learned doctors bearing date of November 7, 1874, reads as follows:

“The interest felt in the climatic features of this portion of California by people abroad and the heads of families especially, is perhaps paramount to all others. By those who, from their extended knowledge acquired both by study and practical experience in travel, are best qualified to judge, the climate of Southern California is pronounced the best in the world and alike beneficial to those in health, the invalid and those liable to become victims of hereditary diseases.

“While the climate of the whole State has many features in common, as the wet and dry seasons, instead of the eastern winter and summer, and the prevalence during the summer or dry months, of the great northwest trade winds, sweeping steadily from the sea over the land, yet there are many points of divergence in different localities. This difference in climate is especially marked between Northern and Southern California. The mountain ranges and the valleys of all the northern portion of the State have a generally northwesterly trend, leaving the country open to the harsh sweep of the north winds. In Southern California, however, the trend of both mountains and valleys is from east to west, and the high Sierra, like a wall, shelters the land from these cold northerly currents. The result is a climate much milder and more equable than in the upper portion of the State. It might be supposed that the country lying in the same latitude as the Carolinas would have some oppressive and debilitating summer heat. From this it is saved, however, by the tempered westerly trade wind, which daily blows inward to the land, bringing with it the coolness of the sea. There is a peculiar stimulus in this air coming in from the thousands of miles of salt water. One has to live by the sea to understand it. The key of the cli-

mate lies in this, that it has a warm sun and cool air; hence the cool nights. One picks ripening figs and bananas grown in his own dooryard, and then goes to sleep under a blanket. The warm, yet not debilitating day furnishes one of the requisites in a climate for invalids. The cool, restful night, with its possibility of refreshing sleep, furnishes the other. The question is asked daily in letters from the East what disease and what class of invalids may hope for benefit in coming to Southern California. In reply it might be stated:

“1st. Persons of delicate constitution, either inherited or acquired, and who resist poorly the extremes either of heat or cold—persons who need a warm, equable, yet rather bracing climate.

“2nd. Persons inheriting consumption, but in whom the disease has not yet developed, or only to a slight degree. Many such persons seem to throw off the tendency and remain strong and well. Even if parents, coming with the disease, do not in the end recover, their children, growing up in this climate, have a strong chance in their favor of eliminating the inherited tendency entirely from their blood and casting off the family taint.

“3rd. Persons well advanced in consumption are often temporarily benefited. Such persons should think well, however, before leaving the comforts of their own home and undertaking the fatigue of even a week of travel by railroad. It should not be done unless under the advice of the family physician, and if they do come they should be accompanied by friends. The despondency of loneliness and homesickness diminishes greatly the chance of benefit.

“4th. Persons suffering with bronchial troubles are often much benefited. Such cases, however, and indeed many others, too often make the mistake of remaining for weeks or months without seeking the advice of a physician as to the particular locality suited to their complaint. The varieties of climate in Southern California are many. Some portions of the county have nightly a heavy fog; other portions only a few miles away have no fog. Some sections are exposed to strong winds; others are sheltered. Some are low and damp; others high, warm and dry. Often persons go away disappointed,

possibly worse, who, had they sought proper advice as to the especial locality suited to their complaint, might have received much benefit from their sojourn in the country. There are certain precautions, also rendered necessary for invalids by the coming on of the cool night air after the warm day, and by the cool breeze from the sea, which can only be learned by experience, which to an invalid is a costly teacher, or from the advice of a physician familiar with the climate and the peculiarities of the different localities.

“5th. Those coming from malarious sections of the country, with systems depressed by the dregs of fever, are especially benefited. It is a common custom with the people here to go down to various pleasant points upon the sea coast and camp out for weeks upon the beach, enjoying the surf bathing. There are also well furnished and well kept hotels at different localities by the sea. This seaside life is especially beneficial to persons suffering from the various forms of malarial poisoning.

“6th. The open-air life which is here possible, and the great variety of fresh vegetable foods to be had at all seasons, help to break up the dyspeptic troubles which make life a burden to so many overworked men.

“7th. Many persons suffering from asthma have derived much benefit from the climate. The capricious character of the malady—no two persons suited to the same surroundings—make it difficult to give advice in most countries to the sufferer, because of the limited range of elevation and climatic differences from which to choose. Here, however, within a circle of a hundred and fifty miles one may find spots below the sea level, at the sea level, or with an elevation of 10,000 feet above it; spots with nightly a heavy fog, and spots that never know the presence of a fog; places swept by an almost constant breeze and others sheltered from all wind; the odors and gases of asphaltum and petroleum springs, or the air of the mountain pineries; the scent of the orange blossom, or the balsamic odor of the plants of the desert. Differences of elevation, which elsewhere one travels a thousand miles to find, here he finds within a radius of fifty miles.

“8th. Some cases of chronic rheumatism are benefited by

the climate. Certain hot mineral springs and iron sulphur springs have gained quite a reputation in such affections. The climate of the coast line, however, has rather too much fog. Such cases do better in the portion of the country back from the sea and among the mountains. There are points along the line of the Southern Pacific Railroad, as it crosses the Colorado Desert, where the hot, dry air, both night and day, and the warm springs for bathing, offer the very best climatic requisite for the relief of such affections.

“9th. Chronic kidney and bladder troubles find in the mild climate, with its possibility of constant outdoor life and the equable winter and summer temperature, the surroundings best suited to at least stay the course of the disease.

“10th. Cases of nervous prostration, and all the innumerable train of tormenting ills that come to an overtaxed or deranged nervous system, may hope for relief by a residence in some one of the many pleasant spots that dot the land. The warm, clear day tempts to the outdoor life, and the cool night gives the refreshing sleep so needed in this class of maladies. Strangers speak almost invariably of the restful slumber of the night.

“In conclusion, there are a number of facts which have an important bearing upon the subject of Southern California as a health resort, and yet are not in themselves directly questions of disease. Among these may be mentioned exemption from the epidemics of yellow fever, which visit the Gulf States; ease of access, the country being tapped in all directions by branches of the Southern Pacific Railroad. It is an agricultural and business center, with business openings for a largely increased population. It is the educational center of a large scope of territory, with its institutions of learning solidly established. It is well supplied with churches, and offers all the advantages of the best society. Food is abundant, varied and cheap, so that the expense of living is not great. And finally, it is not across the ocean or upon some foreign shore, where the invalid is an alien or a stranger, but within our own land, under our own flag, and among our own people.”

We feel that great credit should be given these physicians

who framed this very able, scientific document. And we are reproducing it fully in this book for the reason that it is important, and that it is just as true now as it was the day it was written. After all, sunshine is a great doctor and climate is great medicine if it be kindly climate. Certainly these devoted physicians who set forth with such patience and discernment the climate of Los Angeles rendered the whole world a valuable service.

It may be that in these times the climate of Los Angeles is more celebrated. Surely it is far better known than it was a half century ago. We all know, at any rate, that wise physicians in the East and in the northern latitudes of our country habitually send their patients to Southern California.

Los Angeles lies between God's two great sanitariums, the desert and the sea. Countless thousands who have come here sick both in body and in mind have found health and happiness.

Wherefore, the medicine men being now as always really the chief men of any community, it will be interesting to see what there is to know about them as far as Los Angeles is concerned.

Mr. H. D. Barrows of Los Angeles, whose contributions to the Southern California Historical Society have been so valuable, gives the following interesting account of some old papers, particularly a fee table of the year 1850, with remarks on some of the Los Angeles physicians of the period, whom he personally knew:

“In turning over to the Historical Society the accompanying brief historical document, (which I lately received from Ex-Sheriff Wm. R. Rowland,) containing the signatures of four early physicians of Los Angeles, I have thought that some account of two of the signers whom I knew quite well, would be of interest to the members of our society.

“The document referred to, which Ex-Sheriff Rowland found among old papers of the Sheriff's office, was a public notice or ‘Aviso’ of the scale of charges (in Spanish) by the doctors of that period, (January, 1850) for their professional services, as follows:

## AVISO.

## (Translation)

“A la junta de la Facultad de Medicos de Los Angeles, Enero 14th, 1850, la siguiente lista de precios era adoptado:

- Art. 1. Por una prescripcion en la oficina .....\$ 5.00  
 Art. 2. Por una visita en la ciudad de dia... 5.00  
 Art. 3. Por una visita en la ciudad de noche 10.00  
 Art. 4. Por una visita en el campo par cada legua ..... 5.00  
 Art. 5. Por una Sangria ..... 5.00  
 Art. 6. Por cada aplicacion de Ventoses... 10.00

Firmamos nuestros nombres al antecedente:

(Firmados.)

CHAS. R. CULLEN.

A. I. BLACKBURN.

J. W. DODGE.

GUILLERMO B. OSBOURN.

## NOTICE

At a meeting of the Medical Faculty of Los Angeles, January 14, 1850, the following list of prices was adopted:

- Art. 1. For an office prescription .....\$ 5.00  
 Art. 2. For a day visit within the city..... 5.00  
 Art. 3. For a night visit within the city..... 10.00  
 Art. 4. For a visit in the country, for each league ..... 5.00  
 Art. 5. For bleeding.. 5.00  
 Art. 6. For cupping... 10.00

We subscribe our names to the foregoing:

(Signers)

CHAS. R. CULLEN.

A. I. BLACKBURN.

J. W. DODGE.

WM. B. OSBOURN.

“Dr. Guillermo B. Osbourn, one of the signers, who was a native of New York, came to California in 1847 in Col. Stevenson's regiment. He established the first drug store in Los Angeles in 1850, which was succeeded in '51 by that of McFarland and Downey. Daguerreotypes were first taken in Los Angeles by Dr. Osbourn and Moses Searles, on Aug. 9, 1851. In fact Dr. Osbourn's versatility was something remarkable. It is not easy to recount all the official positions he filled, or the numerous important public functions he performed. In those early days immediately after the change of government, by means of his rare intellectual ability, to-

gether with his knowledge of the Spanish language, he made himself a very useful citizen in various capacities.

“When, as often happened in that period, an acquaintance with Spanish was a necessity, he often acted as Deputy Sheriff. In 1853 he was appointed Postmaster of this city by President Buchanan. In 1855 he projected the first artesian well in Southern California, at the foot of the hills not very far from the present junction of First Street and Broadway. It reached a depth of about 800 feet in June, 1856, being still in blue clay, when it was abandoned for want of funds.

“In 1852 fruit grafts of improved varieties had been introduced by Mayor J. G. Nichols. In 1855 Dr. Osbourn imported from Rochester a grand collection of roses and other choice shrubbery as well as many varieties of the best American fruit trees, which up to that time were almost unknown here. He was the first, too, in October, 1854, to ship East, fresh Los Angeles grapes, which were exhibited and commanded admiration at a meeting of the business committee of the New York Agricultural Society at Albany. And it is worthy of mention in this connection, that as late as November, 1856, when Matthew Keller sent a like specimen, it was almost doubted at the U. S. Patent Office ‘if such products were common in California.’

“Henry Osbourn, a son of the doctor by his first wife, was for years and until recently, an interpreter in our local courts. He lost his life through an accident not very long ago.

“Dr. Osbourn’s second wife, who was a native Californian, is, I believe, still living in this city.

“Dr. Osbourn with all his versatility, was not always over-scrupulous as to the means he sometimes employed in carrying out his schemes. He once recounted to me, without even a semblance of self reproach, how he took an active part on a certain occasion in a political contest. Sometime in the early '50s, when an election was on for a State Senator, and San Bernardino was a part of Los Angeles County, he was exceedingly anxious to carry the precinct of Agua Mansa, which was mostly settled by Mexicans, who knew very little or no English. So he went to the Padre who had more influence in his parish than any other person, and used his most suave meth-



ods of electioneering with the Padre in behalf of his candidate; and then to clinch the matter, he asked the Padre to pray for the repose of the soul of his mother—who was then alive and well in New York State. And on the next feast day the wily doctor was on hand at the church and on his knees, joining the Padre and his flock, in praying for the repose of his mother's soul. He added with just a shade of exultation, that his candidate was elected.

“Drs. Blackburn and Dodge, two other signers of the accompanying document, I was not acquainted with.

“Dr. Chas. R. Cullen I knew intimately, as he was my room mate for a considerable portion of the time, from my arrival in Los Angeles in 1854, till he left for his home in Virginia in the latter part of '56.

“Dr. Cullen was a native of Virginia and a graduate of Brown University. He and his brother John came to California soon after the discovery of the mines. The doctor was a cultivated and genial gentleman whom all who made his acquaintance could not help liking. The Spanish speaking portion of our community were especially attached to him, both as a sympathetic friend and as a physician; and for years after he went away I remember that if his name was mentioned in the presence of those native Californians who had made his acquaintance, they would invariably manifest pleasure at the recall of his memory and would exclaim: ‘Ay Don Carlos! donde esta el?’ or, ‘Que buen hombre era!’ or similar expressions of kindly feelings towards him.

“When the San Francisco Bulletin was established, Mr. C. O. Gerberding (father of several persons of that name in California, and also, I believe, of Mrs. Senator Bard), was the business manager, and James King of William was the brave and accomplished editor. Mr. Gerberding and Dr. Cullen had been old friends in Richmond before they came to California; and as the management of the paper desired to have a permanent resident correspondent at Los Angeles they entered into an engagement with Dr. Cullen to fill that position, paying him at the rate of ten dollars a column. Late in November, '56, Dr. Cullen concluded to return East, and stopping on his way at San Francisco, it appears he recommended me,

without my knowledge, as his successor as correspondent of the Bulletin; and accordingly he wrote me at their request, asking me to keep up the correspondence, on the same terms, etc., which I did for several years thereafter, writing generally by each semimonthly steamer, giving a general resume of current events in Southern California.

“Before I had any connection with the paper the assassination of James King of William had given the paper much prominence, and it had already become the leading journal of the Pacific Coast. It was very ably edited, ostensibly by a brother of James King of William, but in reality by Mr. James Nisbet, a Scotchman, one of the most industrious and the finest literary journalists whom I ever had any acquaintance with.

“In 1857 I made a trip East, and I went to Richmond to visit Dr. Cullen. Dr. Charley Cullen was then located and practicing his profession near Hanover Court House, a very few years afterwards the locality of terrific fighting in the Civil War.

“In after years I kept up a more or less intermittent correspondence with the doctor, till his death several years ago.

“Dr. Cullen was a thoroughly conscientious man and a religious man—in which he differed widely from Dr. Osbourn, whose only church affiliation, so far as I knew, was that serio-comic episode at ‘Agua Mansa.’

“When the late Dr. J. C. Fletcher came to Los Angeles, Dr. Cullen wrote me asking me to hunt him up, which I did, and found him to be a very cultivated and widely-traveled gentleman.

“Dr. Cullen and Dr. Fletcher were classmates and graduates of Brown University.”

And in an interesting account of pioneer physicians of Los Angeles by the same writer, most interesting sketches of Drs. John Marsh, Richard S. Den and John S. Griffin are given, as follows:

The first three educated physicians who practiced their profession in Los Angeles for longer or shorter periods, of whom we have any record, were:

Dr. John Marsh, who came here in January, 1836;

Dr. Richard S. Den, who arrived in California in 1843;

Dr. John S. Griffin, assistant surgeon, U. S. A., who arrived in 1846.

A brief account of each of these trained physicians and surgeons ought to be of interest to the present generation.

Doctor Marsh was a native of Massachusetts, and a graduate of Harvard College and also of its medical school. He came to Los Angeles by way of Santa Fe. In the archives of this city, *Translations*, Vol. 2, p. 113 (session of the Ayuntamiento or Town Council, of 18th February, 1836), the following record is found:

“\* \* \* A petition from a foreigner, Don Juan Marchet (John Marsh; the sound of sh at the ending of a word is unknown in the Spanish tongue), a native of the United States of the North, was read. He asks that this illustrious Ayuntamiento consider him as having appeared, he declaring his intention of locating in this city, and also that he is a physician and surgeon. The Ill. Ayuntamiento decided, in conformity with the law of April 14, 1828, as follows: Record and forward the certified copy, reminding said Marchet (Marsh) that he cannot practice surgery until he has obtained permission from the Ayuntamiento.” \* \* \* (Minutes of this meeting were signed:) “Mannel Requena, Pres.; Tiburcio Tapia, Rafael Guirado, Basilio Valdez, Jose Ma. Herrera, Abel Stearns, Narcisco Botello.”

At page 117 of archives (session of 25th February, 1836) this minute occurs: “\* \* \* A petition from Mr. Juan Marchet (Marsh) asking to be permitted to practice his profession, was read. The Ill. Body decided to give him permission to practice his profession, as he has submitted for inspection his diploma, which was found to be correct, and also for the reason that he would be very useful to the community.”

His diploma being in Latin, it is said that, as no one could be found in Los Angeles who understood that language, the document had to be sent to San Gabriel for the mission priest to translate, and which, as noted, was found correct.

He entered upon the practice of his profession, but as

money was an almost unknown quantity in the old pueblo, he had to take his fees in horses, cattle and hides, a currency exceedingly inconvenient to carry around. So, early in 1837, he abandoned the practice of medicine, quitted Los Angeles, and went north to find a cattle range. Yerba Buena, now San Francisco, at the time the letter was written, contained two houses. He located on the Rancho Los Medanos, near Monte Diablo, where he lived until he was murdered by a Mexican in 1856. A letter written by him descriptive of California, and published in a Missouri paper in 1840, was instrumental in causing the organization in the spring of 1841 of the first immigrant train that crossed the plains to California.

This is the letter:

“Yerba Buena, March 27, 1837.

“J. M. Guinn:

“Dear Sir:—I have been wandering about the country for several weeks and gradually becoming acquainted both with it and its inhabitants. This is the best part of the country, and in fact the only part that is at all adapted to agriculturists from our country. Nothing more is wanted but just and equal laws and a government—yes, any government that can be permanent and combine the confidence and good will of those who think. I have good hope, but not unmingled with doubt and apprehension. News has just arrived that an army from Sonora is on its march for the conquest and plunder of California. Its force is variously stated from two to six hundred men. This, of course, keeps everything in a ferment.

“I have had a choice of two districts of land offered to me, and in a few days I shall take one or the other. A brig of the H. B. Co. (Hudson Bay Co.) is here from the Columbia with Capt. Young (who has come to buy cattle) and other gentlemen of the company. I have been at the headwaters of the Sacramento and met with near a hundred people from the Columbia; in fact, they and the people here regard each other as neighbors. Indeed, a kinder spirit exists here and less of prejudice and distrust to foreigners than in the pur-lieu of the City of the Angels.

“It is my intention to undergo the ceremony of baptism in a few days, and shall shortly need the certificate of my appli-

cation for letters of naturalization. My application was made to the Most Illustrious Council of the City of the Angels, in the month of January, last year (1836). I wish you would do me the favor to obtain a certificate in the requisite form and direct it to me at Monterey to the care of Mr. Spence. Mr. Spear is about to remove to this place. Capt. Steele's ship has been damaged and is undergoing repairs, which will soon be completed. I expect to be in the Angelic City some time in May.

“Please give my respects to Messrs. Warner and W. M. Prior and all ‘enquiring friends.’

“Very respectfully,

“Your ob't. servant,

“JOHN MARSH.”

Dr. R. S. Den was born in Ireland in 1821. After receiving a thorough education as a physician, surgeon and obstetrician, he was appointed surgeon of a passenger ship bound for Australia in 1842. From thence he came via Valparaiso to Mazatlan, where he received with delight news from his brother Nicolas, from whom he had not heard for some years, and who was then living at Santa Barbara. Resigning his position as surgeon, he came to California, arriving at San Pedro August 21, and at Santa Barbara September 1, 1843, at the age of twenty-two years.

In the winter of 1843-44 Doctor Den was called to Los Angeles to perform some difficult surgical operations, when he received a petition, signed by leading citizens, both native and foreign, asking him to remain and practice his profession. And so, in July, 1844, he returned to Los Angeles. From that time on, until his death in 1895, he made his home here, with the exception of a brief period in the mines, and about twelve years, from 1854 to 1866, in which he had to look after interests of his stock rancho of San Marcos, in Santa Barbara County.

A much fuller account of Doctor Den and his long and honorable career in Southern California during the pioneer times, may be found in the “Illustrated History of Los An-

geles County," published in 1889, pp. 197-200, which also contains a steel engraving and good likeness of Doctor Den.

In the Medical Directory of 1878 the following paragraph appears. "It is of record that Dr. R. S. Den, in obedience to the laws of Mexico relating to foreigners, did present his diplomas as physician and surgeon to the government of the country, March 14, 1844, and that he received special license to practice from said government."

The document here referred to, Doctor Den, in the latter years of his life, showed to me. It was signed by Governor Micheltorena; and, as it was an interesting historical document, I asked that he present it to the Historical Society, which he promised to do. At his death I took considerable pains to have the paper hunted up, but without success. His heirs (the children of his brother Nicolas) apparently had but little idea of the historical value of such a document and therefore it probably has been lost.

Dr. John S. Griffin, who for nearly half a century was an eminent citizen and an eminent physician and surgeon of Los Angeles, was a native of Virginia, born in 1816, and a graduate of the medical department of the University of Pennsylvania. After practicing his profession some three years in Louisville he entered the U. S. army as assistant surgeon, serving under General Worth in Florida and on the southwest frontier. As I presented the Historical Society a condensed sketch of Doctor Griffin's life on the occasion of his death, three years ago (published in the society's Annual of 1898, pp. 183-5), I would here refer members to that sketch; and for further details, to the account that I wrote, taken down mainly from his own lips, for the Illustrated History of this county of 1889, pp. 206-7, which latter is accompanied by an excellent stipple steel portrait of Doctor Griffin. There are many citizens of Los Angeles and in fact, of California, still living who knew Doctor Griffin well and esteemed him highly. His death occurred in this city August 23, 1898.

Of other physicians and surgeons who practiced their profession in Los Angeles in early times, there were Drs. A. P. Hodges, the first mayor of the city, and A. W. Hope, who was the first state senator from the first senatorial district; and

Doctors McFarlane, Downey (afterwards governor of the state), Thos. Foster, T. J. White, R. T. Hayes, Winston, Cullen, and others; and during the '50s and '60s and later, many others too numerous to mention.

Mr. Barrow's friend, Mr. Moulton, who came to Los Angeles in 1845, informed him that he knew two other doctors who practiced here for a short time between '45 and '49; one of them a Frenchman, who went to San Diego with Doctor Griffin to assist him in treating the wounded soldiers, and who, Doctor Griffin said, was a first-class surgeon; and an American named Keefe. The Frenchman's name has been forgotten.

From "California Pamphlets," on page 42 of the Centennial History, we excerpt the following item, which is of interest in connection with the above:

For physician in 1850 has W. B. Osborne, A. P. Hodges, W. W. Jones, A. W. Hope and Overstreet; in 1851 John Brinckerhoff, Thomas Foster and J. P. McFarland; in 1852, James B. Winston and others. Dr. J. S. Griffin returned to reside here in August, 1854. Dr. Richard S. Den was a physician esteemed highly, prior to 1843. Doctor Osborne was a native of New York, came to California in 1847, in Colonel Stevenson's regiment. He put up the first drug store in 1850, which was followed by that of McFarland and Downey in 1851. Our first daguerreotypes were taken by him and Moses Searles, August 9, 1851. He often acted as deputy sheriff—impossible to recount his various functions; a most useful man anywhere—friendly among his neighbors, of intelligence and public spirit. He was the projector of the famed artesian well near the hill on the west side of the city. It reached the depth of 780 feet, but was abandoned by the company for want of funds. The third drug store was that of A. W. Hope, September, 1854; the fourth of Dr. Henry R. Myles, in 1860; then Winston & Welch—Dr. J. C. Welch; then Dr. Theodore Wollweber, 1863. The first dentist was J. W. Gaylord. Dr. J. C. Welch died August 1, 1869; he was a native of South Carolina. Doctor Hope was born in Virginia; died in the year 1855.

On page 273 of the publications of the Historical Society of California is an account of some eccentric characters of

early Los Angeles, one of whom, named William Money, among numerous other accomplishments, was also a "doctor" and an author of a medical work as well. Particular attention is called to his statement published in a newspaper of Los Angeles in 1855 that his book, "The California Family Medical Instructor," contained a list of 5,000 patients who had been under his care, of whom only four to his knowledge died while under his treatment—a statement sufficiently suspicious to make one think him related to some of the originators of modern-day "isms."

The sketch to which we refer gives the following account of his interesting career:

The early years in the history of the new towns of the West were productive of eccentric characters—men who drifted in from older civilizations and made a name for themselves or rather, as it frequently happened, had a name made for them by their fellow men.

These local celebrities gained notoriety in their new homes by their oddities, by their fads, their crankiness, or some other characteristic that made them the subject of remark. With some the eccentricity was natural; with others it was cultivated, and yet again with others force of circumstances or some event not of their own choosing made them cranks or oddities, and gave them nicknames that stuck to them closer than a brother.

No country in the world was more productive of quaint characters and odd geniuses than the mining camps of early California. A man's history began with his advent in the camp. His past was wiped out—was ancient history, not worth making a note of. What is he now? What is he good for? were the vital questions. Even his name was sometimes wiped out, and he was rechristened—given some cognomen entirely foreign to his well known characteristics. It was the irony of fate that stood sponsor at his baptism. "Pious Pete" was the most profane man in the camp, and Pete was not his front name. His profanity was so profuse, so impressive, that it seemed an invocation, almost a prayer.

There was another class of eccentricities in the cities and towns of California where life was less strenuous than in the



mining camps. These were men with whims or fads sometimes sensible, sometimes half insane, to which they devoted themselves until they became noted as notorious cranks.

San Francisco had its Philosopher Pickett, its Emperor Norton and a host of others of like ilk. Los Angeles had representatives of this class in its early days, but unfortunately the memory of but few of them has been salted down in the brine of history.

In delving recently among the rubbish of the past for scraps of history, I came across a review of the first book printed in Los Angeles—the name of the book, its author and its publisher. But for that review, these would have been lost to fame.

It is not probable that a copy of the book exists, and possibly no reader of that book is alive today—not that the book was fatal to its readers; it had very few—but the readers were fatal to the book; they did not preserve it. That book was the product of an eccentric character. Some of you knew him. His name was William Money, but he preferred to have the accent placed on the last syllable, and was known as “Money.” Bancroft says of him: “Scotchman, the date and manner of whose coming are not known, was at Los Angeles in 1843.” I find from the old archives he was here as early as 1841. In the winter of 1841-42 he made repairs on the Plaza Church to the amount of \$126. Bancroft in his Pioneer Register states: “He is said to have come as the servant of a scientific man, whose methods and ideas he adopted. His wife was a handsome Sonorena. In ’46 the couple started for Sonora with Coronel, and were captured by Kearny’s force. They returned from the Colorado with the Mormon battalion. Money became an eccentric doctor, artist and philosopher at San Gabriel, where his house, in 1880, was filled with ponderous tomes of his writings, and on the simple condition of buying \$1,000 worth of these I was offered his pioneer reminiscences. He died a few years later. His wife, long divorced from him, married a Frenchman. She was also living at Los Angeles in ’80. It was her daughter who killed Chico Forster.”

Bancroft fails to enumerate all of Money’s titles. He was

variously called Professor Money, Doctor Money and Bishop Money. He was a self-constituted doctor and a self-anointed bishop. He aspired to found a great religious sect. He made his own creed and ordained himself "Bishop, Deacon and Defender of the Re-Formed New Testament Church of the Faith of Jesus Christ."

Doctor Money had the inherent love of a Scotchman for theological discussion. He was always ready to attack a religious dogma or assail a creed. When not discussing theological questions or practicing medicines, he dabbled in science and made discoveries.

In Book II of Miscel. Records of L. A. County, recorded September 18, 1872, is a map or picture of a globe labeled "Wm. Money's Discovery of the Ocean." Around the north pole are a number of convolving lines which purport to represent a "whirling ocean." Passing down from the north pole to the south, like the vertebrae of a great fish, is a subterranean ocean. Beyond this on each side are the exhaustless fiery regions, and outside, a rocky mountain chain that evidently keeps the earth from bursting. At the south pole gush out two currents a mile wide marked the Kuro Siwo. There is no explanation of the discovery and no statement of which ocean, the whirling or the subterranean, that Doctor Money claimed to have discovered. Evidently a hole at the north pole sucks in the waters of the whirling ocean, which pass down through the subterranean ocean and are heated by the exhaustless fiery regions which border that ocean; then these heated waters are spurted out into space at the south pole. What becomes of them afterwards the records do not show.

From some cause Doctor Money disliked the people of San Francisco. In his scientific researches he made the discovery that that part of the earth's crust on which that city stands was almost burnt through, and he prophesied that the crust would soon break and the City of the Bay would drop down into the exhaustless fiery regions and be wiped out like Sodom and Gomorrah of old!

The review of Doctor Money's book, which I have mentioned, was written by the genial Col. J. O. Wheeler, then editor of the Southern Californian, a paper that died and was

buried in the journalistic graveyard of unfeeling wants forty-eight years ago. Colonel Wheeler was a walking library of local history. He could tell a story well and had a fund of humorous ones, but I could never persuade him to write out his reminiscences for publication. He died, and his stories of the olden times died with him, just as so many of the old pioneers will do, die and leave no record behind them.

Doctor Money's book was written and published in 1854. Colonel Wheeler's review is quite lengthy, filling nearly two columns of the Californian. I omit a considerable portion of it. The review says: "We are in luck this week, having been the recipients of a very interesting literary production entitled 'Reform of the New Testament Church,' by Wm. Money, Bishop, Deacon and Defender of the Faith of Jesus Christ.

"The volume by Professor Money comes to us bound in the beautiful coloring so much admired, and is finely gotten up and executed at the Star office in this city. Its title denotes the general objects of the work which have been followed out in the peculiar style of the well-known author, and in the emphatic language of the Council General, Upper California, City of Los Angeles, we pronounce it a work worthy of all dignified admiration, a reform which ecclesiastics and civil authorities have not been able to comply with yet.

"The work opens with an original letter from the aforesaid Council General, which met August the 7th, 1854, near the main zanja in this city; said letter was indited, signed, sealed 'by supplication of the small flock of Jesus Christ' represented by Ramon Tirado, president, and Francis Contreiras, secretary, and directed with many tears to the great defender of the new faith, who, amid the quiet retreats with which the rural districts abound, had pensively dwelt on the noble objects of his mission, and, in fastings and prayer, concocted this great work of his life.

"The venerable prelate, in an elaborate prefix to his work, informs the public that he was born, to the best of his recollection, about the year 1807, from which time up to the anniversary of his seventh year, his mother brought him up by hand. He says, by a singular circumstance (the particular circum-

stance is not mentioned), I was born with four teeth, and with the likeness of a rainbow in my right eye.

It would seem that his early youth was marked by more than ordinary capacity, as we find him at seven entering upon the study of natural history; how far he proceeded, or if he proceeded at all, is left for his readers to determine. At the age of twelve, poverty compelled him to "bind himself to a paper factory." Next year, being then thirteen years of age, having made a raise, he commenced the studies of philosophy, civil law, medicine, philosophy of sound in a conch shell, peculiar habits of the muskrat, and the component parts of Swain's vermifuge. Thirsting for still further knowledge, four years afterwards we find him entering upon the study of theology; and he says: "In this year (1829) I commenced my travels in foreign countries," and the succeeding year found him upon the shores of the United States, indefatigable in body and mind; the closing of the same year found him in Mexico, still following the sciences above mentioned, but theology in particular.

About this time he commenced those powerful discussions with the Roman clergy in which our author launched forth against the old church those terrible denunciations as effective as they were unanswerable, and which for thirty years he has been hurling against her.

Perhaps the most memorable of all his efforts was the occasion of the last arguments had with the Roman clergy concerning abuses which came off in the Council of Pitaquitos, a small town in Sonora, commencing on the 20th of October, 1835, which continued to May 1, 1840, a period of five years. This convocation had consumed much time in its preparation, and the clergy, aware of the powerful foe with whom they had to deal, and probable great length of time which would elapse, selected their most mighty champions; men who in addition to a glib tongue and subtle imagination, were celebrated for their wonderful powers of endurance. There were seven skilled disputants arrayed against Money, but he vanquished them single-handed.

The discussion opened on the following propositions: The Bishop of Culiacan and he of Durango disputed that Wm.

Money believed that the Virgin Mary was the mother of Jesus, but not the mother of Christ. William Money makes his application to God, but not to the Virgin Mary.

These and other learned propositions were discussed and rediscussed constantly for five years, during which writing paper arose to such an enormous price that special enactments were made, withdrawing the duties thereon. Time would not admit of detailing the shadow of what transpired during the session.

Suffice it to say that through the indomitable faith and energy of Mr. Money, his seven opponents were entirely overcome; one sickened early in the second year and was constrained to take a voyage by sea; two others died of hemorrhage of the lungs; one went crazy; two became converted and left the council in the year 1838 and were found by Mr. Money on the breaking up of the council to have entered into connubial bonds, and were in the enjoyment of perfect happiness. The other two strenuously held out to the year 1840, when, exhausted, sick and dismayed, the council, in the language of the author, was broken up by offering Money to give up his sword, the Word of God, but he protested, saying: "God keep me from such treacherous men, and from becoming a traitor to my God."

Thus ended this famous disputation of which history furnishes no parallel. From the foregoing our readers can form an idea of this great work. It forms a volume of twenty-two pages, printed in English and Spanish, with notes.

Doctor Money seems to have considered his call to preach paramount to his call to practice. In a card to the public, published in the *Star* of November 3, 1855, he says: "I am sorry to inform the public that since the Reformed New Testament Church has unanimously conferred on me the office of Bishop, Deacon, and Defender of the Faith of said apostolic church, it is at present inconvenient for me any longer to practice my physical system. My California Family Medical Instructor is now ready for the press, containing my three physical systems, in about 200 pages and 50 plates of the human body. It will likewise contain a list of about five thousand patients that I have had under my physical treat-

ment in the course of fifteen years' practice, from the port of San Diego to that of San Francisco. Out of this large number only four, to my knowledge, have died while under my treatment. I do not publish this for the purpose of getting into practice, but only to get out of it."

His Family Medical Instructor was probably the second book written in Los Angeles, but whether it was ever published is not known. Some twenty-five years ago, when the public library was in the old Downey Block, he had on file in it a set of plates of the human body. He removed to San Gabriel, where he lived in a curiously constructed adobe house. He died in 1890, at San Gabriel. His books and papers were lost.

It is of the greatest interest to go back over the records and find what folks were doing concerning sanitation and the effort to preserve the public health in the old times of Los Angeles before the men and women who inhabit it now were born.

For instance, we find that in the year 1847 one Julian Chavez sent the following communication to the honorable Town Council of Los Angeles:

"It being one of the principal duties of any municipal body when it sees that an epidemic begins to attack the community, to enforce cleanliness, fumigation and similar measures, I respectfully suggest that you instruct the Syndic to spend three or four dollars in causing all the heads and remains of cattle as well as dead animals that can be found, to be gathered into a heap in the borders of the town and set on fire at the hour of six in the evening to be thoroughly consumed and the air purified. Also that you admonish the people to keep their premises clean and sweep in front of their houses and on no condition to throw any garbage, filth or offal of the cattle they slaughter in the streets. Also that the work on the zanja be pushed to an early completion because our citizens who live further below are suffering greatly for lack of water, which is also one of the causes why the epidemic lasts so long. In making these recommendations, I beg of you to give them your immediate consideration."

From one of the annual reports of Dr. L. M. Powers, for

many years the efficient and well-beloved health officer, we gather some intensely interesting facts. For instance, it is learned that in the year 1850 police regulations were promulgated which declared it "the duty of the police to attend to everything touching the comfort, health and adornment of the city." And the following two important articles:

"Article 6. On Saturdays every householder shall clean the front of his premises up to the middle of the street, or for the space of at least eight varas.

"Article 7. No filth shall be thrown into zanjias, carrying water for common use, nor into the streets of the City."

From the same report we find the medicine men doing their best to help the city to keep clean and healthy as it gradually assumed the dignity of a city through the slow and happy growth of the years.

In 1853, the City Council passed an ordinance concerning the making of bread, requiring the use of good and wholesome flour, and uniform size of loaves.

In 1855 the Common Council passed an ordinance regulating the conduction of a city slaughter house or corral and requiring a monthly fee or rental for the use of the same and the disposal of the offal in such a manner as not to be offensive. Also created the office of stock and meat inspector, who was to give bond of \$500 and to receive fees for inspecting stock as follows. For meat cattle, 50 cents per head, and for sheep, goats and hogs, each 75 cents.

In 1868, when the County Hospital was only in name and the Sisters of Charity were paid per capita for the care of the indigent sick, and the police force consisted of the town marshal and one policeman, and the board of health, the mayor and two councilmen, appointed by the president of the Council, an epidemic of smallpox occurred and Dr. H. S. Orme was appointed health officer at a salary of \$10 per day to care for smallpox patients and look after the sanitary conditions of the city.

In July, 1868, the main building now existing in Chavez Ravine and known as the pest house was built jointly by the city and county, for a smallpox hospital. Smallpox was quite prevalent; many cases occurred among the Indians who were

employed to pick grapes in the city and vicinity. These Indians when first attacked with the fever would often plunge into the zanja or river, and then lie around the banks until they were picked up in a critical condition or perhaps dead. The mortality during the epidemic was great. The Sisters of Charity, with self-sacrifice and regardless of their health, rendered most faithful and efficient service during this epidemic. Vaccination was enforced as thoroughly as possible and the disease was ere long eradicated.

It seems from 1869 that Drs. Pigne, Dupuytren, T. C. Gale, and J. H. McKee served as health officers at different times. Dr. J. H. McKee was elected health officer on June 25, October 15, and again December 31, 1874.

In April, 1873, the City Council passed an ordinance creating the board of health, to consist of the mayor, president of the Council and two members of the Council to be appointed by the president of the Council. The salary of the health officer was \$50 per month, and he was to be appointed by the board of health, subject to the approval of the City Council.

In 1874 the City Council passed an extensive sanitary ordinance providing for free vaccination, reports of births, deaths and contagious diseases, etc., and another resolution regulating the prevention of nuisances and providing for the public health, etc., including a section prohibiting the sale of adulterated milk.

In 1876 the Council passed a resolution fixing the health officer's salary at \$75 per month. In 1877 the Council passed an ordinance repealing ordinances of July, 1873 and August, 1874, pertaining to the creation of the board of health and prescribing the duties of the health officer, etc.

In 1877 a report was made to the Council that one Mrs. Dominguez had broken quarantine because of the want of food. The Council authorized the health officer to supply food to families in quarantine for smallpox.

Again, in 1878, the Common Council passed a resolution relating to the health of the City of Los Angeles, to prevent the spread of contagious diseases by providing quarantine regulations for the incoming trains, etc.

On January 2, 1879, Dr. Walter Lindley was elected health



officer; at that time there was no board of health and the City Council elected the health officer. Dr. Lindley inaugurated the system of free vaccination of children attending the public schools and succeeded in securing the passage of an ordinance prohibiting the handling of swill and garbage through the streets between the hours of 9 A. M. and 5 P. M. He established the system of registering births and deaths, and secured a sewer system for the main streets; he also made an annual report of the transactions of the office. Doctor Lindley's report made November 13, 1879, for the ten months previous to November 1, 1879, shows estimated population to be 16,000, number of births 223, and number of deaths 175, including still births.

As late as the year 1897 we still find some situations that were no doubt serious enough at the time, but which appear laughable now. Here is one of them:

It was decided to have the meat and milk of the city systematically inspected. During the first eight months, after the decision was put into force, much of the time was consumed in settling the question as to who had the right to the appointment of the sanitary inspectors, the Board of Health or the City Council. For three months, pending the decision of the court, we had two sets of inspectors calling at the office every morning, and there was also much trouble in securing the proper control of the street sweeping. During the fall a new inspector was appointed for street sweeping. The meat and milk inspector and a practical butcher was appointed meat inspector, thereby creating two offices.

**It is a well-agreed-to fact that history is a thing that can be written only in retrospect.** Men and events of our own time are too near to us to be judged. And this is one reason why, in this book, no attempt at detail is made concerning the status of medicine in Los Angeles at the present day.

It is enough to say that in no city of the world can the profession of medicine be found standing on a higher plane than it stands in Los Angeles. Nowhere in the world can physicians and surgeons be found more devoted to their profession, more skilled in its science or more faithful to the trust reposed in them. Not only have we, in the product of

our own schools at home, medical men of the highest class, but we have also the products of the best schools in other parts of the world who honor and benefit Los Angeles by their presence among us.

Los Angeles has hospitals as splendidly equipped for service as any other city has, and its institutions of this nature keep pace with the best and latest thought of the scientific world.

And it is well that all this is so, for while it is true that owing to favored climatic conditions, there would not ordinarily be here the same great need of the physician and the surgeon that exists in less kindly climes, we are to remember that all the roads of the earth and the pathways of the seas bear to our doors the sick, whose hope of recovery lies in California.

And even with all this, the death rate here is less perhaps than it is in any other city of equal size. For this happy condition we have to thank both the doctors and the climate.

## CHAPTER XV

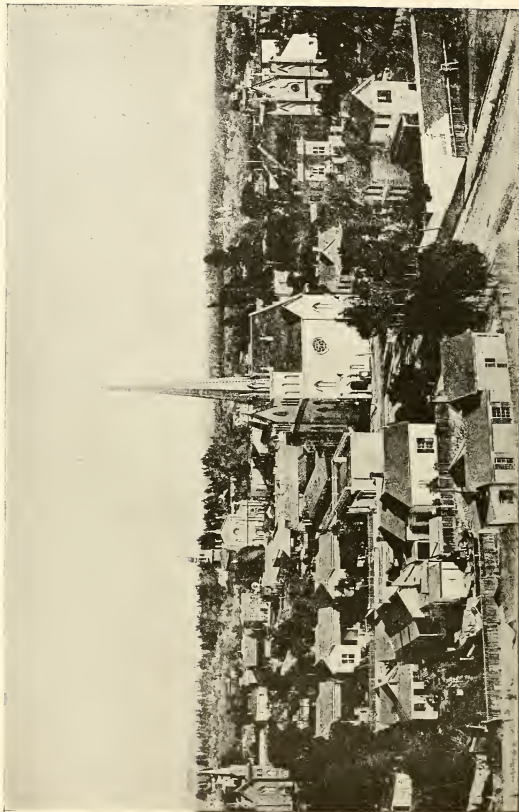
### RELIGION AND THE CHURCHES

We have seen heretofore in this book that as a community requiring a civic and political government, Los Angeles was created under extraordinary circumstances, namely, "by order of the king." That is to say, Los Angeles was politically foreordained, because of the fact that it was founded and established by the royal edict of the King of Spain.

We are now to see that spiritually and in regard to the care of the souls of the people who came to inhabit the new city and to have their being there, Los Angeles became—though it may be indirectly—the subject again of what might be called Royal authority, for in those times the Pope of Rome ranked with other kings and potentates.

Now, as we have related, Los Angeles at the beginning of its career was looked after spiritually by the padres of San Gabriel and other nearby missions in such measure as the time and abilities of these padres permitted. We learn that in the year 1784, three years after the Pueblo of Los Angeles was founded, and continuing until the year 1812, there was a chapel on Buena Vista Street where a Franciscan friar from San Gabriel held religious services, saying mass every Sunday and on Holy days for the accommodation of the settlers and their families. Then, between the years 1812 and 1815, the present old church still standing on the Plaza was built and placed under the pastorage of Father Blas Raho. But during all this time Los Angeles and all California were merely a part of the spiritual territory of Mexico, and specifically a part of the diocese of Sonora.

But as California continued to grow in population, the Mexican Congress petitioned Rome to separate Lower and Upper California into a separate diocese. In those days in Catholic countries, and in other countries as well, church and



A CHURCH DISTRICT OF LOS ANGELES

state went hand in hand. Mexico acknowledged itself to be a Catholic country, subject in all spiritual matters to the Pope.

In response to the petition of the Mexican Congress, Gregory XVI, then Pope of Rome, issued the famous bull creating the Diocese of California, of which Los Angeles was a part. The document is important and of great historical value, and since it gives us the real beginning of church government here, we feel it our duty to set it forth in full. It is as follows:

“GREGORY, BISHOP, SERVANT OF THE SERVANTS OF GOD,  
FOR A PERPETUAL MEMORIAL.

“1. The Apostolic solicitude which We feel for all the Churches should, as is evident, not only never be weakened or diminished by distances or the remoteness of the faithful, but should for that very reason rather be augmented and inflamed. Since, therefore, access to this Center of Catholic unity is rendered too difficult for the most remote of Our flock and We are not able, on account of the distance and the natural condition of the territory, to refresh them with frequent admonitions, counsels, exhortations, and, in fine, by spiritual aids of whatever kind, or to heal their wounds promptly, We do as does an affectionate mother far distant from her children: she assuredly loves them with the more ardor the more she sees herself unable to lavish upon her absent ones all the services of a special love.

“Hence, not only do We daily pray for the most bountiful of celestial blessings to fall upon this part of the flock which We ever have in mind, but We also leave nothing undone which may in any way contribute to the spiritual welfare of the same. While We were assiduously revolving these matters in Our mind, those composing the Government of Mexico in North America humbly supplicated that We by Apostolic Authority separate California from the Diocese of Sonora within the same Mexican boundaries, erect there an episcopal see to be called the See of California, and give it a Bishop of its own.

“Although the beginning of the Diocese of Sonora is not to be sought previous to the year 1779, and itself was formed

of parts from the Dioceses of Guadalajara and Durango, nevertheless that territory was soon extended so widely that it not only embraces the vast provinces of Sonora, Ostimuri and Sinaloa, but the whole immense California besides. The last named, however, which is said to exceed seven hundred leagues, is divided into Old and New California. The former includes the Peninsula of California which the ancient writers on natural affairs believed to be an island. The latter, however, is joined to Old California by a wild tract of land. Both, at present, constitute one of the Mexican provinces. If the mind considers the great roughness of the roads, the rapid currents of the rivers, which, at times, it is impossible to cross, and moreover the immense mountain chains, which are inhabited by barbarians, it will be apparent that the Bishop of Sonora is by these causes hindered from governing and moderating with necessary effectiveness the flock entrusted to his care, from visiting his whole diocese, and from devoting himself entirely to the conversion of those whom, for lacking the light of the Gospel, We bitterly mourn as wrapped in the densest darkness of error. This worst of all evils both Old and New California is suffering in a peculiar degree; for although missionaries of the Orders of St. Dominic and St. Francis have spiritual charge of these provinces, yet each is situated in the farthest part of the Diocese of Sonora, and therefore not assisted by the presence of a Pastor, who, powerful in word and deed, might edify the people by his speech and example, correct what is depraved, consolidate what is disrupted, strengthen those weak in Faith, and enlighten the ignorant.

“2. These and other good reasons adduced by the Government of Mexico through its ambassador to the Apostolic See have been presented to Us with such force that, after having considered every thing with mature deliberation, and having observed the great advantage of it, We most willingly accede to the petitions offered. Therefore, with certain knowledge of the matter, in the plenitude of Apostolic Power, and also from Our own initiative, supplying the consent of Our Venerable Brother Lazaro de Garza, now Bishop of Sonora, and of others who may be concerned, We forever take

away, detach, sever and separate whole California, namely the Old as well as the New California, together with all and every one of the parishes, churches, convents and monasteries, and all secular and regular benefices of whatever kind existing there, likewise all persons of both sexes, dwellers and inhabitants, the laity as well as clergy, priests, beneficiaries and the religious of whatever grade, status, order or condition staying there, from the Diocese of Sonora to which they belonged. Moreover, the City of San Diego in new California, situated in the center of California and regarded as more suitable than other places, We establish and institute as episcopal city with its court and ecclesiastical chancery and all and each of the honors, rights, privileges and prerogatives used and enjoyed by the cities and citizens honored by an episcopal see in the Mexican dominion.

“3. We command that the principal church in the said territory of San Diego be raised and elevated to the honor and dignity of a cathedral church, and therein likewise We command to have erected and established in perpetuity the see and episcopal seat of the one henceforth to be called the Bishop of California, who is to preside over the same church, city and diocese to be designated presently, and over its clergy, to convoke the synod, to have and exercise all and every episcopal right, office and duty, and to have his chapter, seal, archives, and the income to be presently laid down, and all other episcopal insignia, rights, honors, precedence, graces, favors, indults, jurisdiction and prerogatives which the other cathedrals in the Mexican dominion and their Bishops enjoy, provided that they are not granted them by special indult or privilege.

“4. To the California cathedral church, thus erected and to its Bishop, We adjudge and assign as its own diocese hereafter the entire Old and New California, as above cut off and separated from the Diocese of Sonora, to be the diocese of the New California bishopric, and this California, thus allotted and assigned, and in it the existing parishes, churches, convents, monasteries, and all other secular and regular benefices of whatever Order, the persons of either sex, the inhabitants, clergy as well as laity, but not those

exempt, of whatever class. We likewise subject in perpetuity to the jurisdiction, rule, power, and authority of the new Bishop of the California Diocese, and to him We assign and allot them as his city, territory, diocese, clergy and people, likewise in perpetuity.

“5. In order, however, that the future Bishop of California during his lifetime may live in a manner becoming his dignity, and may properly provide for the vicar-general and episcopal court, We ascribe and assign as episcopal income the Fund of the real estate which the Mexican Government in accordance with its promise will set apart.

“6. With regard to the property of the new California cathedral church, We likewise ascribe and adjudge as an income for its maintenance in perpetuity the Fund which the same Government promised to surrender. We ordain that as soon as possible there be assigned and given suitable buildings for the habitation of the future Bishop and the dwelling of his episcopal court as near to the cathedral as possible; if they are wanting and must be rented, We decree that arrangements be made for defraying such expenses.

“7. As to the forming of a chapter at the cathedral church, and its endowment with similar means from the Fund, as also the construction and endowment of a seminary for ecclesiastical students, the aforesaid Government, as soon as the circumstances of time and places permit, will supply what is usually furnished to other cathedral chapters and ecclesiastical seminaries in the Mexican dominion.

“8. We command that the said California Church thus constituted shall be of right subject to the Metropolitan Archbishop of Mexico, and We direct that it shall enjoy all the faculties, exemptions and rights which belong to other suffragans of the Metropolitan Mexican Church.

“9. We order that the revenue of the same new Diocese of California shall be taxed as customary for thirty-three and one-third florins, and that this tax shall be noted in the books of the Apostolic Treasury and Sacred College.

“10. In order that everything above arranged by Us take effect, We bestow upon Our Venerable brother Emanuel Posada y Carduno, Archbishop of the Metropolitan Mexican



Church, whom We choose and depute as the executor of these Our Letters, all the necessary and expedient faculties for self, or by means of another person clothed with ecclesiastical dignity to be subdelegated by him, may ordain and decree, and also with the faculty of the same executor or his delegate, definitely, freely and lawfully pronounce upon any obstacle whatever which might perhaps arise in the act of execution. He shall also have the duty of carefully describing in the executive decree the boundaries, especially of New California, and of transmitting to the Apostolic See, within six months after the carrying out of the Apostolic Letters, a copy, drawn up in authentic form, of all decrees he may publish in the execution of these Letters, in order that it may be preserved in the records of the Congregation presiding over Consistorial Affairs.

“11. We will and determine that these Letters, and whatever they contain, be at no time whatever impugned or called into question, or charged with the defect of subreption, or obreption or nullity, or lack of intention on Our part, or any other even substantial defect, not even for the reason that any persons concerned or claiming to be concerned have not been notified or given a hearing or have not consented to the foregoing; for from the fulness of Apostolic Power We supply, as far as necessary, their consent, and We will that these Letters always and ever exist and be valid and in force, and obtain and have their full and entire effect, and be inviolably observed by all whom they concern.

“12. We thus determine notwithstanding the Regulations about not taking away what is of right demanded, about suppressions committed against parties concerned, and other Rules of Our Own or of the Apostolic Chancery, or Apostolic Mandates issued in Synods or Councils, particular or general, or whatever other Ordinances of Our Predecessors, the Roman Pontiffs, or whatever else to the contrary.

“13. We determine, moreover, that the copies of these Letters, even the printed ones, signed, however, by a notary public, and provided with the seal of a person clothed with ecclesiastical dignity, shall, on being exhibited or shown, receive absolutely the same credit.

“14. No one whosoever, therefore, shall be permitted to infringe these Our Letters of dismemberment, segregation, separation, erection, establishing, assignment, allotment, subjection, concession, indult, decree, derogation and will, or dare temerarily to contradict. If any one, however, shall presume to attempt this, let him know that he incurs the indignation of God Almighty and of the Blessed Apostles Peter and Paul.

“Given in Rome at St. Peter’s in the year of the Incarnation of the Lord 1840, on the 27th day of April, in the tenth Year of Our Pontificate.”

The Pope, under the same date, issued another bull, which was addressed to the clergy of the new diocese, the text of which is as follows: “Gregory, Bishop, Servant of the Servants of God, to the Beloved Sons, the Clergy of the Territory and Diocese of the Californias, Health and Apostolic Benediction.—As the Church of the Californias today lacks the consolation of having a Pastor, We have provided one in the person of Our beloved son Francisco Garcia Diego, professed member of the Order of St. Francis, chosen for said Church, a person who for his merits is acceptable to Us and to Our Venerable Brothers, the Cardinals of the Holy Roman Church. With the advice therefore, of the same Cardinals, Our Brothers, and in virtue of Our Apostolic Authority, We name him Bishop and Pastor, and commit to him the care, government, and administration of the Church in the Californias, both in spiritual and temporal matters, as is more fully contained in Our Letters erecting the Diocese. We therefore command by this Our Letter that you cheerfully accept the said Francisco as Father and Pastor of your souls, show him due obedience and reverence, receive with humility his salutary admonitions and commands, and endeavor to comply with them sincerely. Otherwise, the sentence which the same Francisco may pronounce against the rebellious, we shall regard as just, and shall see that it is observed inviolably until condign satisfaction is made. Given at St. Peter, Rome, in the year of the Incarnation of the Lord 1840, on the 27th day of April, in the tenth year of Our Pontificate.”

The new bishop, Garcia Diego, acting under the authority of the above bull of Pope Gregory, arrived in the harbor of San Diego the night of December 10, 1841, on the good ship *Rosalind*, Capt. Henry John Crouch, with his entourage, promptly announcing his arrival to Governor Alvarado. Two days afterward, the first Bishop of California addressed the following note to the Superior of the Franciscan Friars at Zacatecas:

“San Diego, December 12, 1841. My Son, Brother, and most beloved Father.—Yesterday I reached this insignificant town in good and sound health, thanks be to God! You have me here now at your service.

“I brought with me two priests of our College, and think that one of them will, as soon as possible, proceed to your mission to take your place, in order that you may come to serve me as secretary and confessor. I have already spoken to the Fr. Guardian about this and he has consented. You may notify the Fathers when you come in order that they may address you wherever you may be when they have any business with you.

“The ex-donado, Gomez, arrived with me as sub-deacon. There also came along three other students, of whom two will soon be ordained. Two boys are also in the company. With them I shall start my seminary. I could not obtain more for reasons which I shall tell you when we meet. Do not fail to write to me as often as you can, etc. [Signed] Fr. Francisco, Bishop of the Californias.”

“Insignificant” though San Diego appears to have been at that time, apparently the people that composed its population had the desire to be good Christians. One hundred and twenty-five of them presented themselves to the new bishop for confirmation in the chapel of the presidio. According to the records of the missions as set forth in the monumental and priceless work “Missions and Missionaries of California,” by Fray Zephyrin Engelhardt, of the Order of Friars Minor, at Santa Barbara, the sponsors at this historic celebration were no less personages than Pio Pico, Francisco Maria Alvarado, Jose Antonio Estudillo and Manuel Verdugo.

If you are looking for a quartette of great Californian names, there you have it.

Since San Diego is now one of the great cities of the world, its battles fought and its victories won, it will be surely no harm to admit that it really was an "insignificant" town four score years ago. According to Fray Zephyrin, Bishop Diego soon reached the conviction that—and notwithstanding that the town bore the bishop's saint's name—it was "with its fewer than 150 inhabitants, its wretched habitations and its lack of resources, unfit to be the center of a vast diocese."

Accordingly, the bishop set forth for Santa Barbara, to take up his Episcopal residence there. He sailed away from the Harbor of the Sun in a ship owned by Don Jose Antonio Aguirre, master and owner of many ships, whose bride was Rosario, a daughter of the Estudillos. News had been sent ahead to Santa Barbara that his lordship was on his way to that famous port. And the news caused great joy there, says Fray Zephyrin.

Robinson, a historian to whom we are indebted for much priceless knowledge of early California, was a witness of the reception of the bishop to Santa Barbara, which he describes as follows:

"The vessel was in sight on the morning of the 11th of January, 1842, but lay becalmed and rolling to the ocean's swell. A boat put off from her side, and approached the landing-place. One of the attendants of his Excellency who came in it, repaired to the Mission, to communicate with the Father Presidente. All was bustle; men, women, and children hastening to the beach, banners flying, drums beating, and soldiers marching. The whole population of the place turned out, to pay homage to this first Bishop of California. At eleven o'clock the vessel anchored. He came on shore, and was welcomed by the kneeling multitude. All received his benediction—all kissed the pontifical ring. The troops, and civic authorities, then escorted him to the house of Don Jose Antonio, where he dined. A carriage had been prepared for his Excellency, which was accompanied by several others, occupied by the Presidente and his friends. The females had

formed, with ornamental canes, beautiful arches, through which the procession passed, and as it marched along, the heavy artillery of the presidio continued to thunder forth its noisy welcome. At the time he left the barque she was enveloped in smoke, and the distant report of her guns, was heard echoing among the hills in our rear. At four o'clock, the Bishop was escorted to the Mission, and, when a short distance from the town, the enthusiastic inhabitants took the horses from his carriage and dragged it themselves. Halting at the small bower, on the road, he alighted, went into it, and put on his pontifical robes; then returning to the carriage, he continued on, amidst the sound of music and the firing of guns, till he arrived at the church, where he addressed the multitude that followed him."

It does not appear that Bishop Diego had either any joy out of Los Angeles, or any trouble with it, or that he even came near it. The first bishop had a hard road to travel. He could not raise money for the support of his administration. And, after all, Los Angeles was the great thorn in his side for the reason that it was here that Pio Pico had his headquarters as governor and conspirator as well.

It was from Los Angeles that Pio Pico directed his campaign for the secularization of the missions, which really meant the destruction of the missions. And it was from here that he sent his polite but heart-breaking messages to Bishop Diego—messages couched in diplomatic language but deadly in their real intent. Under the strain of his troubles, this faithful first bishop of the Californias sickened and died and went to his reward.

One of the things that troubled and distressed a great deal the authorities of the Catholic Church at this time was the marriage of Protestants and Catholics, which was against the laws of Mexico and the church. But nearly all of the prominent citizens of Los Angeles who were of American or English birth, and not Catholics, married the women of the country and joined their creed. "Americans and English who intend to reside here became Papist,—the current phrase among them being, 'A man must leave his conscience at Cape Horn,' " said Dana in his "Two Years Before the Mast."

But there were still marriages taking place without the sanction of the church, and when the padres complained about it to the American authorities in 1847, just as the Americans had got their hands on California, it is interesting to note the view that the American military authorities took of these marriages. The following highly diplomatic letter written by Col. R. B. Mason, military governor of the territory of California, to a justice of the peace who had performed the marriage ceremony for a Protestant man and a Catholic woman, will prove interesting. The letter was as follows:

“Sir: I desire that, during the existing state of affairs in California, you will not perform the marriage ceremony in any case where either of the parties are members of the Catholic Church of this country.

“I am induced to give these instructions from the fact that the United States Government are exceedingly desirous, and indeed make it obligatory upon their authorities here, to secure to the Californians the full enjoyment of their religion and security in all their churches and church privileges.

“As their canonical laws, and I believe their civil laws also, prohibit any but their own priests from uniting members of their Church in marriage, it is not proper that we should break in upon those laws, or customs, as the case may be, and particularly it is the wish of the President that when the country is subjected to our laws the people may be as favorably disposed toward our government as possible.

“It is therefore good policy for us to abstain from doing anything that will have a tendency to give them offense in matters wherein it may be thought their relations or Church privileges are encroached upon. I am, respectfully, your obedient servant, R. B. Mason, Colonel 1st Dragoons, Governor of California.”

Colonel Mason proved to be the right man in the right place during the crisis that existed between the end of Mexican rule and the beginning of American rule in California. The Catholics were pleased with his actions, and the few Protestants then in the territory were not offended by anything that he did.

The next bishop of California was Jose Sadoc Alemany,

a Dominican. And California—our present, of Alta California—was at the same time erected into a separate and distinct diocese and separated entirely from Lower California. Bishop Alemany took up his Episcopal residence at Santa Barbara. Then, in 1853, he was made an archbishop with his Metropolitan see in San Francisco. Then a new diocese, including Los Angeles, and called the Diocese of Monterey, was erected, with Thaddens Amat of Barcelona, a Vincentian, as bishop. Bishop Amat selected Monterey as his Episcopal residence. Later he removed to Santa Barbara, and, according to Fray Zephyrin, he made the old mission church there a pro-cathedral. He finally, however, came to Los Angeles, where he laid the cornerstone of the Cathedral of St. Vibiana, the present cathedral, on October 3, 1869.

Since then there have been four bishops in succession, namely, Francisco Mora, George Montgomery, Thomas James Conaty and the present bishop, John Joseph Cantwell. Los Angeles became the See of the bishop with Mora, and still remains so.

There are today in the City of Los Angeles thirty or more Catholic churches and numbers of parochial schools and convents, and a Jesuit college, with the number of them all constantly increasing. And the old first church, built on the Plaza, is still standing and is attended every Sunday morning by thousands of devout worshipers.

We feel that we would rob our readers if we failed to reproduce here from the writings of the late Professor Guinn the following colorful references to the old Plaza Church, which Professor Guinn wrote some years ago in his book on California, after long residence here and much patient and painstaking investigation into ancient and dusty records:

“The first church or chapel built in Los Angeles,” says Guinn, “stood at the foot of the hill, near what is now the Southeast corner of Buena Vista Street and Bellevue Avenue. It was an adobe structure about 18x24 feet in size, and was completed in 1784. In 1811 the citizens obtained permission to build a new church—the primitive chapel had become too small to accommodate the increasing population of the pueblo and its vicinity.

“The corner stone of the new church was laid and blessed August 15, 1814, by Father Gil, of the Mission San Gabriel. Just where it was placed is uncertain. It is probable that it was on the eastern side of the old Plaza. In 1818 it was moved to higher ground—its present site. The great flood of 1815, when the waters of the river came up to the lower side of the old Plaza, probably necessitated the change. When the foundation was laid a second time the citizens subscribed 500 cattle. In 1819 the friars of the San Gabriel Mission contributed seven barrels of brandy to the building fund worth \$575. This donation, with the previous contribution of cattle, was sufficient to raise the walls to the window arches by 1821. There it came to full stop. The Pueblo colonists were poor in purse and chary of exertion. They were more willing to wait than to labor. Indeed, they seem to have performed but little of the labor. The neophytes of San Gabriel and San Luis Rey did the most of the work and were paid a real (twelve and a half cents) a day each. Jose Antonio Ramirez was the architect. When the colonists' means were exhausted the Missions were appealed to for aid. They responded to the appeal.

“The contributions to the building fund were various in kind and somewhat incongruous in character. The Mission San Miguel contributed 500 cattle, San Luis Obispo 200, Santa Barbara one barrel of brandy, San Diego two barrels of white wine, Purisima six mules and 200 cattle, San Gabriel two barrels of brandy and San Fernando one. Work was begun again on the church and pushed to completion. A house for the curate was also built. It was an adobe structure and stood near the northwest corner of the church. The church was completed and formally dedicated December 8, 1822—eight years after the laying of the first corner stone.

“Captain de La Guerra was chosen by the ayuntamiento padrino or godfather. San Gabriel Mission loaned a bell for the occasion. The fiesta of Our Lady of the Angels had been postponed so that the dedication and the celebration could be held at the same time. Cannon boomed on the Plaza and salvos of musketry intoned the services.

“The present building and its surroundings bear but little resemblance to the ‘Nueva Iglesia’ (new church) that



Padre Payeras labored so earnestly to complete eighty-five years ago. It then had no floor but the beaten earth, and no seats. The worshipers sat or knelt on the bare ground or on cushions they brought with them. There was no distinction between the poor and the rich at first, but as time passed and the Indians degenerated, or the citizens became more aristocratic, a petition was presented to the ayuntamiento to provide a separate place of worship for the Indians.

“At the session of the ayuntamiento, June 19, 1839, the president stated ‘that he had been informed by Jose M. Navarro, who serves as sexton, that the baptistry of the church is almost in ruins on account of a leaking roof.’ It was ordered that ‘Sunday next the alcaldes of the Indians shall meet and bring together the Indians without a boss, so that no one will be inconvenienced by the loss of labor of his Indians, and place them to work thereon, using some posts and brea now at the guardhouse, the regidor on weekly duty to have charge of the work.’ ”

In the sindico’s account book is this entry: “Guillermo Money owes the city funds out of the labor of the prisoners, loaned him for the church, \$126.” As the prisoners’ labor was valued at a real (twelve and a half cents) a day it must have required considerable repairing to amount to \$126.

In 1861 the church building was remodeled, the faithful of the parish bearing the expense. The front wall, which had been damaged by the rains, was taken down and rebuilt of brick instead of adobe. The flat roof was changed to a shingled one, and the tower altered. The grounds were inclosed and planted with trees and flowers. The old adobe parish house built in 1822, with the additions made to it, later was torn down and the present brick structure erected.

The church has a seating capacity of 500. It is the oldest parish church on the Pacific coast of the United States and is the only building now in use that was built in the Spanish era of our city’s history.

For a period of seventy years after the founding of the pueblo of Los Angeles, the voice of no Christian preacher save that of a Roman Catholic priest was ever heard within its confines. It was in June, 1850, that Rev. J. W. Brier, a Meth-

odist minister, conducted the first Protestant service known to have been held in Los Angeles.

And, off and on for several years afterwards, it seems that spasmodic but futile efforts were made here by various Protestant denominations to obtain footings. We find a Protestant minister, Rev. T. M. Davis, quitting the Los Angeles field in disgust in 1856, and returning to his home in the East. Anent this occasion we find the editor of the Los Angeles "Star" giving vent to the following utterance in the columns of his paper:

"The Protestant portion of the American population are now without the privilege of assembling together to worship God under direction of one of his ministers. The state of society here is truly deplorable. To preach week after week to empty benches is certainly not encouraging, but if in addition to that, a minister has to contend against a torrent of vice and immorality which obliterates all traces of the Christian Sabbath—to be compelled to endure blasphemous denunciations of his Divine Master; to live where society is disorganized, religion scoffed at, where violence runs riot, and even life itself is unsafe—such a condition of affairs may suit some men, but it is not calculated for the peaceful labors of one who follows unobtrusively the footsteps of the meek and lowly Savior."

There is every evidence, however, that the Protestants of Los Angeles in that far-off day did not lose spirit or courage, and that in a couple of years after the departure of Mr. Davis they determined to arrange matters so that they might worship God according to their own consciences and in accordance also with their traditions and early teachings.

So it is that in the year 1859 we find members of various Protestant denominations meeting on common ground and perfecting an organization. In May of that year an organization was formed. Its title was the

FIRST PROTESTANT SOCIETY OF THE CITY OF LOS ANGELES,  
CALIFORNIA

At the first meeting the following preamble and constitution were promulgated and agreed upon:

## CONSTITUTION

Article 1. Our style and title shall be "the First Protestant Society of the City of Los Angeles."

2nd. Our officers shall be a Board of Trustees, five in number, three of whom shall constitute a quorum, to be elected annually, and report at the end of each year. One of their own number shall be selected by themselves to be the President of the Society, and another as Secretary and Treasurer.

3rd. An annual meeting duly called and publicly notified by the Board, shall be held on the first Wednesday of May in each year, or if that day shall be allowed to pass without a meeting, then, as soon after as notice can be duly given, for the purpose of hearing the annual report of the Board and holding the annual election. Any vacancy occurring in the Board during the year may be filled ad interim by the selection of some one by the Board itself.

4th. Money may be collected for the society by such persons only as the Board shall appoint. And the Treasurer may pay out money for the Society only upon the written order of the Board, signed by the President.

5th. The condition of membership in the society is simply the signing of this constitution. And the duty of each member shall be to aid in all suitable ways in securing the present maintenance and permanent establishment and successful progress of Protestant worship in this city.

Adopted this fourth day of May, A. D. 1859.

ISAAC S. K. OGIER,  
WM. MCKEE,  
A. J. KING,  
C. SIMS,  
CHARLES S. ADAMS,  
WM. S. MORROW,  
D. McLAREN,  
THOS. FOSTER,  
WM. H. SHORE,  
N. A. POTTER,  
J. R. GITCHELL.

The constitution having been signed by those present, the Society proceeded to nominate and elect its officers for the ensuing year, whereupon the Hon. I. S. K. Ogier, Hon. B. D. Wilson, J. R. Gitchell, N. A. Potter and Wm. McKee were unanimously chosen trustees. On motion it was

Resolved, That the proceedings of this meeting be published in the newspapers of this city.

On motion, the Society adjourned.

W. E. BOARDMAN, Chairman.

W. M. H. SHORE, Secretary.

Concerning the early struggles and progress of the Protestant denominations in Los Angeles Professor Guinn has made the following record:

PRESBYTERIAN CHURCHES.—As pioneers in the missionary field of Los Angeles, the Methodists came first and the Presbyterians second. The Rev. James Woods held the first Presbyterian service in November, 1854, in a little carpenter shop that stood on part of the site now occupied by the Pico house. The first organization of a Presbyterian church was effected March, 1855, with twelve members. The Reverend Woods held regular Sunday services in the old court house, northwest corner of North Spring and Franklin streets, during the fall of 1854 and part of the year 1855. He organized a church and also a Sunday school. He was succeeded by the Rev. T. N. Davis, who continued regular services until August, 1856, when he abandoned the field in disgust and returned to his home in the East.

The next Presbyterian minister to locate in Los Angeles was the Rev. W. C. Harding, who came in 1869. He abandoned the field in 1871. The Rev. F. A. White, LL. D., came in 1875. He was succeeded by the Rev. F. M. Cunningham, and he by the Rev. J. W. Ellis. Under the ministry of Mr. Ellis in 1882-83 a church was erected on the southeast corner of Broadway and Second Street. The building and lot cost about \$20,000. Services were held in it until March, 1895, when it was sold for \$55,000. The congregation divided into two organizations, the First Presbyterian and the Central Presbyterian. The First Presbyterian built a church on Figueroa

and Twentieth streets. The Central Presbyterian secured a site on the east side of Hill Street, between Second and Third streets, with a dwelling house upon it which they enlarged and remodeled and used for a church.

PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCHES.—The first Protestant Episcopal Church service held in Los Angeles was conducted by Dr. Mathew Carter. An item in the Weekly Star of May 9, 1857, states that "Dr. Carter announces that he has been licensed and authorized by the Right Rev. W. Ingraham Kip, Bishop of California, to act as lay reader for the Southern District." He held regular services for a time in Mechanics' Institute Hall, which was in a sheet iron building near the corner of Court and North Spring streets. In October, 1857, St. Luke's Parish was organized, and the following named gentlemen elected a board of trustees: Dr. T. J. White, Dr. Mathew Carter and William Shore. A building was rented on Main Street, near Second, where services were held every Sunday, Doctor Carter officiating. Services seem to have been discontinued about the close of the year 1857, and the church was dissolved. On January 1, 1865, the Rev. Elias Birdsall, a missionary of the Protestant Episcopal Church, preached his first sermon in Odd Fellows' Hall, Downey Block. The Protestant Society, which had begun the erection of a church building in 1859 under the ministration of Rev. William E. Boardman, a Presbyterian minister, as has been previously stated, offered the unfinished building to the Reverend Birdsall for services. He assented to this on condition that it be transferred to the Episcopalians. Those who had contributed toward its erection consented, and the transfer was made. The edifice was completed and named St. Athanasius Church, and the Episcopalians continued to worship in this building until Christmas, 1883; in the meantime the property was sold to the county for a courthouse site. A site for a new church was purchased on Olive Street, between Fifth and Sixth streets, where a handsome building was erected. In 1884 the name of the organization was changed to St. Paul's Church, the name it still bears.

CONGREGATIONAL CHURCHES.—The first Congregational minister to locate in Los Angeles was the Rev. Alexander

Parker, a Scotchman by birth and a graduate of Oberlin College and Theological Seminary. He had served in the Union army as a member of the famous student company of Oberlin College—a company whose membership was largely made up of theological students.

He preached his first sermon here July 7, 1866, in the court house. A church was organized July 21, 1867, with six members. A lot was purchased on New High Street, north of Temple, where the Beaudry stone wall now stands, and a movement began to raise funds to build a church. The effort was successful. The following extract from the Los Angeles Star gives an account of the dedication of the church:

“On Sunday morning last, June 28, 1868, the new Congregational Church was opened for divine service at 11 A. M. The Rev. E. C. Bissell, pastor of Green Street Church, San Francisco, delivered the dedicatory sermon. At the close of the sermon the Rev. Alexander Parker came forward and gave an account of his stewardship in his exertions to raise this house for the worship of God. The total cost was about \$3,000, of which \$1,000 was obtained from San Francisco, \$1,000 partly as a loan and partly as a gift from churches in the Atlantic states, and collections of small amounts at home, leaving at present a debt of about \$400 on the building, which, though complete, is not yet quite furnished. The house is small, but very neatly arranged; the pews are ample and comfortable, and the building is lofty and well ventilated. Its dimensions are 30x50 feet; it will seat 175 to 200 persons.”

Reverend Parker resigned in August, 1868. He was succeeded by the Rev. Isaac W. Atherton, who reorganized the church November 29, 1868. Services were held in the little church on New High Street until 1883, when, on May 3d of that year, the church on the corner of Hill and Third streets was completed and dedicated. The building, lot and organ cost about \$25,000. In May, 1888, this building was sold to the Central Baptist Church, and a lot purchased on the southwest corner of Hill and Sixth streets. On this a building was erected in 1889. The cost of the lot, church building and furnishing amounted to about \$72,000, to which was added a



YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION BUILDING

fine organ, at a cost of about \$5,000. This church property was sold in 1902 for \$77,000, and a new site purchased on Hope Street near the corner of Ninth, where a beautiful brick and stone church costing \$100,000 was completed in July, 1903.

**BAPTIST CHURCHES.**—The first sermon preached by a Baptist minister in Los Angeles was delivered by Reverend Freeman in 1853.

The first regular church services held in this city by a Baptist minister were conducted by the Reverend Fryer in schoolhouse No. 1, which stood on the northwest corner of Spring and Second streets. The Reverend Fryer held services every Sunday during the year 1860. He seems to have abandoned the field in the early part of 1861. I find no record of any services by a minister of that church between 1861 and 1874.

The First Baptist Church of Los Angeles was organized September 6, 1874, by Rev. William Hobbs. There were but eight members in the organization. The services were held in the old courthouse. Doctor Hobbs severed his connection with the church in June, 1857. For fifteen months the church was without a pastor. In September, 1876, Rev. Winfield Scott took charge of it. He was succeeded in 1878 by the Rev. I. N. Parker, and he by Rev. Henry Angel, who died in 1879.

The church meetings were transferred from the courthouse to a hall owned by Doctor Zahn, on Spring Street between Fourth and Fifth streets. From there it moved to Good Templars' Hall on North Main Street. The ordinance of baptism was administered either in the river or in the baptistery of the Christian Church on Temple Street.

For two years after the death of Doctor Angel the church remained without a regular minister. In 1881 Rev. P. W. Dorsey took charge of it. A lot was secured on the northeast corner of Broadway and Sixth Street, and in March, 1884, a church building was completed and dedicated. The building and lots cost about \$25,000. In the summer of 1897 the lot and building were sold for \$45,000, and with the addition of \$5,000 raised by subscription a larger and more commodious



building was erected on Flower Street, between Seventh and Eighth streets.

**CHRISTIAN CHURCHES.**—The first sermon preached by a member of the Christian denomination was delivered by Rev. G. W. Linton in August, 1874, in the courtroom of the old courthouse. In October and November of that year inquiries were made in the city for persons who had been connected with the church in other places. Twenty-three were found. Of these fifteen signified their willingness to unite in forming a church. On the 26th of February, 1875, the first church was organized. Rev. W. J. A. Smith was the first preacher. He was succeeded by Rev. John C. Hay. The Rev. B. F. Coulter filled the pulpit from 1881 to 1884. During his ministry, and largely through his contributions, the First Church was built on Temple Street near Broadway, where the Aberdeen lodge now stands. In 1894 it was sold and a church edifice erected on the corner of Hope and Eleventh streets at a cost of \$25,000, with Rev. A. C. Smithers as pastor. In 1895 the Rev. B. F. Coulter erected the Broadway Church of Christ on Broadway, near Temple, at a cost of about \$20,000.

**UNITARIAN CHURCHES.**—The first religious services held by the Unitarians were at the residence of T. E. Severance in March, 1877. In May of that year an organization was perfected and regular services were conducted by the Rev. J. D. Wells.

In 1885 the Rev. Eli Fay located in Los Angeles and conducted services for a time in the Masonic Hall, 135 South Spring Street. The church was reorganized and the services were held in Child's Opera House on Main Street. A lot was secured on Seventh Street near Broadway, and largely through the liberality of Doctor Fay, a church building, 45x100 feet in area, was erected at a cost of \$25,000. The church was dedicated June 16, 1889. It was destroyed by fire in 1892. The congregation then purchased from the Baptists the church building on the northeast corner of Hill and Third streets, originally built by the Congregationalists. This site was sold for business purposes in 1899. The last sermon was preached in it by the Rev. C. K. Jones March 18, 1900. The congrega-

tion built a new church on Flower Street between Ninth and Tenth streets.

**SYNAGOGUES.**—Congregation of B'nai B'rith. The first Jewish services in Los Angeles were held in 1854. No place of worship was erected for several years later. In 1862 Rabbi A. W. Edleman organized the congregation of B'nai B'rith and conducted the services until 1886.

The first synagogue was built in 1873 on what is now the site of the Copp Building, just north of the city hall grounds on the east side of Broadway. The lot and buildings were sold in 1894 and a new synagogue erected on the corner of Ninth and Hope streets.

**OTHER DENOMINATIONS.**—The Reorganized Church of Latter Day Saints (Mormon) was first organized in the autumn of 1882. Services are now held at No. 516 Temple Street.

The New Church (Swedenborgian) was organized in 1894, and held services for some time in Temperance Temple. It has since erected a church building at 515 East Ninth Street at a cost of \$3,000.

Seventh Day Adventists organized in 1880 and built a church on Sixth Street. They have now a church on Carr Street which cost \$6,000.

Friends Church was organized in 1897. The congregation has erected a church building on the corner of Third and Fremont Avenue at a cost of \$4,000.

Twenty years ago Professor Barrows related to the local Historical Society some interesting reminiscences of the early ministers and churches in Los Angeles. In his address he said:

As Alta California was settled by a Spanish-speaking people who tolerated no other form of religion except the Roman Catholic, of course there were no churches except of that faith in Los Angeles from the time of the settlement of the ancient pueblo until the change of government in 1846.

From and after the founding of the Mission of San Gabriel, in 1771, until and after the completion of the old Plaza Church in the latter part of 1882, that mission became and remained the center of industrial activity, as well as the headquarters of clerical authority for this portion of the province.

Fathers Salvadea, Sanchez, Boscana and Estenega managed with zeal and great ability the extensive concerns, both spiritual and temporal, of the mission, sending a priest occasionally to the pueblo, or coming themselves, to say mass, at the capilla or chapel which had been built north and west of the present church. After the latter was built, Father Boscana became the first regular rector or pastor, serving till 1831. He was succeeded by Fathers Martinas, Sanchez, Bachelot, Estenega, Jimenez, Ordaz, Rosales and others who served as local pastors for longer or shorter period of the only church in town, from 1831 to 1851.

The first priest whom I knew of, but did not know personally, was Padre Analecto Lestrade, a native of France, who was the incumbent from '51 to '56. Padre Blas Raho, who came here in 1856, I knew well, and esteemed highly. He was broad-minded and tolerant. He told me that he had lived sixteen years in the Mississippi Valley before he came to Los Angeles. He was a native of Italy.

It was during his pastorate that the old church building was greatly improved. It was frescoed inside and out by a Frenchman, H. Penelon, the pioneer photographer of Los Angeles. The lettering on the front of the building as seen today was done by Penelon, viz.: "Los Fieles de Esta Parroquia A la Reina de Los Angeles, 1861;" and also on the marble tablets:

DIOS TE SALVE, MARIA LIENA DE GRACIA  
EL SENOR ESTA EN SU SANTO TEMPLO: CALLE LA TIERRA ANTE  
SU ACATAMIENTO  
SANTA MARIA MADRE DE DIOS, RUEGA POR NOSOTROS PECADORES

Padre Raho was the first vicar general of the diocese, under Bishop Amat.

Later, Padre Raho, who served his parish faithfully for a number of years, and who was respected and revered by his parishioners, fell sick and went to the Sisters Hospital, which was located in the large two-story brick building which stood to the east of the upper depot, and between the latter and the river, which the sisters bought of Mr. H. C. Cardwell, who built it.

Fathers Duran and Mora succeeded Father Raho. There were other priests whom I did not know so well, who made their home at different times at the parsonage adjoining the old church. But none of these, so far as my acquaintance permitted me to know, with the possible exception of Father Mora, were as liberal as Father Raho. The bishop of these times was Tadeo Amat, who, though his jurisdiction extended to Monterey, made his headquarters first at Santa Barbara, and then at this old church of "Nuestra Senora, la Reyna de Los Angeles." Bishop Amat was succeeded by Bishop Mora, a gentle and scholarly prelate. It was during the latter's administration that the Cathedral was built, on Main Street. Bishop Mora was succeeded by Bishop Montgomery.

Of the early Protestant ministers who came to Los Angeles, I knew personally nearly all of them, as they were comparatively few in numbers, whilst of the many, many who now reside here, I hardly know one, intimately.

One of the first to come here, I think, was Parson Adam Bland, who had the reputation of being a smart preacher and a shrewd horse trader. But I heard that after laboring here a year or two in the early '50s, he abandoned the field as hopeless, though in after years he came to the county again, when he found the gospel vineyard vastly more encouraging.

When I came here in '54, there was only one church building in town—that fronting the Plaza—and no regular Protestant church edifice at all.

Rev. James Woods, Presbyterian, was holding Protestant services then in the adobe that stood on the present site of the "People's Store;" and he came to me and asked me to assist in the music each Sunday, which I did. Just how long he preached here, I cannot now recall. But I remember that when the bodies of the four members of Sheriff Barton's party, who were killed in 1857 by the Juan Flores bandits, were brought here for burial, there was no Protestant minister here then to conduct the services. But, as it happened, two of the murdered men were Masons, and that fraternal, semi-religious order, in sheer pity, turned aside, after decorously and reverently burying their own two brethren, and read

a portion of the Masonic burial service over the bodies of the other two men, who were not Masons.

Rev. W. E. Boardman, a Presbyterian clergyman, came here in 1859. He was an able and eloquent preacher and writer and the author of a popular book, entitled "The Higher Christian Life." The want of a commodious place of meeting stimulated a movement to raise funds for the erection of a church, and, as good B. D. Wilson had donated a lot—a portion of the hill on which the County Courthouse now stands—to the "First Protestant Society," people of various denominations who, without regard to sect, attended Mr. Boardman's ministrations, formed an organization, under the name of "The First Protestant Society of Los Angeles," and erected the walls and roof of a church on the lot donated by Mr. Wilson, but this work came to a standstill after Mr. Boardman left, and not until 1864, upon the arrival of Reverend Birdsall, was any further progress made.

Rev. J. H. Stump was a Methodist minister here in the '60s. Rev. A. M. Hough was another early preacher of the same denomination at the same time. On the establishment of the "Southern California Conference," Mr. Hough became the presiding elder. It is said that Rev. J. W. Brier preached the first Protestant sermon ever preached in Los Angeles, in 1850; but I do not think he stayed here long, as there were neither Methodist worshippers nor a house of worship in Los Angeles at that early date.

Rev. Elias Birdsall, who came to Los Angeles in 1864, soon after his arrival organized an Episcopalian Church. I knew Mr. Birdsall very well, and respected him as one of the best men whom I ever knew. He was in all respects an admirable citizen. He believed—and most laymen will surely agree with him—that every person who is to become a public speaker should make a special preparatory study of elocution.

At the funeral services of President Lincoln held in this city, Mr. Birdsall delivered an admirable oration before a large concourse of our citizens. Mr. Birdsall died November 3, 1890.

Other rectors of the original Saint Athanasius Church of Los Angeles, afterwards St. Pauls, were Dr. J. J. Talbot,

H. H. Messenger, C. F. Loop, W. H. Hill, J. B. Gray, G. W. Burton and Mr. Birdsall. Doctor Talbot came here in 1868 and was a very gifted and impassioned orator, and had withal a slight tinge of the sentimental or poetical in his character, and his sermons were much admired, especially by the ladies. Doctor Talbot, sad to say, however, was only another instance of a man with brilliant talents who threw himself away and went to the bad. He lived, in the main, an exemplary life here, at least up to within a short time before he left. To those who knew him intimately he used sometimes to speak with tenderest regard of his dear children and his wife, "Betty," in their pleasant home near Louisville. And to them his last words, uttered at the very threshold of death, are full of startling pathos and inexpressible sadness; indeed, I know of no sadder passage in all literature:

"I had children—beautiful, to me at least, as a dream of morning, and they had so entwined themselves around their father's heart that no matter where he might wander, ever it came back to them on the wings of a father's undying love. The destroyer took their hands in his and led them away. I had a wife whose charms of mind and person were such that to 'see her was to remember, and to know her, was to love.' I had a mother, and while her boy raged in his wild delirium two thousand miles away, the pitying angels pushed the golden gates ajar, and the mother of the drunkard entered into rest. And thus I stand a clergyman without a church, a barrister without a brief, a husband without a wife, a son without a parent, a man with scarcely a friend, a soul without hope—all swallowed up in the maelstrom of drink."

The early ministers of the Congregational Church in Los Angeles were Revs. Alexander Parker (1866-67); I. W. Ather-ton (1867-71); J. T. Wills (1871-73); D. T. Packard (1873-79); C. J. Hutchins (1879-82); and A. J. Wells (1882-87).

I should mention that Drs. J. W. Ellis, A. F. White and W. J. Chichester were comparatively early pastors of the Presbyterian Church; and also that Dr. M. M. Bovard was president of the University of Southern California.

Dr. Eli Fay was the first Unitarian minister to hold public religious services here. Doctor Fay was, intellectually, a very

able man, though somewhat aggressive and self-assertive. His sermons, barring a rather rasping flavor of egotism, were models of powerful reasoning. Before coming to Los Angeles, Doctor Fay had been pastor of Unitarian congregations at Leominster, Massachusetts, and at Sheffield, England. In addition to his sacerdotal qualifications, Doctor Fay was a very good judge of the value of real estate. Soon after he came here he bought what he called "choice pieces of property," on which it was understood he afterwards made big money. Like many other shrewd saints who came here from many countries, his faith in Los Angeles real estate seemed to be second only to his faith in the realty of the land of Canaan, or, in other words, in "choice lots" in the "New Jerusalem."

I might recount many anecdotes concerning those ministers and priests of Los Angeles of a former generation, of whom I have spoken; for in those olden times, in this then small town, everybody knew almost everybody else. In a frontier town—which this then was—there are always picturesque characters, among clericals as well as among laymen.

The foregoing reminiscences of Professor Barrows, together with the recollections of some other old timers, constitute about all we have of the history of the churches from the time that the spiritual field came to be shared with the Catholics by Protestants and Jews and other sects and denominations of almost innumerable creeds and philosophies.

At first glance it might seem strange that the churches have been apparently careless in keeping records, but we are to remember—and, in a way, to be thankful—that the churches have lacked the cunning that characterized purely business institutions. One would almost say that business is one thing and religion is another. And, on this ground, we can excuse the churches for failing to do that which in business would be regarded as reprehensible carelessness. Business thinks in days, but religion thinks in centuries.

To make a record of the standing and status of the churches in Los Angeles today would be, it seems to us, an unnecessary task. Not only has every Christian and other denomination come into wonderful prosperity and success here, but it is also

a well-known fact that it would be quite impossible to name any religion or creed or philosophy or school of thought under the sun that is without representation in Los Angeles. More than that, we find ourselves able to say that very many religions, or schools of thought that come under that general head, are found in Los Angeles and nowhere else. Maybe it is the climate, and maybe it is something else, but whatever it is, the fact remains that Los Angeles is the most celebrated of all incubator of new creeds, codes of ethics, philosophies and near philosophies and schools of thought, occult, new and old, and no day passing without the birth of something of this nature never before heard of.

Indeed, Los Angeles has acquired a fame not altogether enviable, as a breeding place and a rendezvous of freak religions. But this is because its winters are mild, thus luring the pale people of thought to its sunny gates, within which man can give himself over to meditation without being compelled to interrupt himself in that interesting occupation to put on his overcoat or keep the fire going.

With all that, it must also be said that sane religion has nowhere in the world a safer, more prosperous and welcome haven than it has here. Among other things, Los Angeles is most certainly a city of churches.



## CHAPTER XVI

### THE LAW AND THE COURTS

Los Angeles having been originally a Spanish pueblo or town, founded by order of the King, it was, of course, governed in a general way by the laws of Spain in common with all Spanish colonies in the New World. It was a simple, direct code based on the Roman law under which Spain had lived for centuries. The compilation was called the "Laws of the Kingdoms of the Indias."

Concerning this compilation we can do no greater service to our readers than to quote Dr. Charles F. Lummis, undoubtedly a high authority on things Spanish-American. Doctor Lummis says:

"Probably the most extraordinary amendment and amplification of a civil code in history was that by which the Roman Law (under which Spain had lived for centuries) was revised to cover the new problems of the New World. The problems of colonial government on a large scale were for the first time brought up to statesmen—for even the colonial administration of Rome was child's play compared to that undertaken by Spain more suddenly.

"The amendments were in the spirit of the code. But that code has never had any such extraordinary revisions.

"This revision began with Ferdinand and Isabella immediately upon the return of Columbus from his first voyage, in which the New World was discovered. The most active century of adaptation was that to which we may relate the real geographical understanding of the three Americas—namely, from about 1550 to 1650. But before and after this century, the special legislation, elastic to the needs of new human and geographical and political conditions, were of a magnitude to challenge attention.

"A recognized authority has said that of all the 'Indian

Policies' in history, none compares for humanity with the Spanish-American policy. It may be added that no other expansion of the Roman law along logical lines is at all comparable with this. For the first, if not for the only time, it was recognized by statesmen that the first wealth of the new wilderness was not in its lumber, nor its land, nor its mines, but its men. After more than three and a half centuries of this legislation—this projection of the Roman law—the result is



THE LAWS' DIGNITY OF TODAY  
Present Court House and Hall of Records

that in Spanish America the conquered aborigine is as numerous as he was in 1492 and much better off. And the modern school of scientific American history has proven this fact, surprising to earlier scholars and to popular opinion.

“The Laws of the Indies are accessible in dignified volumes in every important public library in America. The extent to which the American adaptations of Roman law, through Spanish statesmanship come, are indicated by these marginal readings:

“ ‘Indians shall not be separated from their parents.’

“ ‘Indians shall not be removed from their native places—not even to a reservation.’

“ ‘Indians shall be civilized without being oppressed.’

“ ‘Since they are necessitous people, care must be taken that the Indians should be educated in the price of foods and other things. They must be taxed with justice and moderation, and things must be sold to them much cheaper than to other people.’

“Under the provisions of Spanish law, it was absolutely impossible to evict an Indian from the land he was born on or lived on. It was impossible to herd him on reservations like a Cuban reconcentrado. It was impossible to violate as to the aborigine any of the human rights which the proudest and most punctilious Caucasian would value for himself. The stories of oppression have no documentary foundation in the records or in the old books. The only hardship imposed was the same which the laws of every state in the American Union impose on our children—compulsory education, non-vagabondage.”

In further elaboration of this very remarkable code of laws, I have the honor to quote an eminent Los Angeles legal authority, Willoughby Rodman, Esquire, from a book written by him entitled “History of the Bench and Bar of Southern California,” and published in 1909 by the late William J. Porter.

No code could be more comprehensive than the Recopilation, says Mr. Rodman. Provision is made for every department of government, down to the smallest political subdivision. Every relation between state and subject or among subjects, is covered by the most explicit and minute regulations. The smallest details are provided for. A most elaborate system of official inspection and accounting is established. Responsibility of officials is not only fixed in unmistakable terms, but is required to be strictly enforced.

The settlement of new countries and the welfare of their native peoples are the principal objects of these laws. Colonization is made the subject of extensive and detailed provisions. Settlers are to be induced to come to new colonies by promises of liberal grants of public lands to be made upon

small payments and easy terms. Not only do these laws seek to obtain settlers of European birth, but provision is made for making settlers and citizens out of indigenous people. The protection, kind treatment, education, religious conversion and civilization of Indians are insisted upon, and rules for the promotion of these objects are to be enforced with great strictness.

Not only is the Indian to be protected from foreign invasion, and from oppression by his new masters, but he is to be protected against himself, his civil and ecclesiastical guardians being charged with the duty of inculcating principles of industry, economy and sobriety, and enforcing their observance.

A few examples will illustrate the laws last referred to.

Governors, judges and alcaldes were required to see that inns and taverns be provided in Indian pueblos, so that inspecting officials should not be quartered upon Indians against their will. It was also made the duty of such officials to instruct the Indians in the methods by which they could secure justice; to respect the habits and social systems of the Indians so far as these are not contrary to (Roman Catholic) religion.

They were also charged to "see that the Indians are not idle nor vagabond, but that they work in their fields or at other labor on work days; that they improve the land for their own benefit, and that they attend church; that these officials should not take from citizens or Indians, nor any one whatever, personal service without paying them."

As to governors, judges, advocates and alcaldes, the laws provided that they "must give bond before being qualified; must hear all persons equally and with benignity so that their grievances may be settled easily and without trouble; must hold court in public places and not in the closets of notaries; must inspect all territory under their jurisdiction—but only one time (though frequent inspections were required to be made by other officials); shall not receive fees for their inspections; shall not quarter themselves on citizens against their will."

"They shall see that the lands of their jurisdiction are

improved and the public works kept in good repair—that meats, fish and other foods be sold at reasonable prices. That fences, walls, streets, bridges, sidewalks, fountains, slaughter-houses and all other public works and edifices be kept clean and in repair.”

A law of 1583 provided that “Governors who are not college graduates (licentiates) shall name lieutenants who are; these must give bond and must also pass an examination.”

Governors, judges, advocates, mayors and their lieutenants were included in the prohibition against and penalties imposed upon ministers trading or being in commerce in the Indies.

They were also required to present inventories of all their possessions at the time of taking office—presumably for the purpose of enabling higher officials to determine whether or not the close of their terms showed an undue increase of worldly goods.

A law of 1570 required the formation of a corps of “Medical directors-general.” This corps was sent by the king to the colonies to study medicinal plants, herbs, etc., and publish directions concerning their use. It was their duty to test everything, to examine experts, whether Spanish or Indian, “sending to Spain samples and seeds of those plants found beneficial; writing fully and clearly the natural history of the country; taking residence in one of the cities in which there is a chancellery, and with a jurisdiction for five leagues around their residence; they shall examine and give license to persons desiring to practice medicine. They shall proceed against any person practicing medicine without proper license.”

In 1535 it was decreed that “no person shall practice medicine or surgery without a degree and a license; nor make use of any title for which they have no diploma as Doctor, Master or Bachelor.” “Medical directors-general shall not give licenses to candidates who do not appear personally before them for examination—to no Doctor, Surgeon, Apothecary or Barber, nor to any other exercising the faculties of medicine or surgery (1579).”

Another law provides that “viceroys, presidents and governors shall have inspections made of the drug stores of their

districts, and if there are corrupt medicines, shall have them spilled and thrown away so that there can be no other use of them."

Thus in 1538 we have a law similar to the "Pure Food" laws of today.

Sheriffs were permitted to appoint and remove their lieutenants and jailors. The law required that "sheriffs and their lieutenants must make the rounds and inspect all public places by night under pain of suspension. They must not wink at forbidden games nor public sins; nor receive fees nor gifts from prisoners, shall not arrest without a writ; in an Indian pueblo the sheriff may be an Indian."

A law of 1535 exempted from execution pearl-fishery boats, machines used in mining; also horses or weapons, except in default of other goods.

This Recopilacion or compilation, modified from time to time as to special subjects by the various "reglamentos" or instructions above referred to, issued by king or viceroy, constituted the law of California, of which Los Angeles was a part, from its settlement in 1769 until the establishment of the Mexican Empire. Under Mexican rule California, being a territory, was governed directly by the federal executive and Cortes of Mexico. Territorial juntas or legislative assemblies had or, at least, exercised, legislative functions in regard to local affairs. The general laws of Mexico were based upon the civil law, and were in their general scope similar to the laws of the Recopilacion.

In the colonization law of 1824 and the Regulations of 1828 the decrees of Spanish monarchs as set forth in the Recopilacion are expressly recognized. Recopilacion and "Novissima Recopilacion" were in force in California in 1840.

As the law of Spain, and later as the foundation of the law of Mexico, the civil law obtained in California until April 13, 1850. On the last-mentioned date the Legislature of California passed an act providing "The Common Law of England, so far as it is not repugnant to or inconsistent with the constitution of the United States, or the constitution or laws of the state of California, shall be the rule of decision in all the courts of this state."

In the above synopsis we have quoted Mr. Rodman *verbatim*.

This first Legislature of California is celebrated in history as the "Legislature of a Thousand Drinks," which would seem to indicate on the face of the epithet that about all the members of the body did was to stew themselves in alcoholic beverages. But, fortunately, while it may be true that the flowing bowl was much in evidence, the fact remains that it was probably the best Legislature the State of California has ever had, down to this day. It consisted of fifty-two members and its session lasted 129 days. It performed an enormous amount of work and put the new commonwealth on a firm foundation legally. Among other things it created Los Angeles as a bona fide American city by Act of April 4th.

But let us go back to the days before the star of California was placed in the azure field of Old Glory, in order that we may see just how the law of the land was executed, especially as Los Angeles was affected thereby.

In the patient and painstaking way of all student lawyers, Mr. Rodman tells us that the judicial officers most frequently mentioned in California history are the alcaldes. And he goes on further to say:

The office of alcalde is of ancient origin, having been created and recognized in Spain long prior to the conquest of Mexico. The *Recopilacion de las Indias* provides for the appointment of alcaldes in Spanish colonies, and defines their jurisdiction and powers. In each city or pueblo there were two ordinary alcaldes chosen each year. Ordinary alcaldes had jurisdiction in the first instance of all cases, civil or criminal. Appeals from their acts or sentences went to the *audiencias* or royal councils, to the governor, or to the *ayuntamiento*, the local governing body.

The *Recopilacion* provided that alcaldes "must be honorable persons, able and sufficient, know how to read and write, and have other qualities which are required for such offices; preference given to descendants of pioneers 'if they have the necessary qualifications for government and the administration of justice'; must be citizens; cannot be re-elected until

after an interim of two years and passing an inspection of their term."

The law creating the office of *alcalde* seems to have been operative in California under Spanish rule. *Alcaldes* also exercised certain administrative and legislative functions, acting as members of *ayuntamientos*, and as rulers of towns in the event of the death of a governor, leaving no lieutenant; having general supervisory duties, and the power to inspect houses of the religious brotherhoods.

A communication from Governor Borica (1794-1800) to a newly elected *alcalde* indicated the nature of the duties appertaining to the office. As this communication might prove useful to judicial or administrative officers of today, it is given:

"I approve of the election of your honor as *alcalde* for the ensuing year, and am persuaded that you will exercise the duties of your office with the dignity of an honest man. You will consent to no immoral practices, to no drunkenness, to no species of gaming that is prohibited by law. You will encourage and stimulate every *poblador* who does not enjoy military exemption to work his land and take proper care of his stock. You will permit no idleness. You will, in fine, be zealous in complying with all the obligations of your employment, treat the Indians, both Christian and Gentile, with kindness and consideration, and fulfill the orders of the government without attempting to put strained constructions upon them."

During the early years of Spanish rule, captains, military chiefs and governors of California were authorized to act as ordinary judges of first instance in all cases, civil and criminal, arising in their respective districts. Criminal cases were tried by military officers under and according to military law, except capital cases, which were to be tried by a council of war or court martial. Prior to 1800 the viceroy exercised the powers of a judge in criminal cases. (1 Bancroft, p. 638.) It seems to have been the custom in important cases to transmit the papers for decision to the *commandante-general*. (Hittell.)

In 1791, Don Felipe De Neve, the immortal founder of Los Angeles, then *commandante-general*, on receiving papers in a



criminal prosecution, advises with the assessor or law adviser of the *commandancia* (or province) and refused to entertain the cases, on the ground that his jurisdiction was military rather than judicial, and that the only proper course of procedure was for the captain who had acted as judge of first instances, to decide every cause before him, and from his decision an appeal might be taken to the royal *audiencia* or supreme court. Gradually the judicial powers of military officers were either taken away by law, or suffered to lapse to a great extent, for the history of later years of Spanish rule shows an increasing exercise of judicial functions by *alcaldes*. These officers acted as judges of first instance, neither their jurisdiction nor the right of procedure upon appeal from their judgments being clearly defined. A decree of the Spanish Cortes, dated October 9, 1812, defining certain duties and functions of *alcaldes*, is as follows:

### “CHAPTER THIRD

#### “OF THE CONSTITUTIONAL ALCALDES IN THE TOWNS

“Art. 1. Inasmuch as the *alcaldes* of towns exercise in them the office of amicable compounders, every person who wishes to attack another before the district judge, either on account of some civil wrong or some tort, must present himself before the competent *alcalde*, who, with two good men (*hombres buenos*), appointed one by each of the contending parties, shall hear both parties, and take into consideration the reasons they allege, and after hearing the opinion of the associates shall give, within eight days at most, his conciliating decision, calculated, in his opinion, to terminate the litigation, without going any further. This decision will, in effect, terminate the dispute, if the parties acquiesce in the decision, which must be inscribed upon a book, which the *alcalde* must keep, bearing the title of ‘Decisions of Conciliation,’ signed by the said *alcalde*, the good men and the parties, if they know how to write, and certificates of the same are to be given to such as may desire the same.

“Art. 2. If the parties do not conform to this decree, it must also be inscribed in the same book, and the *alcalde* shall

give a certificate to the party desiring it, that he has brought an action of conciliation, and that the parties interested have not consented thereto.

“Art. 3. When some person residing in another town is cited before the competent alcalde of conciliation, the alcalde must cause him to be cited, by means of the judge of his residence, that he may appear, either in person or by an attorney of competent powers, within a sufficient period of time, which must be prescribed; and if he should not appear, the plaintiff will be entitled to a certificate, specifying that he has made a demand in conciliation, which has failed because the defendant has neglected to appear.

“Art. 4. If the demand in conciliation has reference to the effects of a debtor about to remove the same; or to prevent the construction of some new work, or other things of like urgency, and the plaintiff requires the alcalde to take provisional measures in order to avoid the injury which might arise from delay, the alcalde shall do so immediately, and forthwith proceed with the conciliation.

“Art. 5. The alcaldes will, moreover, take cognizance in their respective towns of all civil suits wherein the sums in controversy do not exceed fifty reals vellon in the peninsula, and the adjacent lands, and one hundred silver dollars in the ultramarine provinces; and in criminal cases of slight faults and injuries which only require reprimand or light correction, the proceedings in both cases being verbal. For this purpose, the alcaldes, as well in civil as in criminal matters, will associate good men, as above mentioned, chosen by each of the contending parties, and after hearing the plaintiff and defendant and taking the opinion of the associates, shall give such a decision before the notary as they may deem just, and from such an opinion the parties cannot appeal, nor does it require any other formality than to inscribe it, together with a succinct exposition of the proceedings, in the book which is required to be kept for verbal judgments, and to have it subscribed by the alcalde, the good men and the notary.

“Art. 6. The alcaldes of towns shall likewise take cognizance of all judicial proceedings in civil suits until litigation

arise among the parties thereto, in which event they shall transfer them to the district judge.

“Art. 7. They may all take cognizance, at the request of the parties, of such proceedings as are litigated, when they are very urgent, as the preparation of an inventory, the quieting of possession, or others of a like nature, referring the matter to the judge as soon as the object of their interference has been accomplished.

“Art. 8. The alcaldes, when a crime has been committed in their towns, or some delinquent has been discovered, ought to proceed ex-officio, or at the request of a party, to institute the first proceedings of the inquest (summaris) and cause the criminals to be apprehended, in every cause where an offense has been committed, which according to law deserves corporal punishment, or when the offender has been found flagrante delicto; but in such cases they shall immediately transfer to the district judge the proceedings by them had, and place the criminal at his disposal.

“Art. 9. The alcaldes of towns in which the district judge resides may, and ought to make all the preparatory proceedings spoken of in the preceding article, and give immediate notice of the same to the district judge, that he may continue the proceedings.

“Art. 10. In all the proceedings which may be required as well in civil as in criminal causes, the district judges cannot employ other alcaldes than those of their respective towns.

“Art. 11. As it respects the government, economy and the police of the towns, the alcaldes shall exercise the same jurisdiction and powers which existing laws grant to the ordinary alcaldes, observing in every respect the provisions of the constitution on this subject.”

So far as appears from history, the Mexican judicial system was similar to that of Spain, and during the Mexican Empire and the early years of the republic, laws were administered by the same courts as under the Spanish regime.

Coming now to the times of the American occupation of California, we see that in his proclamation to the people, calling a convention to form a state constitution, Governor Riley stated that courts were in existence in California as follows:

1. A Superior Court (tribunal superior) of the territory, consisting of four judges and a fiscal. 2. A judge of first instance for each district. This office is, by a custom not inconsistent with the laws, vested in the first alcalde of the district. 3. Alcaldes who have concurrent jurisdiction among themselves in the same district, but are subordinate to the higher judicial tribunals. 4. Local justices of the peace.

As to the Superior Court referred to by Governor Riley, we are not fully informed by history concerning its jurisdiction; nor does history show that it was ever fully organized or performed its functions.

Under the "Plan de Gobierno," or plan of government, adopted for the Mexican Republic of 1824, judicial power, so far as concerned people of the pueblos, was vested in the first instance in the alcaldes, or in justices of the peace; in the second instance, in commandants of presidios, and in the third and final instance in the governor.

As concerned people outside pueblos, judicial power was vested in first instance in alcaldes, in the second and final instance in the governor.

Alcaldes continued to exercise the same powers as they had exercised prior to the revolution. Courts of First Instance were never organized in California. But records of Los Angeles County show that suits were brought and determined in a court of that name, presided over by an alcalde.

Shortly after Mexico achieved independence, the two Californias were united into the Sixth Judicial Circuit of the Mexican Republic, and Alta California was made one of the districts of that circuit. In 1828 a court for the circuit was instituted at Rosaria, but at that time no district court had been organized in Alta California.

Bancroft says that in 1826 there were no courts of law in California competent to try civil or criminal cases.

Under the Mexican law of 1836, alcaldes continued to exercise jurisdiction over cases of conciliation, what was known as "oral litigation," and preliminary proceedings of both civil and criminal nature.

They had jurisdiction in all municipal matters, in cases of minor offences, and in actions to recover debts not exceed-

ing \$100. Appeals from their decisions were taken to the Court of First Instance.

The Mexican system provided that there be in each partido a Court of First Instance, presided over provisionally by the first *alcalde*, in places having an *ayuntamiento*; in other places by the justice of the peace of first nomination. From 1824 to 1840 Courts of First Instance were presided over by *alcaldes* or justices of the peace. We find no record, during this period, of the election or appointment of any person as judge of first instance *eo nomine*. Judge Nathaniel Bannett, one of the first three justices of the Supreme Court of the State, says: "It is believed that judges of first instance were never appointed and never held office in California under the Mexican regime, but that *alcaldes* possessed the powers and jurisdiction of judges of first instance. The *alcaldes*, before the annexation of the country, it is believed, certainly afterwards, to a great extent, both made and enforced the law; or, at least, they paid but little regard either to American or Mexican law further than suited their own convenience and conducted to their own profit."

Courts of First Instance had appellate jurisdiction over *alcalde's* courts, and original jurisdiction of all cases involving more than \$100.

The Court of Second Instance provided for by Mexican law was an appellate tribunal with jurisdiction of appeals from Courts of First Instance.

Courts of Third Instance were courts of last resort, except the Supreme Tribunal of Mexico. This court was composed of all the judges of second instance. It had cognizance of cases involving more than \$4,000. Its power of review was not limited to questions raised below, but it could not review questions upon which the two inferior courts had concurred.

It may have been intended that Courts of Second and Third Instance should be established in California, but we have no evidence of their establishment. In a decree of the Mexican Congress made March 2, 1843, it is said that no Courts of Second and Third Instance had been established in California.

By act of March 28, 1843, the governor of the territory was

instructed to see that justice be administered in the first instance "by judges of that grade, if there be such, or by alcaldes, or justices of the peace." Whether or not these courts had ever been established in California, the first Legislature of the State considered it necessary to pass a statute abolishing them.

In 1839, on recommendation of Governor Alvarado, the departmental junta established a Superior Court, and appointed four judges and an attorney-general, or "fiscal." Several judges and the fiscal declined to act, and for some years the court transacted no business.

On account of the commission of numerous crimes, and influenced by the protests of foreign governments against the prevailing lawlessness, an extra session of the junta was called for the purpose of filling vacancies on the bench and putting the superior tribunal into working order. On May 31, 1842, the junta elected a new fiscal, and designated persons to act as substitute members of court and fill vacancies that had occurred or might occur. The tribunal organized and transacted some business, but according to Hittell's history, "it cannot be said to have distinguished itself either for learning, diligence, or effectiveness." No judge of this court was a lawyer.

On June 15, 1845, the superior tribunal of justice was reorganized. It was to consist of two members and a fiscal, and was divided into two chambers denominated "First" and "Second." Ministers and fiscal were to be appointed by the governor upon nomination by the junta. Clerks and other ministerial officers were appointed by the court. Ministers and fiscal, whose first appointments were provisional, were to receive \$2,000 per year; but when the offices should be filled by professional lawyers, incumbents were to receive \$3,000 per year. It was directed that the government should, by means of notices published in newspapers, invite candidates for positions as ministers or fiscal to present statements showing their qualifications. The employment of a similar system at this day would make the governor's duties exceedingly onerous. The same statute provided that in each capital of a "partido" a Court of First Instance should be established,

to be presided over provisionally by the first alcalde in places having ayuntamientos; elsewhere by the justice of the peace of first nomination. The first judicial district, which was to be known as that of Los Angeles, included all territory from the northern boundary of San Luis Obispo Mission to the southern boundary of Alta California.

The first district was divided into three partidos—the first that of Los Angeles, extending from the crest of Santa Susana Mountains to the southern limit of the Mission of San Juan Capistrano; the second, Santa Barbara, extending from the northern limits of the Mission of San Luis Obispo southwardly to and including the ranchos of Simi and El Triunfo; the third, San Diego, to comprehend all the Mission of San Luis Rey, thence southward to the southern boundary of the territory. Very little is known of the nature or volume of business transacted by courts established or provided for by this system.

Mr. Rodman calls attention to the fact that Bancroft mentions a certain person as having been appointed "Superior Judge" in 1849, but of this judge, or of the Superior Court referred to in the governor's proclamation, we have no definite information.

Alcaldes continued to transact the greater portion, if not all, of the judicial business of the territory. Their powers were varied and extensive.

In 1836 one Maria del Pilar Buelna complained to Michael Requena, alcalde of Los Angeles, that her husband, Policarpo Higuera, had beaten her so severely that she had been obliged to leave his house. The husband justified himself on the ground that his wife had disobeyed his commands not to visit her mother. Requena attempted as part of his duty as judge of a Court of Conciliation, to settle this dispute and reconcile the couple. But in this he failed, and the controversy came to trial. It appeared upon investigation that the husband was dissatisfied not only because his wife had visited her mother, but because she had gone with his brother, whom he had forbidden his house. As the husband did not charge his wife with the commission of any crime, the court ordered that the couple should live together "as God had commanded,"

and also ordered that if in the future the husband should have any complaint, he should make it to the court, and not attempt to take the punishment into his own hands, and that if the husband's brother should interfere, he should be punished according to his deserts. This judgment was not only decidedly in personam, but is an example of equitable paternalism. Husbands frequently applied to courts for orders compelling their wives to live with them. In 1840 one Ortez of Los Angeles, claiming that his wife had run away to San Gabriel, an officer was sent with instructions to bring her back to marital protection.

And thus we see how Los Angeles was governed from the time it was founded until the Stars and Stripes floated in conquest over it and it became subject to American laws. But whether or not the new laws were better than were the old ones, it were hard to say. But certainly we can say this, that there are altogether too many laws in these days in cities and out of cities, and that this is a charge that cannot be made against the older system.

When we speak of law and the courts, we naturally think of litigation. We might have reason to suppose that if all laws were obeyed, and if there were no argument as to their meaning, there would be no need of courts. But, unhappily, it is quite impossible now, as it has always been, to frame the simplest law without subjecting it to a different interpretation by almost everybody that reads it.

This same thing is what causes so many different religions, and so many sects of the same religion. One man reads the Bible and interprets it differently from another man who reads it. Consequently, we have a great many creeds and sects, and the number seems to be constantly increasing.

It is the same way with laws enacted by human beings, and the result is an ever increasing multiplicity of courts. The more laws the more litigation.

Now, immediately upon the American occupation of California, and for many years succeeding it—even down to the present day—the most fruitful source of litigation has been the title to real property. And this brings us to the often-mentioned subject of land grants. “Old Spanish Land



Grants" and "Mexican Land Grants" are familiar phrases in California. The title to all property in the City of Los Angeles, as well as throughout all California, goes back to one or the other of these "Grants," and depends upon them for validity.

Spain acquired title to California by virtue of discovery, conquest and occupation—a title admitted as valid by the custom of nations and international law. Wherefore, all real property in California, all title to the land, was vested originally in the Spanish crown.

Then the crown proceeded to "grant" lands to individuals, and thus began the business upon which real estate operators, lawyers, title and abstract companies and the courts thrive. The first conveyance of crown land to any individual in California was made in November, 1775, to one Manuel Butron somewhere in the northern part of the province which was authorized by instructions given by the Governor Bucareli to the Commandante Rivera y Moncada.

The first grants made in the present City of Los Angeles are recounted in detail in the early chapters of this book.

Rodman says: "At first all grants were executed by the Government; later, grants of pueblo lands were made by the ayuntamientos of the various pueblos. Grants of other lands were always executed by the Governor. During the early years of Spanish rule, grants of absolute titles were not made, citizens receiving merely the right to use the land or take its produce."

In order to fully understand the difference between the idea of the Spanish system of owning land and our present American system, we can do no better than to quote the language of the Supreme Court of California in a celebrated case. The Supreme Court said:

"1. Our plan has been to encourage settlement of the country by selling land in small tracts at a minimum price. When so settled, villages, cities and towns have grown up as required to supply the wants of the settlers. They have been called into existence by the settlements; but, in the beginning, have not contributed much to cause the country to be settled.

"The Spanish system was the opposite. They founded or

encouraged the formation of villages which, by affording protection as well as educational and religious privileges, would encourage settlement of the neighboring country.

"2. These pueblos differed from our municipalities in many respects. They had no charters, and seem always to have been subject to the control and supervision of superior officers, and this control seems to have been complete and constant. They could suspend, restrict or enlarge the powers of the officers of the pueblo; and yet the pueblos, to an extent and in a mode which is strange to us, constituted convenient instrumentalities for the government of the neighboring country. Their jurisdiction, subject always to the supervision of higher officers, often extended over large territories.

"3. Perhaps the most important respect in which the pueblos and the habits of the inhabitants differed from our municipalities and the habits of our people, is found in the extent to which individual wants were supplied from public or common lands. In this respect the difference is almost startling. Our practice is to reduce everything to private ownership from which a profit can be made; and, of course, the more essential it is to the members of the community, the more profit can be made from it. The rule of the pueblo was almost the reverse of this. So far as communal ownership would answer the purposes of the community it was preferred. As water was one of the things thus held, we may understand better the nature of the right which the pueblos had to it by considering other properties so held."

Like everything else that was good or intended to be good, this power of granting lands to individuals by governors and ayuntamientos began in time to be abused during the Spanish and Mexican eras of California. The governors, particularly, appeared to have been moved by a spirit of splendid generosity toward their friends and favorites. It was nothing at all for a governor of California, under Spain and Mexico, to present a friend with a principality over a cup of coffee or a glass of good wine.

That's how we come to hear of so many of the old Spanish, Mexican and Californian families in California having

been the owners of thousands upon thousands of acres of land upon which today are builded towns and cities.

It is only fair to say, however, that in many cases in those old times, the more land a man owned the poorer he was, and when we often wonder why these old families did not hold onto their vast possessions, the answer is that in those times of sparse population and lack of commercial development, a man had to have some other source of income than his land in order merely to pay the taxes upon it, and thus retain possession of it.

It appears from the records, not to speak of the memory of men still living, that no governor of California even remotely approached in open-handed generosity Don Pio Pico, the last of the Mexican governors.

But even Don Pio Pico is backed up in his wonderful extravagances by what was from his point of view, and the point of view of his fellow-Californians, a good reason. They saw that California was inevitably to fall into the hands of the Government of the United States and to become a part of that great nation. They saw that in that event the strangers would become the new lords of the manors. So, it is said, that during the last days of his reign, Pio Pico worked ceaselessly at signing conveyances of lands to his friends and followers.

When California became a state of the American Union, the United States had no end of trouble for many years in deciding between valid and fraudulent titles to the land. Speaking of cases of this nature, the Supreme Court of the United States itself says in this somewhat weary tone of voice:

“No class of cases that come before this court are attended with so many and such perplexing difficulties as these are. The number of them which we are called upon to decide bears a very heavy disproportion to the other business of the court, and this is unfortunately increasing instead of diminishing. Some idea of the difficulties that surround these cases may be obtained by recurring to the loose and indefinite manner in which the Mexican Government made the grants which we are now required judicially to locate. That government attached no value to the land, and granted it in what to us ap-

pears magnificent quantities. Leagues instead of acres were their units of measurement, and when an application was made to the government for a grant which was always a gratuity, the only question was whether the locality asked for was vacant or public property. When the grant was made, no surveyor sighted a compass or stretched a chain. Indeed, these instruments were probably not to be had in that region. A sketch, called a *diseno*, which was rather a map than a plat of the land, was prepared by the applicant. It gave, in a rude and imperfect manner, the shape and general outline of the land desired, with some of the more prominent natural objects noted on it, and a reference to the adjoining tracts owned by individuals, if there were any, or to such other objects as were supposed to constitute the boundaries. Their ideas of the relation of the points of the compass to the objects on the map were very inaccurate; and as these sketches were made by uneducated herdsmen of cattle, it is easy to imagine how imperfect they were. Yet they are now often the most satisfactory and sometimes the only evidence by which to locate these claims."

Hundreds of these cases were reviewed by the Supreme Court of the United States, and were represented by the greatest lawyers this country has ever known, as only a partial mention of them will prove. Among the great names we find the following: Jeremiah Sullivan Black, the giant Pennsylvanian, and one time attorney-general of the United States; Caleb Cushing, Edwin M. Stanton, Reverdy Johnson, William M. Evarts, John J. Crittenden, Judah P. Benjamin, the immortal Charles O'Connor, Titian J. Coffey, and Hall McAllister.

In its report upon these cases the United States Land Commission, among other things, said: "A greater variety of subjects, or a wider field of investigation, was rarely, if ever, open to any tribunal, and the faith of the nation under the treaty of Guadaloupe Hidalgo, justice to a conquered people and a due regard to the provisions of the Act of Congress organizing this Commission, imposed the duty of a careful investigation of the many questions presented in these cases."

In the spring of 1847, Col. J. D. Stevenson, an officer of the United States, was placed in command of the southern military district of California, and charged particularly with the duty of investigating the land grants which had been made by the Mexican authorities within the limits of his command. And Colonel Stevenson said that soon after he got his district in order he began to make inquiries as to who were the civil officers under Pico, and learned from Abel Stearns and others that he (Stearns) was either the prefect or sub-prefect, and an intimate and confidential friend of Pico, and from him and others he learned that grants were made after it was known that the Americans had taken possession of California, which were antedated, and especially those made in this section of the county from San Jose this way, and that a very large portion of them were signed by Pico on the day and night preceding his start for Mexico, which was about the 8th or 9th of August, 1846; Stearns told him that he was present on the day and night referred to, especially the night those grants were executed, and that Pico left him (Stearns) in charge as next officer in command. These grants were frequently the subject of conversation; and on one occasion a party to whom a valuable grant was made, conferred to him that the grant was executed that night, and he knew nothing of it until he was sent for to accept the grant. He availed himself of every opportunity to obtain information about these grants, both by conversation and otherwise.

And that was the way things went in those days—the good old days now long since gone, when a few thousand acres of land between friends was a small matter; and not as it is now, when they measure it off by the inch to you, and every foot of it in Los Angeles is worth a king's ransom.

The task of straightening it all out was a huge one, requiring great labor, great patience and great ability. And it was a task well performed by both courts and lawyers.

Of the Los Angeles courts and the lawyers of the early days of California statehood there is scant record. But of the lawyers and courts of fifty years ago—and that's a long time ago, too—we have been given some vivid pen pictures by Jackson A. Graves, Ph. D., who was for many years himself

a practicing attorney-at-law, but who is better known since as the president of the Farmers and Merchants National Bank. In his reminiscences along these lines, Mr. Graves says:

I arrived in Los Angeles on the 5th day of June, 1875. I came from San Francisco to accept a position as clerk with the law firm of Brunson & Eastman, and to continue my law studies. This meant, when reduced to more practical terms, my working very hard all day for a small salary, and doing my studying at night. In the following January I was admitted to practice by the Supreme Court of the state, and then became a member of the firm of Brunson, Eastman and Graves.

That was a long time ago, as we measure human life, and quite a number of you were at that time yet unborn. Los Angeles had an able bar then, as she has now. The principal paying business was done by the firms of Glassell, Chapman & Smiths, Thom & Ross, Brunson & Eastman, and Howard & Hazard, while all of the others, including J. D. Bicknell and Stephen M. White, were dividing up among themselves the business unappropriated by the firms mentioned, and waiting for the leading attorneys to die.

One of my first acquaintances in Los Angeles was Mathew Keller, known as "Don Mateo" Keller, a shrewd Irishman, who had been educated for the priesthood, and who decided to follow more worldly pursuits. He was a client of our firm and he and I became quite chummy. He was a delightful conversationalist, a most interesting man, a large property holder, a prosperous winemaker, and a man of affairs generally. He was eager to hear from me all I knew about the great lawyers of San Francisco. I imparted this information to him, and got from him, before I got personally acquainted with them, a pretty good understanding of the practice, habits and standing of the members of the Los Angeles Bar, of whom I think there are today not over five in practice who were in practice when I arrived in Los Angeles.

Don Mateo had names for each of them. For instance, he called Andrew Glassell "Mucho Frio," on account of his austere manner. Col. Geo. H. Smith he called "Circumlocu-

tion," and I will leave it to the Colonel whether or not Keller slandered him in so naming him. A. B. Chapman, in my estimation, was then and is now, a most worthy gentleman. Because his firm had sued Keller repeatedly over certain land titles, he dubbed him "Sepelota," which, I believe, means "scavenger." G. S. Patton, Mr. Glassell's nephew and a clerk in their office, he styled "Handsome George." Captain Thom, Judge Ross' uncle and partner, he called "Redundans," and when I asked him why, he replied: "Well, if Capt. Thom wanted to ask a witness if that was the same horse Pedro Lopez had, he would say, 'Are you quite sure, in your own mind, beyond the slightest hope, expectation or possibility of a doubt, that this is the same, identical horse, that this man Pedro Lopez had?'" Hon. E. M. Ross he called "Generalissimo," on account of his military bearing and appearance. Col. Jim Howard he called "Basso Profundo," on account of his deep bass voice. Will D. Gould, who was then an ardent advocate of temperance, he dubbed "Sanctimonius Sanctimonium." Frank Ganahl was with him "Punchinello," and W. H. Mace he termed "Bulbus." He was well named, for there was something about the man that looked like he was about to sprout. His intimate friend, Judge Brunson, he called "Nervio Bilio," and General Volney E. Howard, "Ponderosity," referring more to his physical rather than to his mental make-up. Thomas H. Smith, or "Long Tom" Smith, as we called him, he called "El Culebra." Horace Bell was "Blusterissimo," and Judge Sepulveda, "Mucho Grande." His very intimate friend, I. W. Hellman, not a lawyer, but a banker, he always called "Valiente."

I asked him what he was going to call me. I had the first Remington typewriter in Los Angeles and ran it incessantly. If you will examine the case filed of the Superior Court of this county, from 1875 to 1880, you will find miles and miles of the work of that old machine in these files. It made much more racket than the present machines, and when running very fast its metallic click sounded like "diddle daddle, diddle daddle." When I put that question to him, he answered promptly "Diddle Daddle," and with him that remained my name until the day of his death.

Judge Sepulveda was district judge, and Judge H. K. S. O'Melveny, father of our Henry, was county judge. He was a courtly gentleman, a friend and assistant of young and aspiring attorneys, the especial favorite of country jurymen, but I always thought a little given to bearing down on the lawyers for the juror's benefit. He was expressive in his rulings, and in all of his proceedings.

One of the funniest things I ever saw occurred in Judge O'Melveny's courtroom. A Mexican had been convicted of grand larceny in stealing horses. He couldn't talk English, and Judge O'Melveny called on Captain Haley to interpret the sentence to him. To appreciate the story you should have known Haley. He had been a surveyor, a sea captain, a druggist, a doctor, and now a practicing lawyer, and was himself a witness in nearly every case he ever had. It was of him that Col. Jim Howard, in an argument before a jury, said: "But we are told by Salisbury Haley, Surveyor Haley, Captain Haley, Druggist Haley, Dr. Haley, Lawyer Haley, Witness Haley, that the whole story is a fabrication." He was short of stature, a rotund, meek-appearing man, and was a perfect picture of innocence personified as he advanced to the prisoner's dock. He stood up by the side of the Mexican. To look at the men as the judge addressed them, no one could have told which was the culprit. Judge O'Melveny glued his gaze on Haley, pointed his finger at him, and in his most penetrating voice and most earnest manner addressed the prisoner through Haley as follows:

"You have been charged by the Grand Jury of this county with a most heinous offense—"

(Haley threw up his finger in sign that he had enough, and interpreted that to the Mexican, who replied, "Si, si, Senior.")

Then the judge, in the same impressive manner, still looking at Haley, and pointing his finger at him, continued: "You have been tried by an intelligent jury of your peers—"

(Signs from Haley, and further interpretation, the Mexican again answering, "Si, si, Senior," and mind you, the attention of the Mexican was fixed on Haley, not on the court.)

"And after a fair and impartial trial, at which you were ably defended by a loyal attorney, this jury, after long and



mature deliberation, has found you guilty of the offense charged. Have you anything to say why sentence should not be passed upon you?"

(More interpretation, and "Nada," with a shrug of the shoulders, from the prisoner.)

Then the judge continued: "It is a shame that a fine, intelligent looking man like yourself cannot find something better to do than horse stealing, and I trust that the sentence I am about to impose upon you will deter others from following your example, and that your incarceration will be for your moral welfare—"

(Sign from Haley, and long interpretation. "Si, si Senor, esta bueno," from the prisoner.)

"I will, however, temper mercy with justice, in dealing with you, and it is the sentence of this Court that you be confined in the state's prison at San Quentin for a term of four years."

(More interpretation, "Si, si Senor, esta bueno, muchas gracias," from the prisoner.)

No other human being on earth could have interpreted that sentence with the meekness and humility that Haley did, and as the judge never took his eyes off him, "any looker-on in Venice" would have thought that it was Haley who was going to the penitentiary for life.

Colonel Howard was a man of rare wit, and great general information. He was a clever magazine writer, and a shrewd criminal lawyer, and worked hard upon his cases. He and Col. E. J. C. Kewen, an orator of such rare qualities that he deserves a place in the niche of fame by the side of Thomas Starr King and E. D. Baker, were partners for years as **Kewen & Howard**. They enjoyed a lucrative criminal practice.

A vigilance committee, led by a French barber named Signoret, who was huge in frame, and had a hand like a ham, and had oratorical ambitions, and preferred revolution to lawful government, took four men out of the county jail and hung them. They thought that Kewen & Howard were too successful in defending criminals, so they passed a resolution that they should hang Kewen & Howard. The next day

Colonel Howard met Signoret in front of the Downey block. He had a habit of standing with his feet well apart, and his head and shoulders bent forward, and of twirling his eye glasses, which he carried suspended from a long gold chain. "Signoret," he said, "I understand you are going to hang Kewen and Howard?" Signoret was perplexed and hedged a little. "Yes," he answered, "that was our intention last night." "Come now, Signoret," said Howard, "we are old friends; be generous, let's compromise. Hang Kewen, he's the head of the firm."

Some lawyer, I forget who, sued Don Miguel Leonis, litigious Basque sheep owner, for a \$25,000 fee for services rendered. He was trying his own case before a jury, and faring badly. Col. Jim Howard, by chance, came into the courtroom. The plaintiff, in desperation, without consulting Howard, put him on the stand to prove the value of his services. He stated what he had done for Leonis, and asked Howard if, in his opinion, \$25,000 was a fair compensation for services rendered. Howard replied: "My practice has been of such a vagabond, beggarly nature, that I am hardly in your class, but if I should earn a \$25,000 fee, I would die of heart failure; but, knowing you and your legal ability, and knowing the litigious character of Don Miguel, I cannot realize any services that you could have rendered him that would be worth over \$2.50, unless you had killed him, then, by a stretch of your conscience, you might have charged him \$5.00."

Among the thoroughly able men at the bar was Frank Ganahl, "Punchinello," as Keller called him. He also was quick-witted.

He was arguing an appeal in the Superior Court for a defendant, convicted of that most revolting crime, rape. There is usually some idiot of a lawyer sitting around the courtroom, whose sole ambition is to sneak up to some lawyer making an argument, and whisper advice to him. At this time the interfeerer chanced to be Judge Delos Lake of San Francisco. He would pluck Ganahl by the coat-tail, and in a stage whisper advise him of some point to be made in his argument. This occurred six or seven times, much to Ganahl's interruption and annoyance, and he finally said: "Your Honors, my

friend, Judge Lake, who, by the way, is an eminent authority on the science and crime of rape, suggests to me this kind of an argument." Lake made no more suggestions to Ganahl.

Among the lawyers of that day was W. H. Mace, called "Bulbus" by our friend Keller. He brought an action to partition one of our great Spanish grants and wrote his complaint on foolscap, writing only on one side of the paper, and when he had finished a page he would paste another page on, and roll up the pages. Glassell, Chapman and Smiths demurred to his complaint on the ground that he did not state facts sufficient to constitute a cause of action. Mr. Glassell presented his point briefly, and sat down. Mace took up his complaint, which was a roll about sixty feet long, stood up on a chair, and with a little sort of a giggle, shot the thing clear across the courtroom, and holding the last page in his hand, turning to the court, said: "If that complaint does not state facts sufficient to constitute a cause of action, then I am incapable of drawing one long enough to do so."

The man who could get more pure fun out of the practice of law than anyone else was Judge Anson Brunson. He was by far the ablest man here when at his best. He was utterly reckless when trying his cases, and relied upon his wit and sheer ability to pull him through. He got into more difficulties, and got more rulings from the Supreme Court on questions of practice than all the lawyers in California put together. Mock heroism, pathos and humor, all came naturally to him, and he could make a little thing look like a mountain, and a big question shrink off the map by a look, a gesture or impassioned appeal.

He had demurred to a complaint upon one occasion, and when the case was called, he said to the court that he would submit the demurrer without argument. Not so his opponent. He must argue the question. Vital rights were at stake. The law must be vindicated. "All right," said Brunson, "I waive the opening." Then the other fellow argued everybody out of the courtroom, and the judge almost off the bench, with dreary platitudes and citation of authority after authority that did not apply, and when he sat down, Brunson arose, took a drink of water, shifted his papers, and with a merry

twinkle in his black eyes, said in the most aggravating way: "Your Honor, I still submit the demurrer without argument." "Demurrer sustained," said the court.

We were trying a case of the Union Anaheim Water Company against the Stearns Ranchos Company, a case involving water rights at Anaheim. Gen. Volney E. Howard opposed us. He called as a witness George Hansen, an old-time surveyor who had laid out the town of Anaheim. As the witness advanced to the stand, General Howard remarked of him, "The father of Anaheim." He asked him the usual preliminary questions, and then came this question: "Mr. Hansen, when did your intercourse with Anaheim begin?" Like a shot out of a cannon, Brunson was on his feet, with his hand up, and in a most impassioned manner, full of fire and assumed earnestness, said: "Your Honor, I object. Counsel cannot incriminate his own witness. He has introduced this witness as 'The father of Anaheim,' and for the father to have intercourse with the daughter is incest." "Objection over-ruled." "Exception," said Brunson, and a looker-on would, from his manner, have thought that he meant every word of it.

A carpenter, a worthy man and an Englishman, had an Irish wife, who was literally a "she devil." Being unable to stand her daily abuse, he sued her for a divorce, Judge Ross being his attorney. She came to us for defense. She owned considerable good real estate in San Francisco, and we took a mortgage on it to secure our fees. There was some delay in going to trial. She came to the office daily and heaped the whole outfit with the vilest abuse. She accused us of selling her out and taking her husband's money with the intention of letting her be beaten. We stood it all with good grace, and diligently prepared the case for trial. It finally came off. The supporters of the respective parties were out in full number during the trial.

Daniel Desmond, a hatter, the father, by the way, of Joe Desmond of aqueduct fame, and C. C. Desmond, one of our business men, was on the stand, testifying to her general "cussedness." He lived next door to her, and was the leader of the village band. He said that he never got out on his back

stoop of a quiet summer night, when the orange blossoms filled the air with fragrance, and the mocking birds were singing their love songs to their mates, to practice on his cornet, but what the defendant would line up her children on the other side of the fence, having each one of them industriously beating a tin can.

Eastman was examining him, and with his most affable smile, and a wave of his hand, said, "An opposition band, Mr. Desmond."

When the trial was ended, the judge denied the plaintiff his divorce. There was nothing from our client too good for us then. She came to the office and was all humility, apologized for her past conduct, and was most effusive in her congratulations and praise of our efforts. She rushed up to Judge Brunson and said to him: "Do you know who you put me in mind of?" "No, I don't," he replied. Realizing that what she was about to say was sacrilege, she rolled her eyes, made the sign of the cross, and said, "Of our good Lord Jesus." She left the office.

Within a week after the trial of this case, our client, the defendant, dropped dead. Charlie Gould, court room clerk of the court in which it was tried, met Judge Sepulveda, before he had heard of it, and said to him: "Judge, God has overruled one of your decisions." "How's that?" said Sepulveda. "Why, you denied Hargitt a divorce, and He has granted him one. His wife dropped dead this morning."

Shortly afterwards Hargitt administered his wife's estate, and came around to pay us our mortgage. He paid the money, and was given a satisfaction of mortgage. Eastman then put his arm around his shoulders, and walked up and down the room with him. "Old man, you ought to double that fee, and then be under lasting obligations to us."

Hargitt said, "Why?" "Well, don't you see, if we had not successfully defended your action for divorce against your wife, you never would have had the privilege of administering her estate, or cutting this pie."

Brunson was a great distinguisher of cases. I believe he was better at this than even Justice Lucien Shaw when writing an opinion involving a water right. When you got

him "nailed to the cross," as you thought, with a pile of authorities, all applicable to your case, he would, in an ingenious way, distinguish them from his case, and waive them aside.

Like many other men of genius, Brunson lacked a balance wheel. He destroyed the vital forces of his physical system, deadened all the moral instinct of his nature by indulging in the worst sort of dissipation. He let power and influence and standing and character slip from his grasp, and he died long before his time, as much from the disappointment, which he keenly felt, as from any physical ailment.

In my own opinion one of the greatest orators who ever delivered an oration in California and one of the ablest of her lawyers, was James G. Eastman. He had passed the meridian of his career before arriving here. He was a better educated, better read man than Brunson. He had more practical, common horse sense and was a better judge of men and of human nature than Brunson.

He had all of Brunson's vices, and lacked the same virtues that Brunson lacked. He was not the latter's equal as a book read lawyer, but in many other respects he was his superior. In the case of the People vs. Waller, a murder case, he committed the indiscretion of spiriting away a witness, was caught at it, convicted and fined for it. This marked the beginning of his downfall. His connection with the Hoyle extradition case brought him still further disrepute. Powerful friends of his more prosperous days gradually deserted him; health failed him; disease rendered him revolting to look upon, and after wandering the streets of this city by day and by night for years, a mendicant, he died at the County Farm, a mental, moral and physical wreck. Like many of our brilliant men, he paid the penalty of genius.

Here let me pay this tribute to each of these men: I entered Eastman's office in 1873, a young man just from college, a stranger to the world, and with character unformed. I came to the office of Brunson and Eastman two years later. Dissipated as these men were, their advice to me was always good. They warned me against the evils of drink and debauchery. They pointed out to me the straight and narrow

path. As far as I am concerned, they were teachers of all that was good and inspiring, no matter how bad an example they set me, and they were proud of me as a man of good character and habits, and as long as either of them lived, rejoiced at my success.

By one of those peculiar political accidents which are constantly occurring, Don Pedro Carrillo, a native Californian of distinguished family and appearance, but without legal knowledge or training, was elected justice of the peace in this city. In fact, his ignorance of the law was so great, his general understanding so dense, his stupidity so intense, that had he lived in this age he certainly would have been elevated to the Supreme Bench, or have been made the head of a law school.

He had his courtrooms in the second story of a brick building immediately north of the Cosmopolitan Hotel. The courtroom was reached by a wooden staircase outside of the building. The building was owned by the vigilante, Signoret. Carrillo was not very prompt about paying his rent, and when ninety days' rent became due, Signoret took off the lower step of the staircase; ninety days later he took off another step, and again another, so that at the time I am speaking it was quite an acrobatic feat to gain access to "His Honor's Court." But the judge was ingenious. He got several dry goods boxes and improvised steps in lieu of those that were taken away. When he was departing from his daily labor, he passed the boxes up to his constable, who stored them in the courtroom, and the constable then shinned down the old staircase the best way he could. The next morning, with the justice's assistance the constable mounted the stairs, passed out the boxes, and the judge then ascended.

His office was run on the fee system, and he was a great stickler for his fees. He would swear a witness, and then say, "Hold on a minute; let me charge up that oath." When duly entered in his register of actions he would allow the attorneys to proceed. He found out that interpreters were entitled to pay for their services, so he did the interpreting himself, allowing himself pay for it.

H. T. Hazard was a member of the firm of Howard &

Hazard. He enjoyed a lucrative practice, especially among the native Californians. I think the following story concerning him is worth relating: An utterly disreputable fellow named William Cape, who ran a low saloon and a lower lodging house, but who was extremely useful at election time to certain of our politicians because of his peculiar ability to deliver his ward to his political friends by a much larger majority than the ward contained residents—Cape hadn't any property, ran his business from hand to mouth, but notwithstanding this fact, he qualified on a bond of \$5,000 in a probate proceeding. The qualification was had before Judge Albert M. Stephens, who was county judge, with probate jurisdiction. Knowing the utter financial worthlessness of the man, the oath surprised Stephens, and he looked the matter up and charged the man, before the grand jury, with perjury. He was indicted, convicted and sentenced to the penitentiary. Hazard took an appeal for him. He was confined in the county jail. By trade he was a plasterer. He was allowed the privileges of the place, and he actually plastered all the old jail building, inside and out, pending his appeal. He even walked around town occasionally, but he kept faith with his political friends and the jailer, and was always inside at night time.

His case was argued by Hazard before the Supreme Court. Hazard was making very poor headway in getting away from the facts. "But," he exclaimed, "your Honors, don't you understand this man signed this bond for the accommodation of his friend?" "Mr. Hazard," said Chief Justice Wallace, "do you claim that a man may commit perjury for the accommodation of a friend?"

This was a poser for Hazard which he could hardly get around. The case was submitted, and Cape continued to be handy man around the jail. When, however, an opinion of the Supreme Court was filed in San Francisco, affirming the judgment, the news was telegraphed here, Cape was informed of it, his cell was left unlocked, and a convenient ladder at hand. He scaled the jail wall, went to San Pedro, took a coast vessel for British Columbia, and was never heard of



again in Los Angeles, and no effort was ever made to retake him.

I do not make the charge that Mr. Hazard had anything to do with Cape's escape. Hazard is an honest man, and would not have done anything involving the slightest moral turpitude.

In these old days there lived in San Diego a lawyer named Wallace Leach. He possessed as much ability as all the men I have previously mentioned combined. Dissipated, but industrious, with low instincts, yet not lacking in some admirable traits of character, he was a queer compound of gall and vanity. He was about four feet and a half tall, gracefully built, of fair complexion, with light hair and beard and blue eyes, neat in his dress, and an extremely good-looking and intellectual-looking little fellow. I heard him make an argument in the Supreme Court at Los Angeles in a murder case from San Diego, which was a most masterly effort. He was listened to with rapt attention by both court and lawyers present, and after an impassioned plea, in closing, he briefly reviewed the circumstances of the killing, the defense being a plea of self-defense, and I can yet hear as plainly as if it were yesterday, his last words, which were: "And now, your Honors, if that be murder, make the most of it."

The attorney-general closed the argument, and Leach left the courtroom. He was stopping at the St. Charles Hotel. He went there, and in half an hour was as drunk as a lord, quarreled with the hotel clerk, borrowed a wheelbarrow from the porter, piled his luggage and briefs into the barrow, and started down the street to the United States Hotel, trundling the wheelbarrow and leading a yellow dog by a string.

The Supreme Court rooms were over the old Farmers and Merchants Bank Building, and when he came along, Chief Justice Wallace and myself were standing at the foot of the stairs, talking, waiting for my carriage, in which we were going to take a drive. Leach wobbled along, looked up at Judge Wallace, sat down his wheelbarrow, and called to him: "Hello, Judge; get on and ride," waving his hand toward the wheelbarrow. The judge declined the invitation, told him he was so heavy he would break down the barrow. Leach

took hold of the handles, started off again, and said, "Oh, hell! you're not a dead game sport," and went his way.

With all his faults, he was an extremely kind-hearted man. He and A. B. Hotchkiss of San Diego had a fight in the court room and were not upon speaking terms. Shortly after this, a meeting of the Bar Association of San Diego was held. It took steps to disbar Hotchkiss for accepting a bribe, while District Attorney, from John G. Downey and Louis Phillips, in consideration of which he dismissed a tax suit against them. The Bar appointed Judge Chase, Judge Luce, and I think one other attorney, to prosecute Hotchkiss. Leach immediately bounced up, said he believed in fair play, and that, having appointed a committee to prosecute this unfortunate man, it was the duty of the bar association to appoint another committee to defend him. The lawyers present disagreed with him and declined to appoint such a committee. "All right," said Leach, "then I will defend him," and he turned in and worked on that case as he never worked for any man before. Judgment was rendered against Hotchkiss in the court below, and an appeal was taken to the Supreme Court. Judge J. S. Chapman assisted Leach in this appeal, and on a point sprung by him—Chapman—namely, that the information against Hotchkiss had been improperly verified, the Supreme Court reversed the judgment.

The spasm of virtue which had seized the San Diego Bar had by this time oozed out, and no further prosecution of the case was ever had. Before this case was tried, Mr. W. J. Hunsaker, then a law student in either Chase's or Luce's office, came to Los Angeles to take the deposition of Louis Phillips, who was supposed to have paid Hotchkiss the money. The deposition was to have been taken by Wilse Potts, county clerk. Hunsaker had subpoenaed Phillips, paying him his per diem and mileage, and had him in attendance before a deputy clerk named Charlie Judd, whom Potts had delegated to act for him, he being engaged before the Board of Supervisors. Judd was in a constant state of inebriety, and that day his breath smelled like a still house with the roof blown off. I appeared, at Leach's request, for Hotchkiss. Phillips was sworn, and the first question Hunsaker put to him I ob-

jected to on the ground that Hunsaker was not an attorney of the Superior Court of the State of California, of which Potts was clerk. Deputy Clerk Judd at once assumed judicial functions, leered at Hunsaker, and in a thick, husky, alcoholic-laden voice said, "Mr. Hunsaker, have you been admitted to this bar?" Hunsaker said he had not. "Then you cannot practice in this court. Objection sustained," and the hearing came to an end. Being only too anxious to get away, Phillips fled, and Hunsaker returned to San Diego, and the deposition never was taken. I never see or think of Hunsaker but what I mentally apologize for the outrage perpetrated on him.

I was in the District Courtroom in San Bernadino County one hot summer day. Some San Diego Jewish merchants whom Leach represented had attached some cattle in that county. Certain parties replevined the cattle, claiming to own them. This claim and delivery action was being tried before a jury, with the late W. R. McNealy of San Diego County sitting as judge in San Bernadino County. A local attorney represented the plaintiff, and Leach the defendant.

All during the trial this attorney tried to bulldoze Leach, but, figuratively speaking, Leach simply walked all over him. In his address to the jury, plaintiff's attorney used up all of his time lambasting the Jews—these Jews in particular, and all Jews in general. Leach replied to him in a close, clear, forcible argument, making every point in the case in a most intelligent and winning manner. He then proceeded to reply to counsel's attack upon the Jewish race, and he paid those people the most beautiful tribute that it was ever my pleasure to listen to. He traced the history of the Jewish race from its earliest beginning; showed how they had been persecuted; how they were denied the privilege of owning real estate, and were compelled to be merchants, possessing only property which could be moved upon a moment's notice; dwelt upon their many admirable traits of character, and the high standing that they had attained throughout the world. He could not, however, resist the chance for a joke, and suddenly descending from the sublime to the ridiculous, he said: "And coming down to our own times and our own people, what other race of men on the face of God's green

earth, except the Jews, could sell a forty-dollar suit of clothes for eight dollars, and get rich at it?"

The jurymen were mostly farmers sitting there with their coats off, and they literally howled with delight. Judge McNealy in vain pounded his desk and rapped for order, and it was some time before Leach could proceed. A verdict was promptly rendered, when the case was submitted, in favor of Leach's clients.

Leach, in a state of intoxication, was thrown from a horse which he was attempting to ride, and after lingering for some time, died of his injuries so received.

I cannot leave this subject without paying a slight tribute to the memory of two of my closest friends, each an intellectual giant—John S. Chapman and Stephen M. White, lately of the Los Angeles Bar. I was thrown into intimate contact with both of these men for many years. While in some respects alike, in others they were utterly dissimilar. They were alike in the simplicity of their lives and characters. They never realized their greatness. They were alike in that each of them had completely mastered the great fundamental principles of all law and of all justice. They differed in temperament. White was cheerful in demeanor, hopeful, and always confident; Chapman, gloomy, despondent and fearful of results. Chapman shrunk from, White sought the applause of clamoring multitudes. They differed in the manner in which they applied their vast knowledge of the law to the practical affairs of men. Chapman acquired his legal knowledge by slow processes and the hardest kind of work. White acquired his intuitively, but he rounded out his knowledge of it by close and earnest application. Chapman was the profoundest, White the most versatile lawyer I ever met.

They were associated together in much important litigation. Chapman profited by the spur of White's more active mentality, White by Chapman's closer reasoning powers and more cautious mental analysis of legal conditions governing the subject under investigation.

Chapman was the clearest and deepest thinker, White the most aggressive advocate. White was the master of invective, Chapman of persuasion. To win a jury, Chapman would not

stoop to any of the tricks of the demagogue. White would, but always moved by honest impulses. Chapman enveloped a jury, just as the rising tide on a peaceful summer sea envelops the rocks on the shore line—slowly, surely, without noise, without tumult. White carried all before him, with irresistible assault, just as the mountain stream, swollen to undue proportions by torrential rains, sweeps everything before it to destruction. Chapman relied upon a calm and dignified appeal to reason; White took a short cut by an appeal to passion.

They achieved the same results by different processes. They traversed the profoundest depths of the realms of thought by routes unknown to other men. We are all better off for having known these men. They have preceded us to that mysterious shore we know naught of, Chapman dying from long continued mental drudgery, and the mental and physical slavery he had unconsciously yielded to and could not shake off. White died a victim of unquenchable ambition, under the stimulus of which he destroyed his health and wrecked his life. They have left us the living memory of two kindly, gentle spirits who sprung from the people, raised themselves through industry and ability to positions at the bar that any man, in any land or in any age, could well have envied them.

Contemplating the achievements of these two men, we must conclude that the human race is still progressing and advancing in intellectual development. I rejoice that these men were my friends, that I had their respect and confidence, and that they loved and trusted me.

Thus concludes Mr. Graves. To begin where he left off would be to write another chapter of the Bench and Bar of Los Angeles. But since the characters in such a story would be those of men now living, it is a matter which can be more safely left to the future historian when these days in which we now live are gathered to the dust.

Before the time of Mr. Graves, however, there were in Los Angeles interesting and distinguished men who were important in the service of the law and the courts. By reference to an old record we are able to recall these men to

memory, as well as to glean some side lights on their characters.

The first election held in Los Angeles after the admission of California into the Union was on April 1, 1850. Three hundred and seventy-seven votes were cast in the county. The officers chosen were: County judge, Agustin Olvera; county clerk, Benj. Davis Wilson; county attorney, Benj. Hayes; county surveyor, J. R. Conway; county treasurer, Manuel Garfias; county assessor, Antonio F. Coronel; county recorder, Ignacio del Valle; county sheriff, George T. Burrill; county coroner, Charles B. Cullen.

Don Agustin Olvera, when elected county judge, was "Juez de la Instancia"—judge of first instance—of the Los Angeles District, under appointment of Governor Riley. He emigrated to California from the City of Mexico, and arrived September 16, 1834. There came at the same time Don Ignacio Coronel, his wife, Dona Francesca Romero, two sons, Don Antonio Franco Coronel and Don Manuel Coronel, and four daughters. They formed a part of the celebrated expedition of Don Jose Maria Hijar and Don Jose Maria Padres, which had been organized with infinite care for colonization in California, especial view being had to select men of character, intelligence and some useful occupation.

The expedition consisted of lawyers, physicians, printers, carpenters, tanners, saddlers, shoemakers, hatters, tailors, laborers, and a confectioner.

Don Joaquin de los Rios y Rios was a surgeon of repute in Los Angeles and San Diego for several years after 1840, until his death. Don Francisco Torres, another physician, returned to Mexico. Don Ignacio Coronel was a schoolmaster, and taught in Los Angeles for a long time, afterward confining himself to the duties of secretary of the Ayuntamiento: subsequently he was a justice of the peace.

Education was especially provided for by the Mexican Government in this colony. The missions had just been secularized; the formation of pueblos was therefore contemplated. Accordingly, experienced teachers were sent for the public schools to be established at each mission; which measure took effect at the Missions of Santa Clara, San Jose, San Gabriel

and San Luis Rey; also at Monterey, and in the year 1838 at Los Angeles.

At the organization, in the year 1841, of the Pueblo of San Juan de Arguello—so named in honor of Don Santiago Arguello—which is generally called San Juan Capistrano—Don Agustin Olvera was appointed “Juez de Paz” of that jurisdiction, from Santa Ana to Las Flores. He resided there in 1842, 1843, 1844. It is spoken of as a well ordered place, with an industrious, contented population. Don Agustin was admitted as attorney in this, the then First Judicial District, in 1853, and April 11, 1855, in the United States District Court. In 1856 he was the receiver of the Los Angeles United States Land Office. At the taking of the city by the Americans, in 1846, he was a member of the Departmental Assembly; and as such member he acted as one of the commissioners in the Cahuenga negotiation, when the Californians surrendered to Fremont. Don Jose Antonio Carrillo, the other Mexican commissioner, held the rank of major general. Don Ignacio Coronel, born in the City of Mexico, died at Los Angeles City, at an advanced age, December 19, 1862.

Jonathan R. Scott was the first justice of the peace, merely taking that office in order to give his ability to the county organization. He soon tired of it and was succeeded by J. S. Mallard. Judge Scott had been a prominent lawyer in Missouri and was in the front rank of the bar at Los Angeles. He was ready for any useful enterprise. In company with Mr. Abel Stearns he built the first brick flouring mill in 1855, and about two years before his death he planted an extensive vineyard. He died September 21, 1864. His eldest daughter married A. B. Chapman. His only son has recently been admitted to the bar.

The early lawyers arriving in the order mentioned were: Don Manuel C. Rojo, 1849; Russell Sackett, 1849; Louis Granger, 1850; Benj. Hayes, 1850; Jonathan R. Scott, 1850. The last four, as well as Mr. Hartman, were overland emigrants.

Law books were scarce. A brief passage in “Kent’s Commentaries” that was found somewhere in town, decided an interesting case between a rich Peruvian passenger and liberal French sea-captain, some time in March, before First Alcalde

Stearns. The captain lost, but comforted his attorney, Scott, with a thousand-dollar fee, as it happened, all in five-dollar gold pieces.

In 1850 also came Wm. G. Dryden and J. Lancaster Brent, the latter with a good library; 1851, I. K. S. Ogier; 1852, Myron Norton, J. H. Lander, Charles E. Carr, Ezra Drown, Columbus Sims, Kimball H. Dimmick, Henry Hancock, Isaac Hartman; 1853, Samuel R. Campbell; 1854, Cameron E. Thom and James A. Watson (Col. Jack Watson); E. J. C. Kewen, W. W. Hamlin, 1856; Alfred B. Chapman, 1858; Volney E. Howard, 1861; Andrew J. Glassell and Col. J. G. Howard arrived on the same steamer, November 27, 1865, from San Francisco. M. J. Newmark was admitted to the bar in September, and A. J. King in October, 1859; Don Ignacio Sepulveda, September 6, 1862. Henry T. Hazard, son of Ariel M. Hazard, of Evanston, near Chicago, since when about eight years of age, always resided in this city.

Other attorneys prior to 1860 were Hon. S. F. Reynolds (afterward District Judge of San Francisco), J. R. Gitchell (in April, 1858, appointed district attorney). A. Thomas, William E. Pickett, Sasaneuva & Jones advertised December 13, 1851. This was Wm. Claude Jones, known so well in Missouri. Scott & Hayes were partners from March, 1850, until April 13, 1852; afterward Scott & Granger; then Scott & Lander.

Between 1852 and 1860 the land questions before the commissioners and United States District Court brought almost as residents such distinguished lawyers as H. W. Halleck, A. C. Peachy, F. Billings, C. B. Strode, Wm. Carey Joney, P. W. Tompkins, Gregory Yale, J. H. Saunders, H. P. Hepburn and others.

J. L. Brent stood high as a lawyer and statesman. He afterwards returned to Louisiana, near New Orleans. Mr. Granger was a fluent speaker; in 1852-3 partner of Judge Scott and one time a candidate for judge of the First Judicial District. General Drown lost his wife in the stranding of the steamer Independence. He died August 17, 1863, leaving a son—a man much thought of, and very successful in his profession. Hon. K. H. Dimmick, a captain in Colonel Steven-



son's regiment, had been a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1849. J. H. Landers was born in 1829 in New York City. He was a graduate of Harvard. He was an excellent office lawyer. For a long time he was court commissioner, with especial approbation of the bar. In 1852 he married Miss Margarita Johnson, a daughter of Don Santiago Johnson, so well remembered among the early business men of this coast before 1846. He died June 10, 1873.

S. R. Campbell was born near Nashville, Tennessee, and died in San Bernardino County early in January, 1863, near fifty years of age. His memory was most extraordinary. A poem or oration once read to him he could repeat word for word years afterward. He was in the habit, when familiarly illustrating this faculty, to recite in full, page after page of Blackstone's Commentaries. His son, Thornton P. Campbell, was a merchant and member of the City Council.

Col. J. A. Watson, in 1855, married Miss Dolores Dominguez. He died at this city September 16, 1869, aged forty-five years. The latter part of his life was devoted to his vineyard and orchard. He had been a skillful politician and was esteemed as a lawyer.

Hon. Myron Norton was born in 1822, at Bennington, Vermont. He studied law in New York, was admitted to the bar in 1844, continued in practice at Troy until 1848, when he was appointed first lieutenant of California volunteers, and in the summer of that year arrived at Monterey. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention from San Francisco; afterward judge of the Superior Court of San Francisco. In 1855 he was the democratic candidate for judge of the Supreme Court of this state. He dwelled here in the agreeable family of Don Agustin Olvera.

Don Manuel Clemente Rojo, our first abogado (lawyer), was a native of Peru, of finished education and excellent qualities of the head and heart. He was once sub-political chief of the frontier of Lower California, and practiced his profession with marked distinction. An old emigrant named Williams, throwing out of his wagon almost everything else, saved his son's law library. They reached John Roland's in December, 1849, the ambitious young attorney with his eye to

the polar star. Roland, in his usual liberal style, outfitted, complete, son and father.

Sheriff Burrill in 1850 was punctilious, perhaps formal, but affable; and pleasantly conspicuous by the infantry dress sword which he wore in public through his term, as he said, according to official custom of Mexico, where he had lived a good while. His brother was author of a "Law Glossary." He was the hero of a "scene in court" one bright afternoon in the summer of 1850. Judge Witherby was hearing an application for bail, on a charge of murder against three native Californians. The large room was in the old Bella Union Hotel. Upon a side bench together sat the prisoners. The judge, Thomas W. Sutherland (acting district attorney), Benj. Hayes (county attorney), clerk and counsel, J. Lancaster Brent; present, none others—save twelve, fierce, determined fellows, "armed to the teeth," huddled up in the far corner of the room. Preliminaries disposed of, calm content smoothed the face of the sheriff, that sword by his side, when appeared eighteen of the First Dragoons at the critical moment. They dismounted, tied their horses to the Celis balcony and fell into line in front of the building. Bond approved, a sergeant led the accused outside, placed them on horseback between his files, and so conducted them home. A pin might have been heard to drop, and, in the stillness, the court adjourned. Maj. E. H. Fitzgerald had encamped the night before on the edge of the town. This was the posse put at the service of the sheriff, and that left him pleased infinitely at its effect, almost like a charm, on this famous "Irving party" in the corner.

California was admitted into the Union September 9, 1850. Some of the principal offices, since 1850, have been filled as follows: District judge—Oliver S. Witherby, three years; Benjamin Hayes, eleven years; Pablo de la Guerra, Murray Morrison, R. M. Widney; Ignacio Sepulveda. County judge—H. K. Dimmick, W. G. Dryden, A. J. King, Ignacio Sepulveda; Agustin Olvera, four years; Myron Norton, H. K. S. O'Melveny, 1876. County clerk—B. D. Wilson, Wilson W. Jones, C. R. Johnson, John W. Shore, Thomas D. Mott, Stephen H. Mott, A. W. Potts, 1876. Sheriff—G. T. Burrill,

David W. Alexander, James R. Barton, W. C. Getman, James R. Barton (murdered Friday, January 23, 1857, while in discharge of official duty), Thomas A. Sanchez, James F. Burns, W. R. Roland; D. W. Alexander, 1876. Wm. Getman died January 7, 1858. County treasurer—Mannuel Garfias, now American consul, Tepic, Mexico; Timothy Foster, Henry N. Alexander, Morice Kremer, T. E. Rowan; Francis P. F. Temple, 1876. District attorney—William C. Ferrel, now a mountain farmer of Lower California; Isaac S. K. Ogier, September 29, 1851; Kimball H. Dimmick, appointed July 10th, elected November 29, 1852; Ezra Drown, A. B. Chapman, Volney E. Howard, A. B. Chapman, C. E. Thom; Rodney Hudson, 1876. County assessor—Antonio F. Coronel, 1867-1868; 1869-1875, Dionision Beteller; Andrew Ryan, 1876. County recorder—Ignacio del Valle, 1850-1851; J. W. Gillett, March 1, Monday, 1874; Charles E. Miles, March 1, Monday, 1876. Court commissioner (District)—George Clinton Gibbs.

In 1876 the county officers were: Under sheriff—H. Milner Mitchell. Deputy sheriffs—Wm. L. Banning, Emil Harris. Deputy county clerks—E. H. Owen, D. W. Maclellan. Deputy county treasurer—E. M. Spence. Deputy recorder—George E. Gard. Auditor—Andronico E. Sepulveda. Tax collector—Morice Kremer. County surveyor—T. J. Ellis. Deputy assessors—M. Ryan, W. H. A. Kidd. Coroner—Dr. Joseph Kurtz. School superintendent—Thomas A. Saxon. Supervisors—Geo. Hines, Gabriel Allen, Edward Evy, John D. Young, J. C. Hannon. Justices of the peace (city)—John Trafford, Pedro C. Carrillo, William H. Gray.

Don Ignacio Sepulveda, sometime district judge, was a native of this city. He was educated in the East. Oliver Spencer Witherby was born at Cincinnati, Ohio, February 19, 1815; Benj. Hayes of Baltimore, Maryland, February 14, 1815; Robert M. Widney, Miami County, Ohio, December 23, 1838.

Don Pablo de la Guerra was born in the Presidio of Santa Barbara, November 29, 1819. He was State Senator four terms from the district of Santa Barbara and San Luis Obispo, and had been a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1849. His term of district judge commenced January 1, 1864. He died February 5, 1874, having a short time

before resigned the judgeship of the First District in consequence of ill health.

Hon. Murray Morrison was born at Kaskaskia, Illinois, in 1820; was admitted to the bar in 1842. In 1862 he married Miss Jennie White, daughter of Dr. Thomas J. White. In 1868, on the creation of the Seventeenth Judicial District, he was appointed judge by Governor Haight, and elected in 1869. He died at this city in 1871. Within three days a loving wife followed him to the tomb.

Hon. W. G. Dryden, in 1851, married Miss Dolores Nieto. His second wife was Miss Anita Dominguez; married September 30, 1868. He died at this city, aged 70 years, September 10, 1869.

The board to settle private land claims, organized in this city October, 1852. The commissioners were Hiland Hall, later governor of Vermont; Harry I. Thornton, Thompson Campbell. It expired in 1855. Robert Greenbow first, then Gen. V. E. Howard, then J. H. McKune, have been law agents of the United States; Cameron E. Thom, assistant law agent in 1854. In some of the subsequent land cases before the United States District Court, Isaac Hartman was special attorney, in 1857, under, Attorney-General Black, and in 1861, under Attorney-General Bates. The United States District Court for the Southern District of California was instituted in 1855 with Hon. John M. Jones, judge; Pablo de la Guerra, marshal; Alfred Wheeler, district attorney; Samuel Flower, clerk. Judge Jones died November 14th, of that year. In September, 1854, Edward Hunter was appointed marshal in place of Pablo de la Guerra, resigned. Judge Ogier succeeded Judge Jones. Hon. Fletcher M. Haight succeeded Wheeler; then Pacificus Ord; then J. R. Gitchell.

Hon. Isaac Stockton Keith Ogier, for several years judge, was born at Charleston, South Carolina, May 24, 1817. He came to California in the year 1849. He died at Holcombe Valley, May 21, 1861.

## CHAPTER XVII

### THE CITY'S BREATHING SPOTS.

No city in the world has given or continues to give more earnest consideration, backed up by action, to the question of parks and playgrounds and recreation places for the people, than Los Angeles.

This has been true of Los Angeles from its very inception as a human habitation. It was as we have here related, a Spanish settlement. And the Spaniard, wherever he built a town, at home or abroad, never failed, as almost his first act, to create a plaza or park in that town which was designed to be the common property of the people for their pleasure and recreation.

Los Angeles was no exception. When in the fateful year of 1781 Don Felipe de Neve, the gobernador, marched out from the Mission of San Gabriel to found the pueblo of Our Lady the Queen of the Angels, he had in the pocket of his military coat a drawn plan of the new settlement; and in that plan provision was made, first of all, for the plaza, a part of which remains to this day, in Los Angeles, as a public park.

And to this day you will see in the Plaza of Los Angeles a great deal of what remains here of the once dominant Spanish race. And intermingling with those of the blood of Spain you will see the swart faces of the people of other Latin lands, as well as those who have drifted hither from the Orient and Cathay.

In the old days, when the Plaza was the only public park of which Los Angeles boasted, it was the scene of all public gatherings, and especially was it the scene of the great religious processions and celebrations for which the city was famous. It stands at the door of the Church of Our Lady of the Angels, where the people went to pray and to be shrived

to hear the mass on Sundays and holy days. And it was out of the door of that old church into the open and common ground of the Plaza that the religious processions of the old times came.

That we may have an idea of what these great religious celebrations were like, let us quote a description of the celebration of the feast of Corpus Christi in the year 1858 as published in the columns of the famous old Los Angeles Star:

“Immediately after Pontifical Vespers, which were held in the church at 4 p. m., a solemn procession was formed which made the circuit of the Plaza, stopping at the various altars which with great cost, elegance and taste had been erected in front of the houses where the sacred offices of the church were solemnly performed. The order of the procession was as follows: Music, Young Ladies of the Sisters’ School bearing the banner of the school, followed by the children of the school to the number of 120 in two ranks. They were elegantly dressed in white, wearing white veils and carrying baskets filled with flowers which during the procession were scattered before the Bishop and the clergy. Next came the boys of the church choir. Then twelve men bearing candles; these represented the twelve apostles. Then came Father Raho and Bishop Amat, bearing the Blessed Sacrament, supported on each side by the clergy, marching under a gorgeous canopy carried by four prominent citizens. These were followed by a long procession of men, women and children marching two and two. The procession was escorted by the California Lancers, Captain Juan Sepulveda commanding, and the Southern Rifles, Captain W. W. Twist in command.

“Very elaborate and costly preparations had been made by the citizens resident on the Plaza for the reception of the Holy Eucharist; among the most prominent of which we notice the residence of Don Jesus Domingua, Don Ignacio del Valle, Don Vincente Lugo and Don Augustin Olvera. These altars were elegantly designed and tastefully decorated, being ornamented with laces, silks, satins and diamonds. In front of each the procession stopped whilst sacred offices appropriate to the occasion were performed.

“Having made the circuit of the Plaza, the procession re-



ALONG THE LOS ANGELES OCEAN FRONT

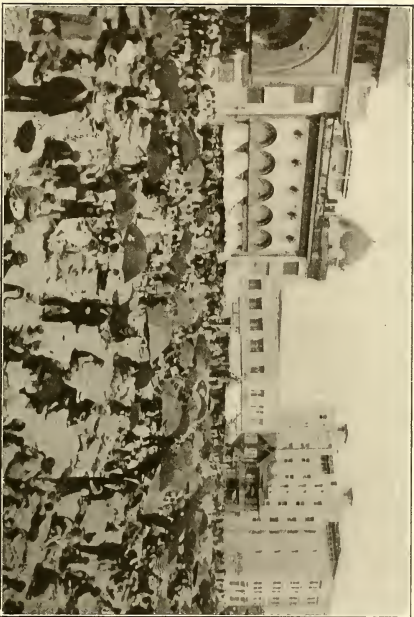
turned to the church, where the services were concluded, after which the immense assemblage dispersed, and the military escorted the young ladies of the Sisters' School on their return home."

Those old days are no more. Los Angeles is a changed town since those days. And yet, it seems that something of these old traditions will always remain with us. The parks of Los Angeles now multiplied many fold from their old mother, the Plaza, are often the scenes of civic celebrations, and it is not a severe strain on the imagination to picture them as again being the scenes of religious celebrations.

At the time that this book is written, the parks of Los Angeles, under charge and in the care of the City Park Commission, with our distinguished and highly useful fellow citizen, Madame Leafie Sloan-Orcutt as the commission's ruling spirit, are as follows:

**ELYSIAN PARK.**—This park is what is commonly known as a rural or country park and the greater portion of same is a part of the original lands of the Pueblo of Los Angeles. Several small parcels have been acquired from time to time through purchases. It was dedicated for park purposes in March, 1886. The total area is 748 acres. Location: North Broadway, Park Drive, Valley View and Casanova streets. The improvements consist of about 7½ miles of scenic drive, 5 miles of foot trails, 8 miles of water lines and very extensive tree planting, consisting of the reforestation of about being that portion around the entrance near the North Broadway 500 acres. The section of the park known as "Fremont Gate," way bridge, is improved with lawn, flower beds, shrubbery, trees and walks. The nursery and service yard of the department are also located in this park. A small portion of the park was set aside and dedicated as a memorial grove for the permanent planting of trees in honor of persons who sacrificed their lives in the great World war. Small bronze tablets are placed at the base of each tree. These tablets show the name of the person in whose honor the tree was planted, military record and date of death. When the trees attain a sufficient growth, these tablets will be placed on the trunks as permanent records.





ON THE BEACH AT OCEAN PARK

**EXPOSITION PARK.**—This park is one of the largest of the neighborhood parks. It was acquired by lease in 1911 for a term of fifty years from the Sixth District Agricultural Association and the State of California, and by purchase under condemnation proceedings in 1912. The area is 114 acres. It is located on Exposition Boulevard, Figueroa Street and Menlo Avenue. The southern boundary line extends 142 feet north from Santa Barbara Avenue. Improvements consist of two bowling greens, roque courts, rose garden, sunken garden, herbaceous border, California wild flower garden, band stand, picnic grounds, ornamental lighting system, toilet buildings, walks, drives, trees, etc., eight tennis courts, three baseball diamonds, football field and two swimming pools. The Government Armory, State Exposition Building and Museum of History, Science and Art are located in this park.

**GRIFFITH PARK.**—This is the second largest municipal park in the United States. Acquired by deed of gift from Griffith Jenkins Griffith, March 5, 1898. Area, 3,051.75 acres. Location between the Los Angeles River and a line one-half mile north of and parallel to Los Feliz Avenue. There has been added to this park a parcel of land twelve acres in extent which was acquired by purchase through condemnation proceedings in 1915 for an entrance to the park from Western Avenue. Also a parcel consisting of 24.75 acres, which was donated by Colonel Griffith in 1918, making a total area of 3,051.75 acres. The improvements consist of about 15 miles of scenic drive, 12 miles of water line, 5 miles of bridle trails, a full 18-hole golf course, with a field house containing locker, showers, dining rooms, kitchen and rest rooms. The Zoo of the department is also located in this park. Recently a playground for small children was installed, together with tennis courts for adults.

**HOLLENBECK PARK.**—Acquired by donation from Mr. W. H. Workman and Mrs. Elizabeth Hollenbeck January 16, 1892. Area, 21.74 acres. Location, East Fourth Street, St. Louis Street, Boyle Avenue and Cummings Street. Improvements consist of boathouse, tennis courts, walks, flowers, trees and shrubs. An ornamental lighting system was completed this year.

**LAFAYETTE PARK.**—Acquired by donation from Mrs. Clara R. Shatto, December 4, 1899. Area, eleven acres. Location, Sixth Street, Commonwealth Avenue and Benton Way. Tennis court, walks, trees, shrubs, lily pool. This park also contains playground apparatus for small children.

**LINCOLN PARK.**—Acquired by purchase March 11, 1881, from the Southern Pacific Company. Purchase price, \$448.64. Dedicated for park purposes August 18, 1883. Location, Mission Road and Alhambra Avenue. Improvements are conservatory containing large collection of rare plants, boat-house, double tennis courts, corral, shrubbery and picnic grounds. The park also contains an ornamental lighting system, bungalow rest room and an artistic lattice sun shade in front of band stand.

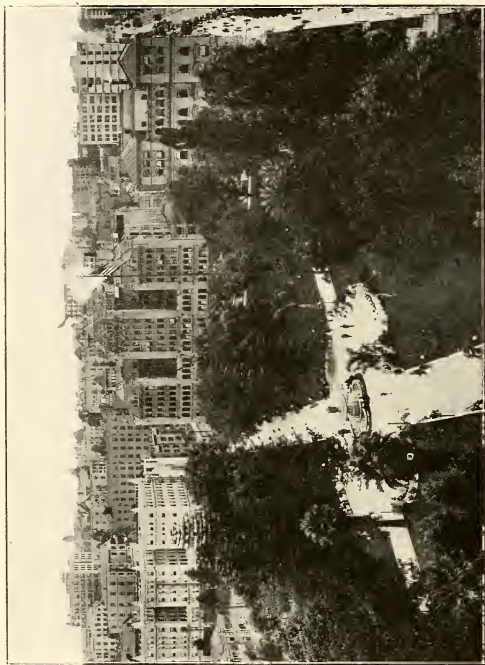
**PERSHING SQUARE** is a part of the original lands of the Pueblo of Los Angeles. Dedicated for park purposes in 1866. Area is four acres. Location, Hill, Sixth, Olive and Fifth streets, in business district of city. Extensively improved with lawn, trees and shrubs. Seating capacity on walks for several thousand people.

**SOUTH PARK.**—Acquired by purchase January 30, 1899. Purchase price was \$10,000. Area, nineteen acres. Location, South Park Avenue, Fifty-first and San Pedro streets. Contains tennis courts, lawns, flowers, trees and also playground apparatus for children.

**SYCAMORE GROVE.**—Acquired by purchase in 1905 for \$22,500 and part by donation from Mr. E. R. Brainerd in 1907. Records do not show amount in acres acquired by purchase and donation. Total area is 15.44 acres. Location, Forty-eighth and Pasadena Avenue.

**WESTLAKE PARK.**—Acquired by the City of Los Angeles through an exchange in 1866. Area, 32.15 acres. Location, Seventh, Park View, Sixth and Alvarado streets. Contains boathouse, tool house, picnic grounds, lawn, trees. The ornamental lighting system and the boathouse building constructed in this park cost approximately \$22,000. Park contains also playgrounds for children.

**CAMP GROUNDS.**—Los Angeles provides a camping ground for automobile tourists. Accommodations consist of gas



PERSHING SQUARE IN MINIATURE

stoves for cooking, hot and cold shower baths, toilets, lavatories and laundry trays. Grounds are lighted by electricity and individual stalls provided for each automobile and car.

Emergency kits for use in case of accidents are provided in all parks, and employes are instructed in the proper use of the same. Through the efforts of Mrs. Sloan-Orcutt, playground apparatus such as swings, teeters, sand boxes, etc., are now provided in practically all the parks for the amusement and entertainment of children. Band concerts are held in Lincoln Park on every Sunday and holiday, and in many of the other parks concerts are given on special occasions.

## CHAPTER XVIII

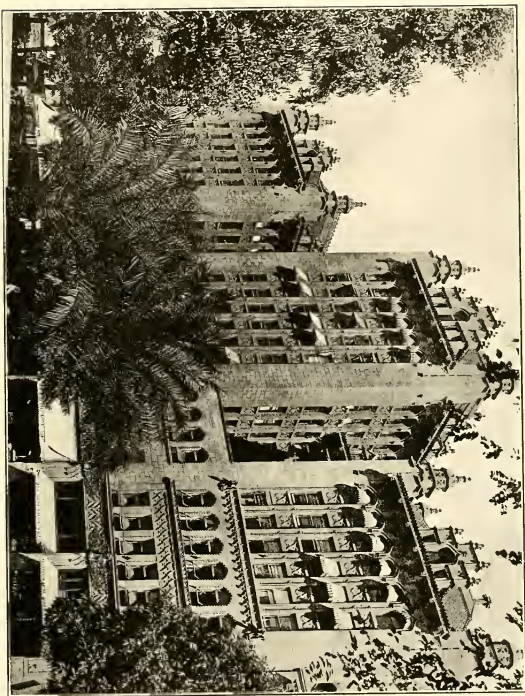
### MUSIC AND ART

There is a lilting cadence of music in the very sound of the word "California." For ages California has been musical—since the murmuring waves of the Pacific first sang their love songs to its shining shores, or, in their fury, when the great sea-breakers broke in mighty diapason of Wagnerian thunder against the rocks. In succession, the love songs and the war chants of the aborigines echoed along the shore or died away in the distance toward the mountains, followed by the Gregorian chants of the padres, the boisterous war songs of the Spanish musketeers, the seductive strains of the caballero serenading his lady love, or the quickening music of the fandango, and later, when the Gringo came, the roistering song of the miner, the hymn and the ballad of the home-seeker, the music of the bank, the choir, the orchestra, and even the aria of the grand opera found their way into all parts of California.

The meadow lark and the mocking bird added their notes to the ripples of the stream, or were drowned in the rush of the torrents. The stately firs on the mountain side in turn sang the requiem of the Indian, the priest, the cavalier, the soldier, the Spaniard, the Mexican, as well as the Americano. California has been musical from its creation.

Unlike architecture, sculpture and painting, music is necessarily ephemeral in its material form, and we therefore possess no specimen to acquaint us with its character during remote periods, yet something tangible bears witness to the fact that it has been cultivated in some form from time immemorial, even among the most uncivilized races of men.

We trace its existence through the beautiful philosophies and mythologies of the Greeks; we have its mysterious powers symbolized in the Homeric legends of the sirens whose sweet



TEMPLE AUDITORIUM, LOS ANGELES

songs lured the ill-fated mariners to destruction; we find its image engraved upon the ancient tombs and obelisks of Egypt, everywhere gilding the twilight of antiquity with its suggestive presence.

Other nations knew the Ambrosian songs under Constantine, and the Gregorian music of Gregory I. Even Charlemagne conducted the choir at Aix in person. King Robert of France was a favored writer and singer of sequences. The Crusaders sang martial music, and the folk songs and the music of the passion plays and the mysteries of the churches gradually gave way to the musical art of the troubadours and the minnesingers, who in like manner were succeeded by the meistersingers, and so music improved until the rise of the opera, the oratorio, and the symphony brought to the dawn of the nineteenth century a perfection which gradually found its way to the Pacific Coast.

Charles F. Lummis has made a collection of several hundred Indian chants, war songs, religious songs, and, in a way, folk songs of the various tribes inhabiting California in the early days. These songs have been handed down from generation to generation, and although they may have lost some of their beauty and originality, they show distinctiveness of tribal ability and rhythm. The same thing can apply to many of the compositions found in the libraries of the old Franciscan missions, and so we trace the music of California in this manner down to the Spanish occupation, the gradual corruption of their music with the varied intonations of the intermixture of the Indian with the Spanish race, which disturbed the beauty and the purity of the Spanish tongue and music.

The first grand opera in the State of California was in 1847 when the Alvarez Grand Opera Company came from Lima, Peru, on a lumber vessel, lured to the camp of San Francisco by the munificent subscription of \$10,000, the first guarantee for grand opera ever given in the history of California. Since that time grand opera has played an important part in the musical history of Los Angeles and Sacramento.

The first piano recital of note in San Francisco was by Henri Hertz in 1850, and among the early artists heard in



the northern metropolis, as well as in Los Angeles, were Camilla Urso, Carlotta Patti, Ole Bull, Scalshi, Trebelli the elder, Emma Nevada, Sarasate, Giannini, Wilhelm Cherubini, Marsick, Ondricek, Lechaume, Adelina Patti, Vincenzo Villani, Etelka Gerster, Tomagno and Amalia Materno.

San Francisco had symphony music long before Los Angeles had it—as early as 1865—and among the well known directors were Louis Schmidt, Oscar Weil, Rudolph Herold, Gustav Hinrichs and Adolph Mauer; while Los Angeles had among its conductors A. J. Stamm, Wenzel Kopta, Adolph Willhartitz, Henry Schoenefeld, Harley Hamilton, and, among the more modern California conductors, may be found Dr. J. Fred Wolle, Paul Steindorff, Fritz Scheel, Henry Holmes, Henry Hadley, Alfred Hertz, Adolph Tandler and Walter Henry Rothwell.

The early history of choral music in Los Angeles includes such splendid names as Mrs. Girah D. Cole and Mrs. M. A. Larrabee of the Treble Clef Club; Charles S. Walton, conductor of the Ellis Club; Mr. C. Modini-Wood, Mr. Robert E. Paulsen, of the Apollo Club, and later J. B. Poulin, Joseph Dupny and John Smallman. The history of the Treble Clef Club, the Apollo Club, Orpheus, Ellis and Lyric clubs of Los Angeles, the Grove Play of the Bohemian Club of San Francisco, the annual oratorios given under the direction of Paul Steindorff at the Greek Theatre in Berkeley, and the Loring Club of San Francisco, includes the majority of the choral endeavors of these sections.

The state and cities of California have probably witnessed more grand opera and light opera than any other states and cities of the Union excepting New York, Boston, Chicago, and possibly New Orleans.

In the early days visits were made here by the Emma Abbott and the Emma Juch Grand Opera Companies, the Nellie Melba and the Ellis Grand Opera Companies, the Hess English Grand Opera Company and the Bostonians.

Theodore Thomas came to California with the National Opera Company in 1887, presenting Rubinstein's "Nero" in his repertoire. Later came the Metropolitan Opera Company with the world's greatest stars; the Del Conte Grand Opera,

the Lombardi Italian Opera Company, Charles M. Pyke's English Opera Company, Jules Grau, light opera; the W. T. Carlton, the Duss Opera Company, the Sembrich Grand Opera Company, the San Carlo Grand Opera, the Chicago Grand Opera with its many stars, Mary Garden singing "Natoma" for the first time on the Pacific Coast, the words by Joseph Redding of San Francisco and the scene laid in Sauta Barbara; the Boston Grand Opera Company and the La Scala Grand Opera Company, all vying with one another to obtain the golden coin of California in exchange for the golden notes of the voices of many nations.

San Francisco has the unique distinction of twenty years of continuous light and grand opera at the most popular theater of that city, the Tivoli, which dates back to 1875 when Joe Kreling conceived the idea of opening a place of cheap amusement for the people where the music presented should be of the best order, where prices should be low, enabling families to seek diversion at little cost. It was there that Gilbert & Sullivan's "Pinafore" was first produced in the West, and where it enjoyed a run of eighty-four nights. "Bohemian Girl" had to its credit 157 nights; "Ship Ahoy," 108; "Olivet," 133; "Fra Diavolo," 72. The Gilbert & Sullivan operas, combined, ran 691 night, including 14 operas.

The Tivoli was the most democratic house of amusement in the world, and it discovered many of the singers who were heard in the West before making names for themselves in the East, including the famous Luisa Tetrazzini, Alice Nielsen, Sybil Sanderson, Agostini, Galozzi, Salassi, Collamarini, Sestegui, Beatrice Franco, Maud Fay and others.

On October 14, 1897, operatic history was made in the Los Angeles Theatre in Los Angeles. Puccini's celebrated "La Boheme" was sung for the first time in America by the Del Conte Grand Opera Company of Milan, with Giuseppe Agostini as Rudolfo, Luigi Francesconi as Schauard, Antonio Fumagali as Benoit, Cesar Cioni as Marcello the painter, Victorio Girardi as Colline the philosopher, Linda Montanari as Mimi, and Cleopatra Vicini as Musette. It was afterwards repeated at the Saturday matinee on October 16th and made

such an impression that it was sung again by the same company on October 19th.

In 1901, at the old Hazzard Pavilion in Los Angeles, the Metropolitan Grand Opera Company sang "La Boheme" for the first time with Mme. Nellie Melba as Mimi and Fritz Scheff as Musette.

On July 1, 2 and 3, 1915, and the following week, "Fairyl-land," the Horatio Parker prize opera, was presented for the first time on any stage, under the direction of the composer, with Marcella Craft as Rosamond. Alfred Hertz presided as conductor of orchestra, chorns and opera.

Los Angeles has made great strides musically in the last quarter of a century. It has enjoyed the Los Angeles Symphony for twenty-three years, and recently the Philharmonic Orchestra of Los Angeles has been created through the generosity of W. A. Clark, Jr., who has not only endowed the organization for a number of years, but has builded it with the idea of its becoming the representative symphonic organization of America. Walter Henry Rothwell, the eminent conductor, was called to the position of conductor, which he is filling with great ability and success.

Alfred Hertz has been the conductor for the past five years of the San Francisco Symphony organization, and has brought that orchestra to a most prominent position in the musical world of the West.

The Lyric Club of Los Angeles, a woman's organization, and the Ellis Club, a men's organization, are two very exceptional singing bodies under the conductorship of J. P. Poulin. The Orpheus Club, a male organization of young men, under the direction of Joseph Dupuy, won the \$3,000 prize at the Music Festival in San Francisco in 1915.

No honest record of musical Los Angeles can possibly be made without taking into account one great human figure who has been the heart and soul of things musical here for many a year, and whose genius at the present day dominates the whole field of that art. This man is L. E. Behymer, through whose courage, faith and persistence and long personal sacrifice Los Angeles has had brought to its gates, and within its gates, the very best that music has had to give.

Whenever the word "music" is mentioned in Los Angeles one must think of L. E. Behymer. And, happily, the high esteem in which he is held in his own community, and the deep love and affection which that community has for him, is the best reward of his long and tireless efforts in behalf of the art of music which has been throughout his whole life as the breath of his nostrils. Los Angeles well knows what Mr. Behymer has done for her, and it is not an ungrateful city. Happily, also, Mr. Behymer is as well a prophet outside of his own country. He is known afar, wherever the world of music and art exists. He is the honorary president of the National Concert Managers' Association of America; the Government of France has conferred upon him the well-deserved decoration of The Palms, and has elected him an officer of the French Academy of Public Instruction. At home he has long been the president of the Gamut Club and the great guiding spirit of the Philharmonic Orchestra. If you were to make a list of his friends in his home city, it would include its entire population. And if you were to make a list of his friends abroad it would include all the great names of the musical world and of many a wandering minstrel not so well known to fame, for even these have found in Mr. Behymer a sympathetic and helpful friend.

As the sister art of music whose home is also the mimic stage, the drama in Los Angeles has fared to high distinction. Here we have one of the two great plays that has stood the test of time and has achieved a world-wide and lasting reputation as a permanent institution—the Mission Play. The other great play referred to is the Passion Play of Oberammergau. Indeed, the Mission Play is often spoken of as the "Oberammergau of America," although the Mission Play tells another story. The only similarity between the two productions is the high note of religious faith common to both.

The play was produced for the first time April 29, 1912, in a specially constructed theater at the old Mission of San Gabriel under the direction of Henry Kabierske, originally of Breslau, Germany, a pageant-master and artist of world-wide celebrity. The initial productions of the play were held under the patronage of the Princess Lazarovich-Hrebrelanovich of

Servia (Eleanor Calhoun of California), who embodied the role of "Donna Josefa." The "King's Highway" (El Camino Real) depicting in miniature the twenty-one old Franciscan missions, is the embodiment of the creative ideas of Ida L. McGroarty, wife of the author of the Mission Play. The execution of these ideas was performed under Mr. Kabiarske's designs and direction.

The scenes of the first act of the Mission Play are laid on the shores of San Diego Bay in the year 1769, "when California began." The stage settings show the lovely Harbor of the Sun, with Point Loma shouldering out to sea. An old Spanish galleon rocks gently at anchor. The rude huts of the Spaniards stand under Presidio Hill. A guard of Catalonian soldiers sits lazily about and the dialogue brings out the story of the hardships and hopelessness of the situation. The return of Portola from his fruitless search of Monterey has been awaited for weary months. The settlement is pathetically worn with sickness and is on the verge of utter starvation. Father Junipero Serra, the immortal founder of the Missions, appears early in this act and at once takes his place as the commanding figure of the play, as he was the commanding figure in history for the first sixteen years of the establishment of his immortal dream of a Christian California. On this day Portola returns, his expedition in a pitiful condition. As the full knowledge of the awful situation dawns upon him, Portola gives orders for the people to board the ship in the harbor and sail back to Mexico with the tide at night. California is to be abandoned. Father Serra begs and pleads with Portola to retract his orders, but the gubernador is obdurate. Then Father Serra ascends the old brown hill and prays for a ship to come to the relief of starving San Diego. Everybody regards him with the most profound pity, while the preparations for departure are being feverishly prosecuted. The day passes. But just as the sun is setting in a flame of splendor across the waters, the white speck of a sail is seen rounding Point Loma. The sail grows larger and larger. In the gathering darkness great shouts of joy are heard. San Diego is saved as though by a miracle.

The second act is laid at Carmel Mission, across the green,

pine-clad hill of Monterey. The matchless old church, with the great patio that once surrounded it, stands forth in the glory of the break of day. The act is projected to typify a day in the life of the missions at a time when at the zenith of their success. A wonderful pageant of Indians have been brought out of savagery into the full stature of civilized men. They work at their trades, their arts and crafts. At noon a holiday is declared and the second part of the act is given over to Indian dances and games and to Spanish dancing of a most fascinating order. Spanish music, which is used throughout the whole performance, is here made doubly fascinating. At the end of the act the same scene that unfolded itself from the grey dawn slips away in the gorgeous sunset; and the last we see of beautiful Carmelo is the white loveliness of it all under the witchery of the moonlight.

The third act is laid at San Juan Capistrano, showing the old mission in ruins as it stands today. In this act the author brings out the sad story of spoliation and secularization. The padres are gone. The Indians are outcasts from the missions. The appearance of Americans in the life of California is portrayed. The act depicts the tragedy of a great drama which has been cruelly broken, but the tragedy is softened and sweetened by human faith and love in God.

The leading role of the Mission Play, "Fray Junipero Serra," was essayed the first and second seasons of the play by Mr. Benjamin Horning; in 1914-15 by Mr. George Osbourne; in 1916 by Mr. Wilfred Roger; in 1917 by Mr. Tyrone Power; in 1918 by Mr. Norval MacGregor; and in 1919-20 by Mr. Frederick Warde. In the play are many native California Indians, lineal descendants of the neophytes who were civilized and Christianized by the pioneer missionary fathers a century and a half ago. The Spanish singers and dancers of the play, as well as a full two-thirds of the whole great cast of 100 players, are natives and descendants of the old Spanish families of California.

The Mission Play, at the time this book is written, has been given regularly at the old Mission of San Gabriel for a season every year during ten consecutive years, and was

approaching its 1600th performance, perhaps the greatest record ever achieved in the history of the dramatic art.

Famous actors, and companies of actors, including a well-beloved barnstormer and mummer dear to memory, have visited Los Angeles from time immemorial, their performances ranging from Punch and Judy shows to Shakespeare, sometimes with no roof over their heads except our faithful blue sky, or on finding such shelter as a friendly barn, a dance hall and even a bar room might give them.

But there came a day, and it now seems a long time ago, too, when the drama was given housing such as it deserved in Los Angeles. The old Grand Opera House on Main Street ranked in its day with the fine theaters of America. Then others were builded, and now it would seem that we have more theaters than any other city, anywhere.

Moreover, Los Angeles has come at last to rank with New York as a producing center of the drama. And this is due solely to the very striking enterprise, perseverance, courage and exceptional ability of one man. This man is Oliver Morosco.

At the time this book is written, Oliver Morosco stands as a dominating figure in the theatrical world of America. It is said that his father was a circus man, and from this we can see that the "show business" came naturally to Mr. Morosco. When he was a mere boy he managed his own theater in Los Angeles, and for many years he maintained the old Burbank as a high-class theatrical institution in this city. It is safe to say that no man in America, not excepting Augustin Daly, either of the Frohmans or the latter day Schuberts, have in recent years produced anywhere near the number of new dramas that Mr. Morosco has produced. He combines in himself that rare affiliation of business ability and fine artistic temperament. He is a man whom failure could not daunt. He overcame failure and has fought his way with a dogged determination, supported always by a high vision, to the very topmost pinnacle of success in that artistic world to which he became heir in his youth.

Los Angeles also owes a great deal in a dramatic way to

the Wyatts, both father and son. The community is indebted immeasurably to W. T. Wyatt, at this writing still manager of the Mason Opera House, for tangible realizations of the best that the art of the drama has been able to afford.

And, last but not least, of things theatrical, that species of it which its votaries call the "Cinema Art," which commercially is catalogued as the "Motion Picture Industry," and



TRINITY AUDITORIUM

which in the vernacular of the day is popularly and lovingly known as the "Movies," has come to make Los Angeles its world center.

The man who sits in the theater in Patagonia, or in Tahiti, or Hong Kong, or Oshkosh, or anywhere upon the swinging earth, to view a motion picture, finds himself looking into Southern California canyons, the shores of Santa Monica and the suburbs of Hollywood.

Los Angeles is the home—the permanent home—of the



world celebrities of the movies. Here is the habitat of the best known man in existence, namely, Mr. Charlie Chaplin. Here also reside Mary Pickford, Douglas Fairbanks, Bill Hart, Norma Talmadge, a thousand and one other "movie" celebrities of both sexes, and countless thousands of others not yet shooting through the movie heavens as stars, but plodding along and always hoping for the best.

Speaking of the "movies" in dollars, we are frank to say that it is a subject we have not the courage to approach. While it is certain that the industry, speaking of it as such, involves annually the expenditure of many, many millions of dollars in Los Angeles, we are still faced by the claims of the "movies" themselves concerning their financial gyrations, and this would total—if such claims be admitted—more money than the world has ever known and a sum total greater than the national debts of all the nations of the world combined.

Now, all these things having been said concerning music and art in Los Angeles, there remains for us only to say that art, as applied to painters and sculptors, has but a brief history here. It is not more than fifteen years ago that anything approaching an organization of artists was accomplished here. But we now have many artists, several of whom have acquired national fame and many others who give great hope for the future.

Summing the whole subject up, there would seem to be justification for the prediction that Los Angeles is some day destined to be one of the world's great centers of music and art.

## CHAPTER XIX

### A GREAT ORGANIZATION

The making of any city is a tale that cannot fail to prove to be of the most fascinating interest. Next to the growing of a man the growing of a city is the great story.

We have endeavored to set forth in these pages the somewhat pathetic beginnings of the pueblo of Our Lady of the Queen of the Angels, which is now the wonder City of Los Angeles. We have told with what discouragement the community began its uncertain career more than a century ago, and we have tried to show that for many and many a year Los Angeles was a community with little pride of ancestry and far less hope for its posterity.

But now Los Angeles stands among the great cities of the world, and nowhere is it questioned that it is destined to become the towering metropolis of Western America.

And how did all this come to be? By what magic was this wonderful achievement wrought? We have seen that there were no fortuitous natural advantages to favor Los Angeles in the splendid struggle it has made for a place in the sun. We have seen that no soothsayer or seer ever predicted greatness for it. It is a city that had to fight its way, step by step and inch by inch, up the rough and rocky roads of progress.

There is a saying that man made the cities but that God made the country. Well, it was men that made Los Angeles—patient men, toiling men, men of dreams and men of visions.

More than thirty years ago there was formed in the city of Los Angeles a brave, determined and broad-visioned body of men into an organization known today as the "Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce." In the achievements of this organization is archived and recorded the making of Los Angeles.

The Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce is an organization that has a distinctiveness enjoyed by few commercial



PANORAMA OF THE LOS ANGELES OF TODAY



LOOKING NORTH ON BROADWAY FROM EIGHTH STREET

bodies, if any, of the larger cities of the world. While the name indicates that its activities might be confined to purely trade enterprises, this is not the case. Its variety of work has been extraordinary. This may be attributed to the wide range of its membership which includes retailers, wholesalers, lawyers, doctors, engineers, ministers, teachers, writers, manufacturers, horticulturalists, printers, railway men, bankers, public officials and public-spirited women.

Practically all questions relating to the general welfare of Southern California and the nation are brought to the consideration of the chamber. Horticulture, mining, manufacturing, live stock, commerce, entertainment and various lines of community endeavor are included in the activities of the organization. General business interests, legislative matters, publications, advertising the country, exhibits and various entertainments, manufacturing, development of commerce—both domestic and overseas—supplying information about the country, local public improvements, such as good roads, water works, etc., and various other human activities have been functioned by the Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce.

To meet the growing demands as the city increased in population and extent of its enterprises, the work of the chamber was segregated into departments. These now may be classed as executive—over which the president has jurisdiction and of which the secretary is the administrative officer; the secretary also exercises supervisory direction of the various departments, which include: Industrial, Foreign Trade, Agricultural, Meteorological and Aeronautical, Publicity, Membership, Tourist Housing, Poultry, and Information. The functions of these departments are largely indicated by their names. Each is in charge of a manager.

The policy of the chamber, its action on public questions and its attitude in matters of national importance, are determined by the board of directors. Years ago it was learned that large bodies are unwieldy in decisions upon questions of public moment. Instead of opinion being crystallized, long debates were developed with the result that the members decided to empower the board of directors to speak with

authority for the entire organization; reserving, however, for the membership the privilege of a referendum vote on all decisions of the board of directors that might be protested.

Probably the outstanding features of community development, the consummation of which is generally credited to the activity of the chamber, are the Los Angeles Aqueduct, the development of a man-made harbor at San Pedro and the construction of the finest system of good roads in the United States.

For many years the membership of the organization stood first in the country in proportion to the population. The chamber was credited with taking the lead in constructive enterprises in more avenues of community development than any other similar organization in the country. Its enterprise has been an inspiration to similar organizations in other cities. Scores of them have been organized and are conducted along the lines identical with the Los Angeles Chamber.

Los Angeles has been called "The City Advertising Built." Mr. Morris M. Rathbun, writing in *Collier's* a few years ago, used that phrase for the heading and told of a city that was built by a chamber of commerce—which chamber of commerce revolved about a single dominating personality. This personality is Frank Wiggins, secretary of the organization for the past twenty-five years and identified with its activities for thirty years.

The big work of the early days of the organization was community exploitation. It was realized that the climate was here, the soil was here, and other fundamentals for sustaining a prosperous population, and that the chief need was homeseekers of the right sort. The exploitation was directed to the homeseeker, farmer, tourist and capitalist.

Mr. Wiggins insisted in the early days on an exhibit of Southern California products where the casual visitor or information seeker might have practical evidence of what was produced in the contiguous territory. He, personally, in a "one hoss shay" of ancient vintage, collected the first specimens of soil products for the exhibit. These were placed in the windows of the chamber.

That permanent exhibit was amplified until it became the

largest of its kind in the country. It now covers the second floor of the Chamber of Commerce Building at 128-130 South Broadway. The offices of the chamber require the entire third floor.

Mr. Wiggins, in addition to being made secretary in 1897, continued to act as superintendent of exhibit. He has been in charge of a comprehensive Southern California display at every World Exposition for the past quarter of a century. He was father of the idea of a traveling exhibit and the "California on Wheels" train that toured the country was the first display of its kind and the forerunner of many similar ones, the government taking up the idea later and continuing it since.

In point of term of service, Mr. Wiggins outranks all commercial secretaries in the country. He is widely known among Exposition men and is recognized as an authority on exhibits. His career is more remarkable from the fact that he was sent to Southern California in the late 80's as a last resort by his physicians. He was too weak to get about alone and his attending physician, after he arrived here, gave him but a few weeks to live. However, with his faithful wife as nurse, he began to recover, and with the recovery came understanding of the possibilities of the salubrious climate of this section. There probably is no more striking individual example of the possibilities of Southern California from the standpoint of health and human development than Mr. Wiggins. In his seventy-first year and in the thirty-first year of service with the chamber, he is as active at the time this book was written as he was a quarter of a century ago.

Industries in the early days of chamber history were of slow and difficult growth. Thirty years ago the chief products of this section were agricultural and horticultural. What at that time was considered an impassable barrier to the development of the city industrially was the lack of fuel. Coal was the chief source of heat and power, and as this had to be brought from considerable distance, manufacturing lagged.

When the chamber was organized thirty-two years ago, a large part of the returns from agriculture and tourists went to pay for manufactured products brought in from the



A GREAT PUBLIC INSTITUTION—THE LOS ANGELES TERMINAL MARKET

East. It was not for several years that a clearly defined idea of what was needed in manufactured articles for home consumption and in what quantity, was reached. Business men from the beginning were actively advocating the manufacture of beet sugar, the canning of vegetables and fruits, the making of jellies, marmalades, etc., for exportation. Oil was not to be had in commercial quantities for manufacturing, and coal was worth five times what it cost in the East.

In the ten years prior to 1895, manufacturing enterprises were restless and many plants changed their location. They changed to get nearer the center of distribution, to find cheaper fuel or more advantageous locations in respect to raw materials. This led to a sort of contest between cities wanting industries, and many municipalities were offering bonuses in the shape of land, fuel, subscriptions to stock, and in some cases, actual cash. This apparent necessity of assuming financial obligations to bring new enterprises further complicated the problem of Los Angeles in its industrial development plans.

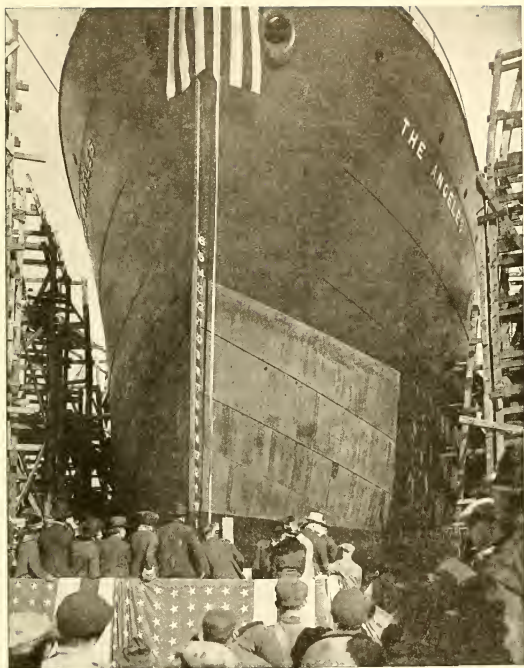
Los Angeles steadfastly refused to encourage enterprises that had to be brought here by means of bonuses. The business men did not want to bring enterprises that were liable to fail in competition with others.

Although conditions were not favorable to the establishment of new industries in the early '90's, quite a number were established which since have developed into the larger enterprises of the city. Sugar factories were encouraged and established.

The manufacturing situation was radically changed by the discovery of oil in the '90s. The first considerable output was about 1894, but the new discovery was like many others—greeted with incredulity and with considerable active opposition. Wells were put down in residence districts and apprehension was felt that the oil industry would destroy Los Angeles as a residence city. Crude oil came into use for fuel and at a considerably cheaper figure than coal.

The introduction of electric power in 1892 gave further stimulus to manufacturing. The first system of long distance transmission of electricity ever attempted was put into opera-





LAUNCHING OF THE "ANGELES"

Named for Los Angeles Upon Its Successful Victory Loan Campaign

tion at Pomona and Ontario by the San Antonio Light and Power Company. The succeeding year the Redlands Company constructed its system in the headwaters of the Santa Ana River. These were followed by the Southern California Power Company and the Edison Company, both in Los Angeles County.

With the completion of the aqueduct power plant, the city was able to supply cheap water and power to manufacturing concerns. It is conceded that the present cheap water and cheap power together with the climatic advantages, combined with adequate transportation facilities and desirable living conditions for employes, are conducive to enormous industrial development in the future.

The canning industry developed, and other smaller industries. But in the government census of 1914, Los Angeles was shown as ranking twenty-sixth in manufactured products while it ranked tenth in population.

Government preparations for war really brought the first crystalization of the manufacturing situation in Southern California. The Chamber of Commerce had established an industrial bureau some four years before this period, and systematized active campaigning was done to bring in industries and to encourage those already here. When the Government in 1917 felt the stern pressure of war, it made a survey of every district, through its Resources and Conversion Branch of the War Industries Board. Although the data gathered by the volunteer workers for the Government was confidential, the survey indicated clearly to the business men Southern California's possibilities industrially.

Concrete examples of industrial development of the past few years may be had in the establishment of the Los Angeles Shipbuilding Company's plant. It has launched more than a score of steel ships for the Government. Three years ago the ground on which this plant stands was under water. It is reclaimed tideland owned by the City of Los Angeles, and returns a revenue into the treasury.

The decision of the Goodyear Tire Company to locate their western plant in Los Angeles was actuated by the cheap, unlimited water and power available. It served to emphasize

not only that capital recognizes the advantages of Los Angeles as a manufacturing center, but appreciates also that it is strategically located for a world distributing point.

Most of the larger industries of the city today are of quite recent development. Shipbuilding is but a few years old; the manufacture of women's and men's garments, in which Los Angeles now excels, also is a recent development; the canning of fish, which now is a large industry, began on a small scale only a few years ago; and the motion picture industry, which



GOODYEAR TIRE AND RUBBER COMPANY, AT VERNON

has brought Los Angeles the sobriquet the "motion picture capital of the world," has had its greatest development within the last decade.

The war also brought out the fact that contiguous territory was richer in raw products than had been realized and that the desert country yielded borax, sand for glass, and chemical ores in vast quantities which offer inducements to manufacturers in many lines. Within a few years also have developed by-products of oil, citrus fruit and vegetables. Right now is developing the science of dehydration. It has passed the experimental stage and is entering the commercial stage. Southern California naturally will be headquarters

for this development, as vast quantities of vegetables and fruits are available at all times and large losses will be prevented by dehydration plants.

Abstraction of iron from ore without the use of coal is said to be effected commercially, which means that the great iron deposits in Riverside County will be available for industries in Los Angeles.

The genesis of the Chamber of Commerce furnishes an interesting story.

It was back in the late summer of 1888 that a few leading business men began to see that the city needed an organization that would represent every ambition of the city. They discussed the plan among themselves, finally agreeing that two things must be avoided—that the organization must not get into politics nor exploit individual enterprises.

The first of several preliminary meetings to organize was held in a building at the corner of Broadway and First Street, which since has been removed to make room for a business block. In the history of the organization it is specifically stated that no one man may take the credit for consummation of the plan, although Maj. E. W. Jones, the first president, is named with S. B. Lewis and W. E. Hughes. Incidentally, the first president is still an active member and is among the most faithful of the old guard who for nearly a generation have “gone to the bat” for every sound community proposition that has developed.

Some of the suggestions at the first meetings may well bring a smile today. When the lack of fuel for manufacturing was mentioned, it was suggested that oil might be found in Los Angeles County, which then took in a large part of Southern California. It was also suggested that the people should be taught the fertility of the soil in order that vegetables, butter, cheese and eggs might be produced at home instead of being brought in carloads from the East.

It was the late Gen. Harrison Gray Otis, owner of the Los Angeles Times, who made the motion that brought the chamber into formal existence with an initial membership of twenty-five. He remained a staunch supporter throughout



MAIN AND TEMPLE STREETS, OPPOSITE PRESENT POST OFFICE



THE FEDERAL BUILDING

his busy life, giving generous support through the columns of his paper. The first officers elected were:

E. W. Jones, president; W. H. Workman, first vice president; John L. Redick, treasurer; Thomas A. Lewis, secretary.

It is interesting to note that in the month after formal organization the chamber started the movement that resulted in the fine harbor Los Angeles claims today. One of the first acts was to invite Senators Hearst and Stanford of California to the city to investigate the possibilities of a deep water port for the budding Southern California metropolis.

Although the early days of the chamber were not without difficulties and discouragements, after thirty years the organization may point proudly to its record of achievement. The first community advertising was started within two months after the organization of the chamber, when 10,000 pamphlets descriptive of this section were printed for distribution. These proved so popular that within a few years more than a million pamphlets of various varieties were sent to all interested in all parts of the country. This beginning in community advertising was followed by more pretentious efforts including the first exhibition train ever sent over the country, exhibits at all world's fairs and other avenues of exploitation, all directly resulting in bringing the population of 50,000 when the chamber was organized to more than 600,000 today.

Incidentally, the sort of population brought are the people who pay more per capita for education than any city in the country, stand high in thrift, lead in percentage of home owners and are in the front rank of constructive activity in all lines.

Practically every municipal institution that our residents today point to with pride was initiated, fostered and brought to a successful conclusion by the chamber. This applies to the \$10,000,000 harbor, the \$23,000,000 aqueduct, the \$5,000,000 good roads system, in addition to the state work of this section, the stabilization of the citrus industry, the tourist business, the industrial development, the agricultural expansion and the march of municipal progress generally.

A city of superlatives has resulted from the loyal co-

operation of its citizenry, led for thirty years by the Chamber of Commerce.

The chamber has had four homes in its thirty years of existence. It was first established in 1888 at the corner of First and Broadway. Two years later the second floor of the Mott market on Main Street between Third and Fourth was occupied by the chamber. As the organization grew, better quarters were secured, and in 1895 the chamber occupied the second floor of the Mason Building at Fourth and Broadway—which was then a two-story structure. In 1903 the present six-story office building at 128-130 South Broadway was begun. The ceremony of laying the cornerstone was one of the most elaborate ever held. The ceremonies were under the auspices of the Masons, and a big parade was a feature of the exercises. The chamber now occupies the second and third floors, the offices being on the third floor and the exhibit on the second.

It would be a joy to here set down the names of all the hundreds of men who gave of their strength of brain and body throughout the years to the service of their beloved city and the making of it. This is impracticable, however, and perhaps unnecessary, for the purposes of this book. Their names are not lost, for they are preserved in the golden roster of that wonderful body of civic fighting men who have formed the membership of the Chamber of Commerce from its beginning down to this day. Many of them have passed to the great beyond and many more are growing old; but their places are being filled, as the breaks in the ranks of an army are filled, by men younger and more vigorous who are inspired by the high patriotism and honorable traditions of their predecessors.

The Los Angeles Chamber of Commerce is and has been more than a mere organization of men for commercial advantage. It is an institution with a soul.

## CHAPTER XX

### MODERN LOS ANGELES

It is difficult to speak of what the Los Angeles of today is without being accused of "boosting." Indeed, the most common accusation made against us in the outlands and throughout the world is that we are a people of boasters, here in Los Angeles. And in order to meet these accusations and confute them, to prove that our boasts are well-founded and that they can be substantiated, perhaps the best thing to do is to state a few outstanding facts.

To begin with, we have but to quote from the tables of the census of the United States made this year, to show that Los Angeles is the largest city on the Pacific Coast of America, the tenth city in size in the United States, and the forty-fourth city of the world.

The population of Los Angeles exceeds that of San Francisco, its nearest rival on the Pacific Coast, by 70,000. Seattle ranks third on the Coast, Portland fourth, Oakland fifth, and San Diego sixth.

Since 1910, the date of the last previous census, Los Angeles surpassed all other large cities of the United States in growth—having come from seventeenth place in 1910 to tenth place in 1920.

Its gain in population during the last ten years was nearly five times the average gain for the United States.

The most prosaic things in the world, without a doubt, are figures. And yet the figures showing the growth of Los Angeles during the nearly a century and a half of its existence, from its founding by the illustrious Gobernador, Don Felipe de Neve, down to the present year, constitute a retrospect so fascinating that we are impelled to herewith set the figures down as they stand in history and are vouched for by the records.





SPRING STREET LOOKING SOUTH FROM SECOND STREET IN 1899

Here, then, is the growth of population of Los Angeles from 1781 to the present year:

1781 .....	44
1790 .....	141
1800 .....	315
1810 .....	415
1820 .....	650
1830 .....	730
1840 .....	1,250
1850 .....	1,610
1860 .....	4,399
1870 .....	5,614
1880 .....	11,183
1890 .....	50,395
1900 .....	102,479
1910 .....	319,198
1920 .....	575,480

It is a marvelous story that the simple exposition of these figures tell. And the questions on the lips of a stranger would naturally be, how do we account for it?

The commercial organizations of Los Angeles put forth as an answer that the enormous development of Los Angeles is the logical result of favorite location and enterprising citizenship, and that "Nature fashioned the city for a workshop." But we do not agree with all this.

We have endeavored to demonstrate in this book, and trust that we have successfully done so, that Los Angeles was not really a "favored location" for a city. It seems clear to us that the reason Los Angeles is where it is, is due to two things. In the first place, Don Felipe de Neve, scanning his instructions from the King of Spain, at the mission of San Gabriel where he was quartered in September, 1871, found that he was to locate the new city a distance of about three leagues from the Mission, toward the sea. There was nothing for him to do but to obey orders. But, if he had been left to himself, it is altogether likely that he would have stopped his march from San Gabriel where he did, anyhow. The day

was hot, the trail dusty, and it was no fun marching under those conditions.

So, when Don Felipe and his cavalcade of troopers from Monterey, accompanied by the Indian neophytes and padres from San Gabriel, had marched ten miles westward from the Mission, they were doubtless glad enough to stop and feel that the orders of the king had been fulfilled. The site chosen was by no means exceptional.

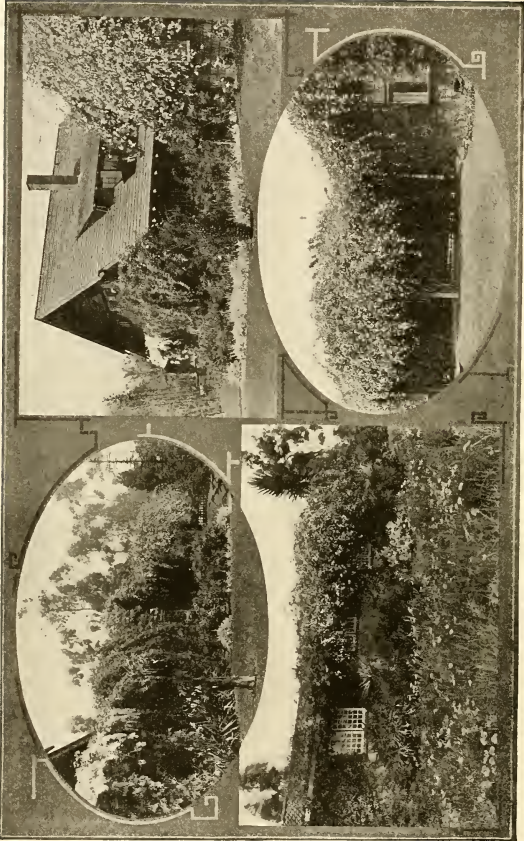
We do, however, fully agree with the statement of the commercial organization that the marvelous development of Los Angeles is due to an "enterprising citizenship." And it is also due to an almost perfect climate.

While we cannot endorse the claim that "nature fashioned the city for a workshop," we certainly are strong for the statement that nature fashioned it for a playground. It was, after all, the tourist who started Los Angeles on its onward and upward way—the not quite wholly appreciate tourist, and the tourist sometimes maligned. It was the stranger who came and went away boosting Los Angeles in a way a thousand times more effective than the home folks of the town could ever hope to do.

The stranger who came and departed proclaimed it in the outlands that Los Angeles was a lovely place in which to live. And there are always many people in the world who are on the lookout for such a place and who are financially able to live where it pleases them best to live. And they came in ever-increasing numbers,—that kind of people—and when their numbers were thousands here, their own needs alone created industry and commercial expansion. The newcomers became as enthusiastic and as earnest in their desire to make Los Angeles a great city as were those who had long resided here had been actuated by the same desire.

Mr. Charles Phelps Cushing, a staff writer of *Leslie's*, recently put the case very well and very truthfully in a recent issue of the publication with which he is connected:

"The Middle West appears to be the chief contributor to the swift growth of population in Los Angeles. Mixing with the people you are amazed to find that, as is the case in New York, the citizens of Los Angeles all appear to have emigrated



BEAUTIFUL BUNGALOWS OF THE MODERN CITY

there from other cities. What Los Angeles accomplished in the way of culture must necessarily be, for a considerable time, something not distinctively Californian but Middle-western, which is just as well worth while."

This being very true, indeed, there can be no harm in frankly admitting it.

Laying all speculation aside, however, as to the real reason for the marvelous growth of Los Angeles, we can return to the facts and be, perhaps, the better satisfied.

We feel that we have conscientiously recorded the progress of Los Angeles in the previous pages of this book as far as what might be called the "old times" are concerned. And as for the growth of later times, we beg to be permitted to quote a clear, vivid and brief statement from the late Charles Willard who was a painstaking historian in Los Angeles and an ardent lover of the city where he had long resided.

"Los Angeles," said Mr. Willard, "began the twentieth century with a population of 102,479, and the census of 1910 gave a total of 319,198. About 10 per cent of this gain had come through annexation of territory, the rest through direct increase. No American city, not even Chicago in its phenomenal development from 1860 to 1870, could show such rapid growth; and yet it did not come with a rush in a year or two as it had in the epochs of 'boom,' but was distributed evenly through the whole period with a steady growth of business and a logical advance of realty values. Except for a few months at the end of 1908 and the beginning of 1909, the entire period was prosperous. Clearing house balances which in 1901 were less than a half a million a day, by 1911 were nearly three million a day. Bank deposits increased from \$50,000,000 to \$125,000,000. Building permits which in the year 1901 totaled \$4,300,000, in 1910 had grown to \$21,000,000. The census of 1900 gave the total value of the product of Los Angeles factories as \$21,000,000 and that of 1910 increased this to \$85,000,000. The city now has 85,000 telephones as against 10,000 when this book was written. The business of the post-office which made a total of \$312,524 in 1901, was for the year 1910, \$1,476,941. In this decade 75,000 buildings, big and



CORNER OF MAIN, SPRING AND TEMPLE STREETS



SOUTH OLIVE STREET, LOOKING NORTH FROM SIXTH

little, were constructed at a total cost of over \$130,000,000. That would make a good-sized city by itself."

It is only ten years since Willard set down those figures, startling enough in themselves, but far more so now when brought up to date and showing that building permits in Los



SPRING STREET LOOKING NORTH FROM THIRD STREET, 1900

Angeles for the six months of the year 1920, the year in which this book is written, reached an aggregate of \$24,197,639, and that the bank clearings for the same six months were \$1,909,435,039.

At the time this book is written, there is reckoned to be



2,700 industrial establishments in the City of Los Angeles, the products of which amount to \$618,000,000 for the year.

Within a few miles of the city nearly one-fourth of the entire oil supply of the United States is produced. Shipment of lubricants and by-products from this port is greatest of any in the United States. In turn the port receives more lumber for distribution through the Southwest than any other of the nation's waterways.

From sea to mountains are vast orchards, grain fields, cattle ranches, orange groves and truck gardens, furnishing material for the greatest canning industry in the world.

Shipbuilding, meat packing, motion picture making, garment manufacture, chemical production, tire manufacturing, auto accessory making and kindred industries of Los Angeles command the admiration of all nations.

These industries, fostered by genial climate and contented population have the further advantage of cheap and abundant water supply, unlimited electrical power at low rates, natural gas and oil fuel, raw materials of many varieties, low cost of factory construction, open shop conditions insuring freedom of labor, fine port facilities, unexcelled transportation, both local and transcontinental, and a growing demand for all Southern California products.

Los Angeles is rapidly assuming high rank as a world trade center. It is strategically located for the great markets of the Orient, Australasia, Central and South America.

Most of the two-thirds of the world's population in the lands bordering the Pacific are more easily reached through Los Angeles harbor than through any other American port. More than two-thirds of the United States is nearer by rail to Los Angeles than to its nearest competitor on the Pacific Coast. Direct steamship lines flying the Los Angeles flag are in operation to the Orient, the Philippines and the Straits Settlements.

From Los Angeles harbor to Yokohama is 4,780 miles; to the Philippines, 6,535 miles; to Honolulu, 2,228 miles; to Sydney, 6,545 miles; to the Panama Canal, 2,936 miles; to Valparaiso, 4,795 miles. Los Angeles is a main station on the Sunshine Route around the world. Its storm-free harbor



joins the transcontinental railways crossing North America via the southern route which suffers no interruption through storms.

Here, then, we have a pen picture of the modern Los Angeles from a commercial point of view. But this array of figures and statistics would by no means give a stranger in a distant place an idea of what Los Angeles is like today.

And what is it really like? Sometimes we can get a good answer to this question from a visitor. "Were you to soar



CITY HALL AT SAN PEDRO AND LOS ANGELES HARBOR

above Los Angeles today in an airplane," says Cushing, the staff writer of Leslie's, "you would view a city that in area is the largest in the United States. You would see its outstanding features as, first of all, a huge gridiron of wide business and residence streets where thousands of motor cars skim about like great water spiders. Mountains, some of them included within the city limits, circle the northeastern borders of the town. Through the outskirts are scattered many residence suburbs and a score of little motion picture towns, these latter classing as 'factory settlements,' belying the description in appearance, for they are mostly sootless and white. The main section of the city, if viewed from aloft, would appear to lie in a fairly level inland valley

invaded from the east and north with foothills. Attached to this big gridiron is a long narrow handle, a dozen miles or more in length, extending southward to connect with the Pacific Coast and the recently acquired municipal harbor. Get down to earth and you find the downtown section of a typical new American city, with the usual assortment of hotels and tall office buildings and a Great White Way wide enough and long enough to compare with its New York namesake—and far better lighted.”

This is fine, and said as only a good newspaper man can say it. And yet there is something else to be said, although it is difficult to know just what words to use to the end that one who has never seen Los Angeles might still be made to know what it is like.

It is a common saying that one city is like another, and this is true in a general way. Yet there are many cities that have distinct personalities, if we may be permitted to use that word, and Los Angeles is certainly one of them. It has a peculiar character all its own—something that the sometime guest within its gates never fails to remember when he goes away, though he may be unable to put his impressions into speech.

Like other great cities, Los Angeles has miles of paved streets, block after block of tall skyscraping business buildings, wonderful stores, theaters, hotels, and eating places—things that all great cities have. But it has also a peculiar friendliness for the stranger, which the stranger instantly and instinctively feels the moment he sets foot in it. And it is a city well-beloved by those who are its habitants. It is a clean city—a good town. Its skirts have always been kept clean. The grafter and the looter have never been able to exploit it. It is industrially free and independent, without prejudice against honest labor or whoever it is that God gives the privilege to of earning his bread by the sweat of his brow. It is a city of high ideals, and a God-fearing place, as God-fearing goes.

When swart old Don Felipe de Neve drove the corner stakes of Los Angeles between the mountains and the sea, he little dreamed that his deed would become immortal and his



PACIFIC MUTUAL BUILDING

name imperishable. For, it was upon that far September day, when this good soldier of the king started the new pueblo on its way, that the stars of destiny sang together in the sunset skies.







